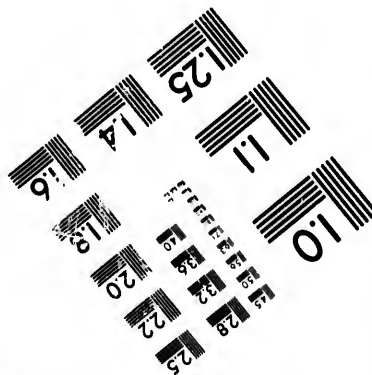
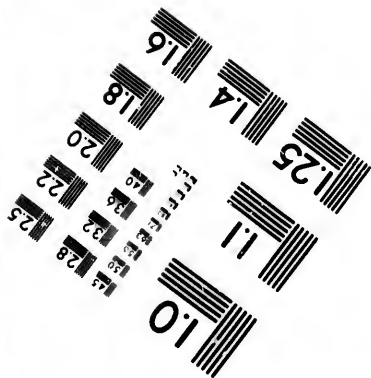
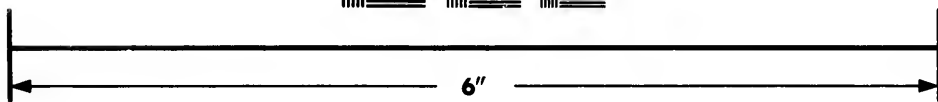
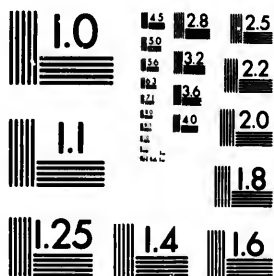


**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503



**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques



© 1984

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- Coloured covers/
Couverture de couleur
- Covers damaged/
Couverture endommagée
- Covers restored and/or laminated/
Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée
- Cover title missing/
Le titre de couverture manque
- Coloured maps/
Cartes géographiques en couleur
- Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/
Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)
- Coloured plates and/or illustrations/
Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur
- Bound with other material/
Relié avec d'autres documents
- Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion
along interior margin/
La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la
distortion le long de la marge intérieure
- Blank leaves added during restoration may
appear within the text. Whenever possible, these
have been omitted from filming/
Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées
lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte,
mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont
pas été filmées.
- Additional comments:/
Commentaires supplémentaires:

Irregular pagination : [i] - xviii, [1] - 366, 369-408 p.

- Coloured pages/
Pages de couleur
- Pages damaged/
Pages endommagées
- Pages restored and/or laminated/
Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées
- Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/
Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées
- Pages detached/
Pages détachées
- Showthrough/
Transparence
- Quality of print varies/
Qualité inégale de l'impression
- Includes supplementary material/
Comprend du matériel supplémentaire
- Only edition available/
Seule édition disponible
- Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata
slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to
ensure the best possible image/
Les pages totalement ou partiellement
obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure,
etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à
obtenir la meilleure image possible.

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X	14X	18X	22X	26X	30X
<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
12X	16X	20X	24X	28X	32X

The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

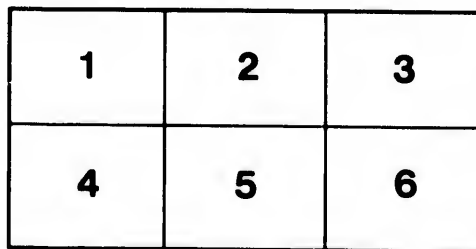
University of British Columbia Library

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol \rightarrow (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol ∇ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

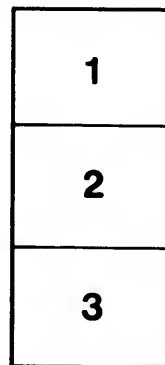
University of British Columbia Library

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaît sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole \rightarrow signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole ∇ signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.



John Bentley

*Contingent
y/h*

THE LIBRARY



THE UNIVERSITY OF
BRITISH COLUMBIA

Gift

FRANK BURNETT COLLECTION
1852 - 1900

Donated by
Mrs. Mary Litster

10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100

A MAP of the WORLD

in three Sections;

Describing the Polar Regions to the T

In which are traced the Tracts of

Lord Mulgrave and Captain Cook

towards the North and South Poles

and the

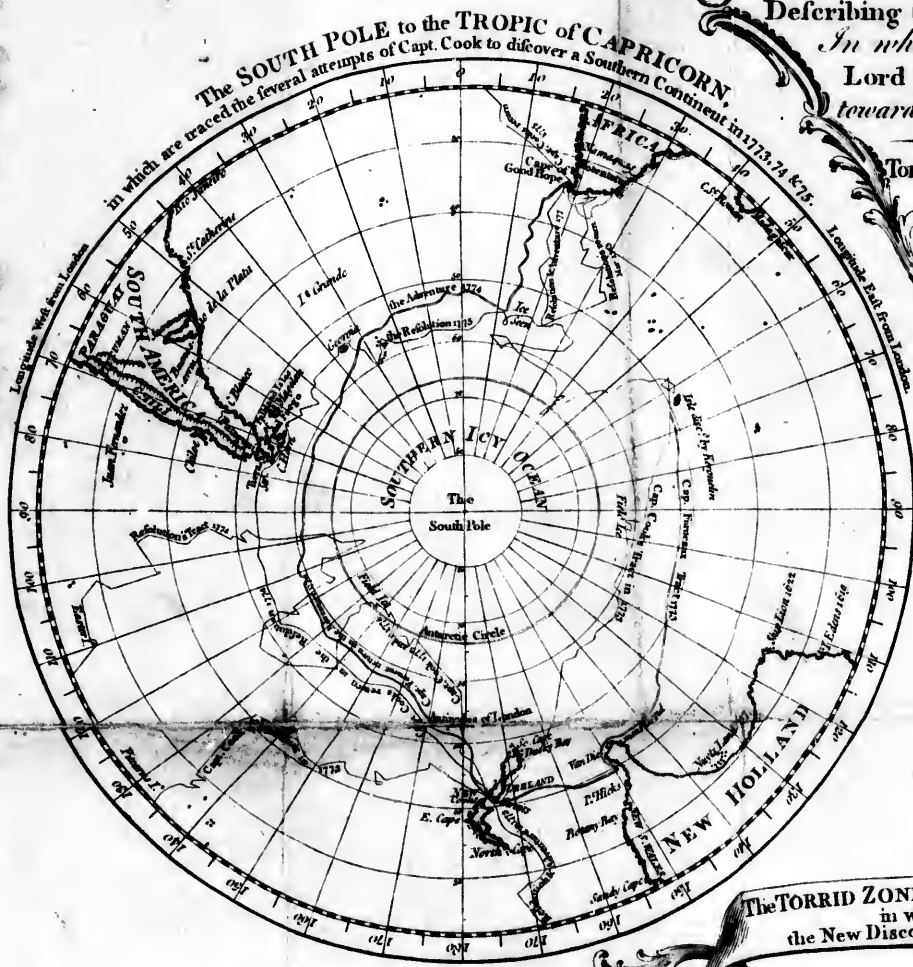
Torrid Zone or Tropical Regions

with the

New Discoveries in the

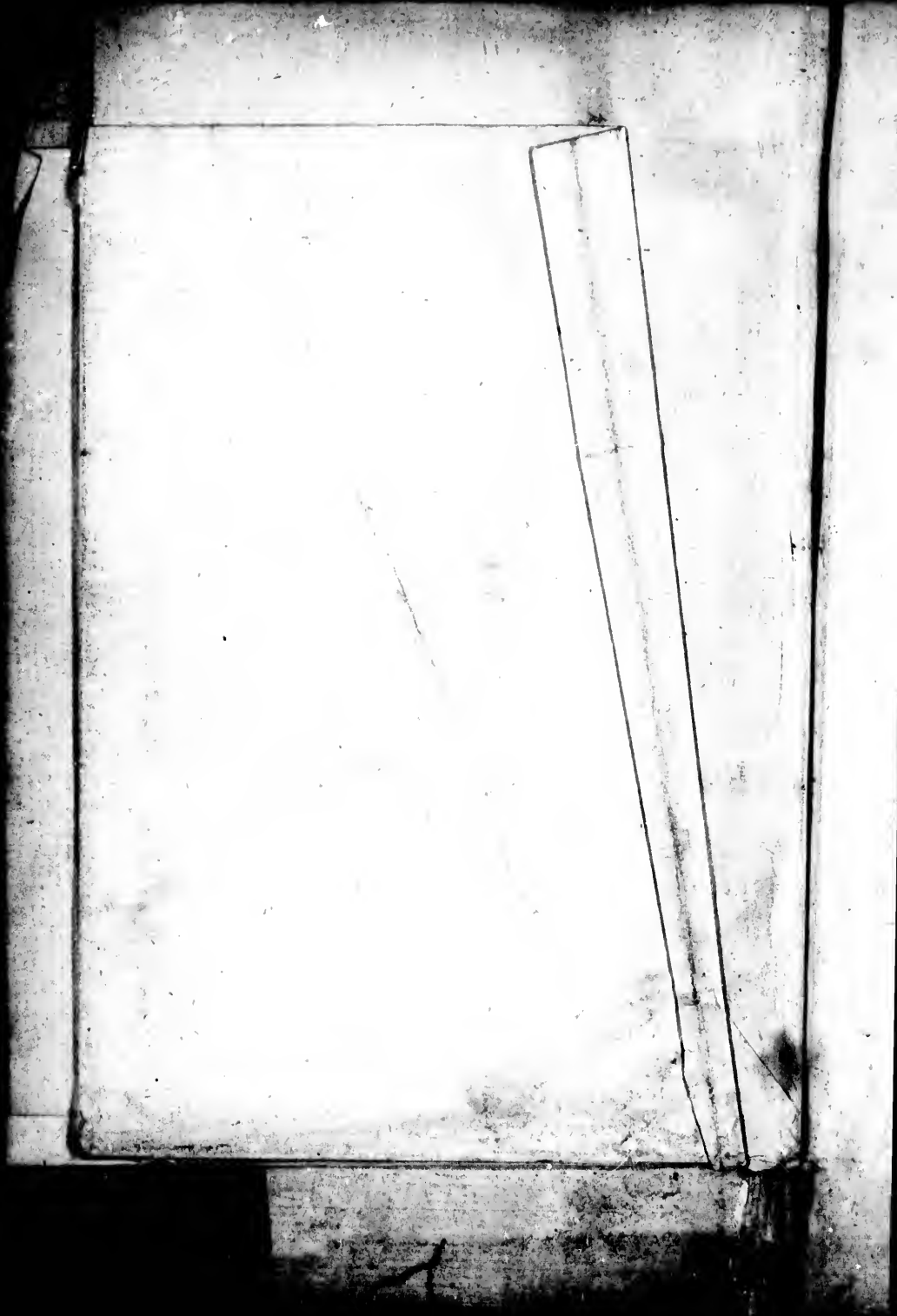
SOUTH SEA;

accurately laid down.



The TORRID ZONE or TROPICAL REGIONS of the
in which are accurately laid down
the New Discoveries in the Pacific Ocean or South





NEW DISCOVERIES
CONCERNING THE

WORLD,

AND ITS

INHABITANTS.

IN TWO PARTS.

PART I.

Containing a circumstantial Account of all the Islands in the South-Sea, that have been lately discovered or explored; the Situation, Climate, and Soil of each; their natural Productions, including many Species of Animals and Vegetables hitherto unknown; the Persons, Dresses, extraordinary Manners and Customs, Manufactures, Buildings, Government, and Religion of the various Inhabitants; their domestic Utensils, and Weapons of War; their Ingenuity, mental Endowments, Skill in Navigation, and other Arts and Sciences. Comprehending all the Discoveries made in the several Voyages of

Commodore (now Admiral) BYRON;
Captains WALLIS, CARTERET, and COOK,
Related by DR. HAWKESWORTH, SYDNEY PARKINSON,
MR. FORSTER, and CAPTAIN COOK.

TOGETHER WITH THOSE OF

M. DE BOUGAINVILLE.

The Whole compared with the Narratives of former celebrated Navigators, viz. MENDOZA, QUIROS, TASMAN, LE MAIRE, SCHOUTEN, DAMPIER, ROGGEWEIN, ANSON, and Others.

PART II.

Containing a summary Account of CAPTAIN COOK's Attempts to discover a Southern Continent, in 1773, 1774, and 1775.

Also the Voyage of the Honourable CONSTANTINE JOHN PHIPPS, (now Lord MULGRAVE) towards the North-Pole, in 1773.

With MAPS and PRINTS.

LONDON:

Printed for J. JOHNSON, St. Paul's Church-Yard.

M DCC LXXVIII.

P R I N T E D

The voyage that have been undertaken by the order of his present majesty, to explore the South-sea and for the purpose of thinking expedition to the above

part of the world, is a most noble and useful one, and will be attended with the most happy consequences to the nation. It will be attended with the discovery of new islands, and will be attended with the discovery of new trade, and will be attended with the discovery of new riches, and will be attended with the discovery of new glory.

The voyage that have been undertaken by the order of his present majesty, to explore the South-sea and for the purpose of thinking expedition to the above

P R E F A C E.

THE progress of science has been but little promoted by royal countenance; the diffusion of knowledge has been generally obnoxious to the views of power; if the reformation in England found a supporter in the despot that ruled, it must be attributed to its furthering his political designs, not to his cordial love of truth, and readiness to encourage free enquiries concerning it; and whenever kings become professedly patrons of the arts, those that have a tendency to soften and debilitate a state are more likely to be encouraged, because most congenial to the luxury of an effeminate court, than such as serve in an important manner the interests of humanity.

The voyages that have been undertaken by the order of his present majesty, to explore the South-Sea and Polar Regions, are a striking exception to the

above observation, truly worthy of a patriot king, and confer the highest honour on the nation, in its essential character, as a maritime state. The result of these expeditions is as generally useful as could be expected from designs so auspiciously set on foot, and so skilfully and intrepidly executed. In geography they have established certain knowledge instead of conjectural delusion: they have supplied the astronomer with valuable discoveries concerning the heavenly bodies: navigation is thereby furnished with many important practical improvements: the naturalist sees, as it were, a new world opening to his view: Europe is hereby made acquainted with about three millions of the human species, which were before scarcely known to have existence; and the curious enquirer after the operations of the human mind in a state of uncivilized society, is supplied with abundant matter on which to reason and reflect. We may observe further, from the information which has been by these means obtained, that mankind does not appear to be degraded below that rank and station which it was before supposed to hold in the scale of moral being; for in the manners of these untutored people, we see no premeditated rancour, or any thing that indicates a malevolent heart; but, on the contrary, accumulated proofs of frankness, disinterested generosity, and innate goodness, from the ferocious New-Zeelander to the gentle and voluptuous O-Taheitian. It is true, the manners prevalent in a state of nature are dissolute, but may they not be considered as the exuberance of those passions, which,

P R E F A C E.

which, under proper culture, form the most elegant delights of social life? As one, no less a philosopher than a poet, has said,

Lust, thro' some certain strainers well refin'd,

Is gentle love. _____

P O P E.

Another observation that seems obviously to present itself from the accounts given of these islanders, compared with the concurring testimony of all travellers is, that mankind are ever led by a natural instinctive principle to form themselves into societies, not only for the sake of personal security but of enjoyment; and they are no less prone to consider their domestic or social circle as friends, than to look on those of their species who are further removed from their intercourse, with an eye of jealousy, if not with an inimical aspect. Even those islanders, whose manners were most friendly and engaging, were provided with very formidable weapons, by which they were enabled to repel assailants, if their dispositions did not lead them to become aggressors in a quarrel, and were found to be very expert in the use of these arms.

But it is not the design of this preface to dwell on such matters of speculation; and the reader will expect some information concerning the voyages that have been lately undertaken, and which have greatly excited the attention of the public.

The first of the late voyages round the world was made by commodore, (now admiral) Byron, in the

Dolphin, a man of war of the sixth rate, accompanied by the Tamar frigate, captain Mouat. He sailed from Plymouth the 21st of July, 1764, and passing through the straits of Magelhaen, discovered several islands in the southern hemisphere, and then proceeded to the Ladrone Islands, refreshed his crew at Tinian, which is one of them, proceeded to Batavia, and returned to Europe by the Cape of Good Hope, and cast anchor in Plymouth Sound the 9th of May, 1766. In the August following, captain Wallis, in the Dolphin, sailed on a second circumnavigation of the globe, accompanied by captain Carteret in the Swallow sloop. Having passed the Straits of Magelhaen, the two ships parted company; captain Wallis directed his course more westwardly than any former navigator within the tropics; he discovered several islands, but particularly *O-Tabeitee*, which he named King George's Island. Captain Carteret, besides several islands, discovered the straits which divide *New Britain* from what is now called *New Ireland*. Captain Wallis returned to England by the East Indies, in May 1768, and captain Carteret by the same route in March 1769. In November 1766, commodore Bougainville sailed from France with a frigate and a store ship; he entered the Pacific Ocean by the Straits of Magelhaen; touched at *O-Tabeitee*, the northern part of *Tiera del Esperitu Santo*, refreshed his crews in the very port which captain Carteret had not long left in *New Ireland*, touched at *Batavia* soon after the Swallow's departure from thence, fell into company with that sloop after

after leaving the Cape of Good Hope, and returned to France much about the same time. In 1766, the Royal Society preferred a memorial to his majesty, representing the advantages that would be derived to science, if an accurate observation of the transit of Venus over the sun, which was to happen in June 1769, was taken in some part of the South-Sea; in consequence of which, orders were given for the Endeavour bark, of three hundred and seventy tons, to be fitted out for that purpose, the command of which was given to lieutenant James Cook. This gentleman, and Mr. Charles Green, were appointed by that learned body, to make observations on the transit. Mr. Banks, a gentleman of large fortune, and zealously devoted to the acquisition of knowledge, in pursuit of which no hardships were considered as severe, or dangers beheld with dismay, accompanied by Dr. Solander, a learned disciple of the great Linnaeus, embarked on this expedition; and captain Wallis returning just as they were about to sail, the island of *O-Tabeitee*, which he had discovered, was pointed out as the most eligible spot for the purpose of making the observation. Lieutenant Cook sailed in July 1768, went round Cape Horn, and having with indefatigable zeal traversed the southern regions of the great Pacific Ocean, minutely examined the coast of New Zealand, with undaunted courage persevered amidst rocks and shoals, in tracing the eastern coast of *New Holland*, and having found it to be separated from *New Guinea* by a strait, he returned to England by

the way of the East Indies, and came to an anchor in the Downs on the 12th of July 1771. The history of these four voyages round the world, made by English navigators, is given by Dr. Hawkeſworth, whose account, consisting of three quarto volumes, is published under the immediate patronage of his majesty; besides which, an account of the latter and more important voyage of the Endeavour, is given in the Journal of Sydney Parkinson, a young man, who went out with Mr. Banks as natural history painter, and who unfortunately died soon after the ship left Batavia, whose journal was published by his brother; in it there are evident marks of a solid judgment, and great assiduity to obtain the best information concerning the productions of nature, and the manners of the people which they visited; but there is, however, reason to suspect, that much more is given under his name than he ever gave under his hand; this book makes a thin quarto. M. de Bougainville has also written a very judicious account of his voyage. Soon after the return of the Endeavour, a voyage to determine with precision the existence of a southern continent, was resolved upon under the same royal auspice which had given birth to the former expeditions. Two vessels, the Resolution and Adventure, were fitted out as king's ships for that purpose; captain Cook had the conduct of the expedition, and had the Resolution for his ship; captain Furneaux, who had already sailed round the world with captain Wallis as his first lieutenant, had the command

of the Adventure. Dr. Forster, and his son Mr. George Forster, were appointed to embark in this expedition, to collect, describe, and draw the objects of natural history which should present themselves; Mr. Wales was appointed astronomer on board the Resolution, and Mr. William Bayley on board the Adventure; also Mr. William Hodges, a very able artist, whose department it was to take drawings of persons and prospects that were curious and important. On the 13th July of 1772, the two ships sailed on their voyage round the world, than which none was ever more productive of valuable information, or more beneficial to the advancement of science. The Adventure having twice parted company from the Resolution, returned to England in 1774, but the Resolution did not arrive till the 3d July, 1775. Neither ship touched at any of the East-India settlements. The circumstances of this voyage are related by captain Cook himself, in two quarto volumes, with a precision and accuracy which do him great honour. Mr. George Forster, a young gentleman of extraordinary parts and extensive knowledge, has likewise written an account of this important voyage, with great elegance and ingenuity, which is likewise printed in two volumes quarto. The honourable captain Phipps (lord Mulgrave) was appointed to the command of the Racehorse and Carcass bombs in 1773, in order to attempt to penetrate towards the North-Pole, and discover, if possible, a passage to the eastward. He returned the latter end of the

same year, having approached nearer to the Pole than any one who ever made the attempt before him; but the passage so long desired, and so repeatedly sought, was determined, by this expedition, to be impracticable, on account of the vast expanse of ice which is spread in every direction in the high northern latitudes. The account of this voyage makes a volume in quarto; it is written by the conductor of it, and does as much honour to his accomplishments as a scholar, and a man of science, as the persevering endeavours which he used to accomplish his purpose, attest his skill and intrepidity in his profession.

Such are the materials from whence the following sheets are collected; besides which, the relation of Mendana's voyages, in 1567 and 1595; of Quiros, in 1605; Le Maire and Schouten, 1615; Tasman, 1642; Dampier, 1699; Roggewein, 1722; and Anson, 1742, have been consulted, and from them many necessary lights have been derived. The entertainment which the author received from reading the accounts of these voyages, first suggested the idea of arranging the valuable information which they contain in geographical order, and in that kind of method which the subjects themselves pointed out. In the prosecution of this design he has endeavoured to compile faithfully, though not to transcribe servilely; he trusts that the reader will find, in this digested summary, much entertainment as well as information; and if the public approbation justifies such hopes, his labours will be fully compensated.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

OF the South-Sea, or Pacific Ocean — Page 1

CHAP. I.

Of the islands of Juan Fernandez, and Masafuero 2

CHAP. II.

Of Easter-Island.

Sect. I. Its situation, extent, climate, and face of the country 6

Sect. II. Of the vegetables and animals of Easter-Island 8

Sect. III. Of the inhabitants of Easter-Island; their persons and dresses; character of the women seen there; peculiar customs, manners, and mechanical skill — 10

CHAP.

xii. C O N T E N T S.

C H A P. III.

Of the Marquesas-Islands, discovered by Mendoca; and several Low-Islands to the south-west, lately discovered, and called by M. de Bougainville the Dangerous Archipelago — — — — 19

C H A P. IV.

Of O-Tahitee, called by captain Wallis, King George the Third's Island — — — — 37

SECT. I. Its situation, extent, climate, soil, mountains, and face of the country — — — — ib.

SECT. II. Of the trees, shrubs, insects, reptiles, birds, beasts, and fishes of O-Tahitee — — — — 40

SECT. III. Of the persons, dresses, houses, food, and intoxicating liquor of the Tahitians; a peculiar custom of the sexes eating apart. Cleanliness. Of their staining or tattowing their bodies. Some few instances of an extraordinary *usus naturæ*. The diseases incident to these islanders, and their skill in surgery. — — — — 44

SECT. IV. Of the manufacture of the Tahitian cloth and matting; their diet and perfumes; their weapons of war, and other implements; ignorance of the use of iron, and ingenious substitute for it in their tools; their canoes, both for fishing and war — — — — 62

SECT. V. Of the temper and disposition of the Tahitians; their propensity to theft; readiness to forgive injuries; great sensibility and friendliness. Of their women; profligacy of the lower class; account of a society established — — — —

C O N T E N T S. xiii

blished among those of rank, called *Arreev*. Their diversions; a sketch of their general character — 71

Sect. VI. Account of some peculiar customs and manners in the island of O-Taheitee — 97

Sect. VII. Of the language of the O-Taheitians; their mental endowments, and skill in the sciences — 101

Sect. VIII. Of the government of O-Taheitee; their king, nobility, gentry, and commonalty; its populousness and wars — 104

Sect. IX. Of the religion of the O-Taheitians; their priests; human sacrifices; their morais, or burying-places; and their manner of mourning for the dead — 109

Sect. X. An account of the European ships that have visited this island, and the principal transactions which happened whilst they remained here. Of *Oberoa*, supposed by captain Wallis to have been the queen of the island. Of the trade established with the natives. Of European seeds sown here, and animals left to stock the country — 121

Sect. XI. The history of *Tupia* and *Aotourou*, who embarked with captain *Cook* and *M. de Bougainville*, for *Europe*. Of *Mabine*, or *Oedides*, who made a voyage towards the South-Pole with captain *Cook*; and of *Omai*, who came to England with captain *Furneaux* — 145

C H A P. V.

Of the Society-Islands — 157

Sect. I. Of *Ulictea*, or *Raietea*, remarkable burying-place. Tokens of conquest left on the island. Company of dancers; their dresses, and the entertainment they exhibited. A feast served up according to the custom of the country.

xiv C O N T E N T S.

country. A prodigiously corpulent man. Affection shewn by the chief to captain Cook. Images, supposed to be objects of worship. The religion of the inhabitants 159
 Sect. II. Of *Huabine*, and the rest of the Society-Islands 170

C H A P. VI

Of the Friendly-Islands, called by *Tafman*, *Middleburg*, *Amsterdam*, *Rotterdam*, and *Pylstart*; including also many others which were seen but not visited by captain Cook — — — — — 177

Sect. I. Of *Middleburg*; its climate, productions of the earth, animals; the houses, and domestic utensils of the natives. Persons of the natives, both men and women; singular manner of puncturing the skin in use here; custom of maiming their little fingers. Reception given to captain Cook. Diseases observed here — — — — — 178

S. & II. Of *Amsterdam*, called by the natives *Tongotabu* 186

Sect. III. Of *Rotterdam*, called by the natives *Aniamocka*, and the adjacent islands. Description of the country; its productions, cultivation, regularity of the roads laid out here. Behaviour of a woman to captain Cook. Imminent danger of the ship's surgeon from some turbulent natives; his rescue effected by an amiable young girl. A man of a very singular character — — — — — 201

C H A P. VII.

Of the *New-Hebrides*: including the *Tiera del Esperitu Santo* of *Quiros*, called by *M. de Bougainville* the *Archipelago* of the *Great Cyclades*. Bay of *St. Philip* and *James*.
 Popu-

Populoufnefs of Tierra del Esperitu Santo; behaviour of the natives. Of Mallicollo. Arrow found in the head of a fhark. Perfons of the Mallicollefe; their quicknefs of apprehenfion. Mufic. Their women. Reception given to captain Cook. St. Bartholomew, Aurora, Whitfunday, Ifle of Lepers, Ambrym, Sandwich, Erromanga. Of *Tanna*; face of the country; remarkable volcano; experiment made on a hot fpring in its vicinity; luxuriant vegetation produced by it. Plants and odori-ferous fhubs collected here. Pigeon fhoot with a nutmeg in its craw. Birds and fhifh; no other animals than hogs and rats. A dog and bitch left here by captain Cook. Strange custom of thrufting a piece of bone through the cartilage of the nofe. Remarkable fwelling of the eye-lids. Incifions made on their fhifh. Servile condition of the women. Their mufic and language. Eat human fhifh. Reception given to their vifitants. Of *Immer* and *Anatom*. — — — 207—240

C H A P. VIII.

Of New-Caledonia, and its neighbouring iflands. Productions of *New-Caledonia*. Inhabitants. Remarkable drefs of the men. Little efteem fhewn for the women. Their weapons, language, and mufic; manner of treating their dead. Reception given to the fhifp. Miftake their guefts for men-eaters. Of the *Ifle of Pines*; *Botany* and *Norfolk-Iflands*. — — — 241

C H A P. IX.

Of the fhmall fhattered iflands that have been difcovered between the equator and the fouthern tropic, and from
150th

xvi C O N T E N T S.

150th deg. of longitude west, to 160th deg. of longitude east; particularly *Eimeo*, or captain Wallis's *Duke of York's Island*; *O-Heteroa*, *Howe*, *Hervey*, *Palmerston*, *Savage*, *Boscawen*, *Keppel*, *Islands of Danger*, *Byron's Duke of York*, *Queen Charlotte's Isles*, and *Byron's Island* 256

C H A P. X.

Of New-Zeeland.

- Sect. I. Of the first discovery of New-Zeeland, found to consist of two islands; their situation, extent, climate, soil, mountains, and the face of the country in each 264
- Sect. II. Of the trees, plants, insects, reptiles, birds, beasts, and fishes of New-Zeeland. A particular description of the valuable flax-plant found here; and of the poy-bird, peculiar to this country — — 274
- Sect. III. Of the persons, drefs, houses, food, utensils, weapons and canoes, of the New-Zeelanders. Their *Hippas*, or fortified villages; and of their women 282
- Sect. IV. Of the disposition and manners of the New-Zeelanders. Their skill in husbandry; cleanliness; fierceness; method of attacking their enemies, and horrid practice of eating human flesh. The diseases to which they are incident. Their language, music, government, and religion — — — — 290
- Sect. V. Of the reception given to the *English* at *New-Zeeland*, when they visited those islands in the *Endeavour* bark, *Resolution* and *Adventure* sloops, in 1770, 1773, and 1774. Of *Peaterree*, a friendly chief on the southern island; of the trade carried on with the natives; attempts made to plant the country with roots, and other edible vegetables, and to stock it with a breed of animals. The shocking catastrophe

C O N T E N T S. xvii

catastrophe which befel the boat's crew belonging to the *Adventure*. Of a visit made this country by two French ships, in January 1772, and the massacre of the commander, and twenty-eight of his men, by the natives 315

C H A P. XI.

Of New-Holland.

Sect. I. A description of the country; its productions, inhabitants, and their manner of living — — 326

Sect. II. Account of captain Cook's navigation along the eastern coast of New-Holland, to which he gave the name of *New South-Wales*. Of his wonderful deliverance from shipwreck; with several particulars respecting the country, and the manners and dispositions of the Indians who inhabit it — — — — 335

C H A P. XII.

Of *New-Guinea*, *New-Britain*, *New-Ireland*, and *New-Hanover*; with several islands discovered by captain Carteret in 1767 — — — — 355

CONCLUSION. Describing the *Ladrone*, or *Marian Islands*, in the northern hemisphere in the Pacific Ocean 364

P A R T II.

Containing the voyages made by captain Cook, and the honourable Constantine John Phipps, (now lord Mulgrave) to the frigid zones, and towards the Poles 369

C H A P. I.

Captain Cook's attempt to discover a southern continent, in 1773, 1774, and 1775 — — — — Sect.

xviii C O N T E N T S.

Sect. I. Of the first attempt made by captain Cook in the Resolution, accompanied by captain Furneaux in the Adventure, to discover a southern continent, from his leaving the Cape of Good Hope to his arrival at New-Zealand	— — — —	370
Sect. II. Second attempt made by captain Cook in the Resolution, having parted from the Adventure, to penetrate towards the South-Pole; from his sailing from New-Zealand in November 1773, to his arrival at Easter-Island in March 1774	— —	379
Sect. III. Captain Cook's cruise in the southern Atlantic Ocean, with an account of the lands discovered in that sea in 1775	— — — —	388

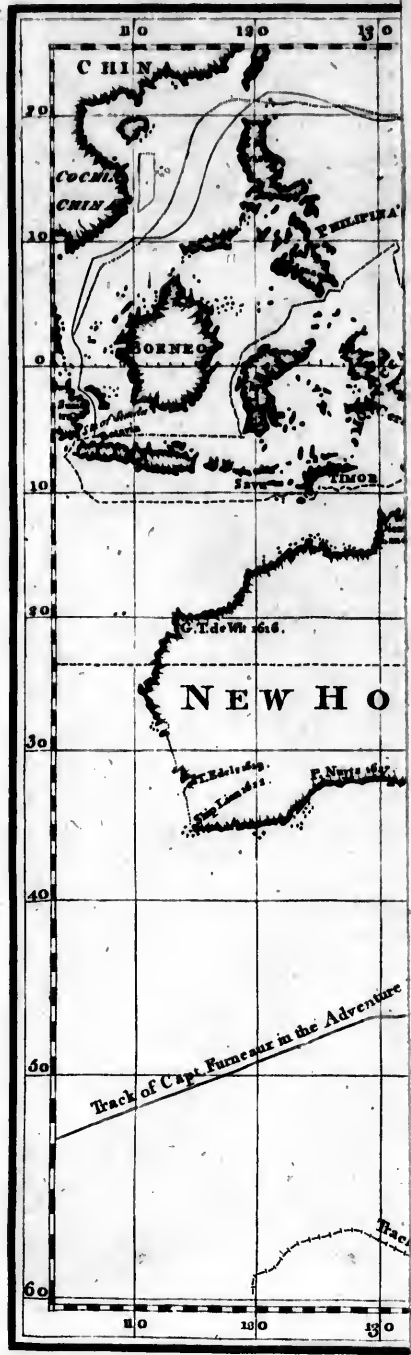
C H A P. II.

Captain Phipps's (lord Mulgrave) voyage towards the North Pole. Account of Spitsbergen; face of the country, animals. Fish caught in the northern sea. Mofin Island, and Seven Islands. The ships embayed in the ice, and imminent danger to all on board of perishing. Experiments on the degree of cold in certain depths of water, and on the specific gravity of ice	— —	400
--	-----	-----

DIRECTIONS TO THE BINDER.

- The Title cuts off from Sheet A a.
- The Map of the World is to face the Title.
- The Map of the South-Sea, beginning of Part I.
- Inhabitants of the South-Sea Islands, Page 37.
- View of the Racehorse and Carcass, Page 406.

A MAP of the NE



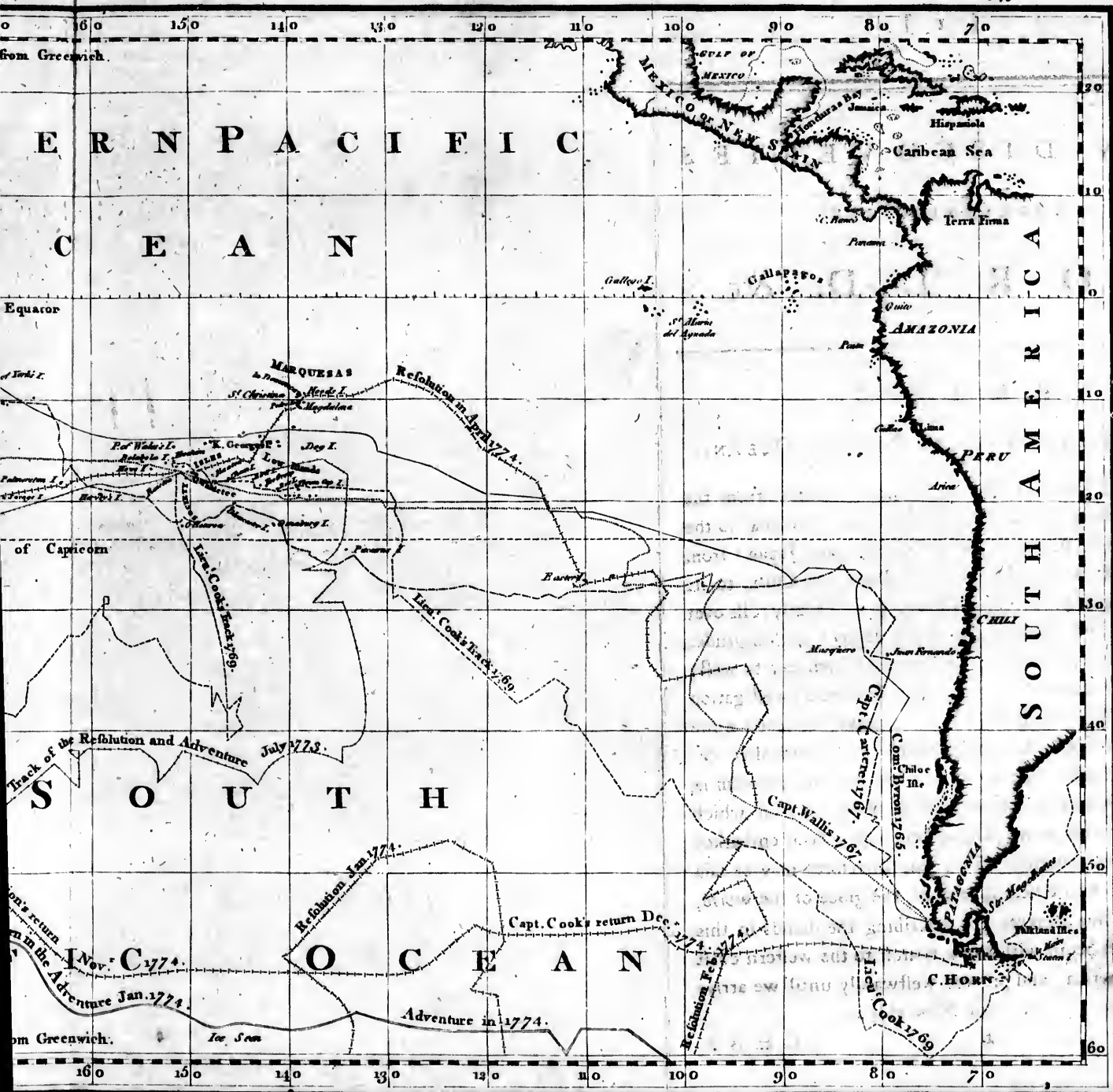
he
he
is
m-
7c
c-
ate
v-
er-
79
tic
at
88

erth
ni-
nd,
nd
ri-
er,
oo

A MAP of the NEW DISCOVERIES in the SOUTH SEA



SOUTH SEA, with the Tracks of the NAVIGATORS. (1778)



NEW DISCOVERIES
CONCERNING THE
WORLD, &c.

PART I.

Of the SOUTH-SEA, or PACIFIC OCEAN.

THIS immense body of water extends from the western coasts of North and South America, to the eastern shores of China, Tartary, and Japan: from its most western boundary between Peru and Chili, to its most eastern point at Cochin-China, it very nearly rolls over an extent of one hundred and eighty degrees of longitude, being the semicircumference of the world from east to west; and it is now supposed, by the most accurate investigation that human skill and spirit will ever make, to reach quite to the South-Pole; and may possibly be as extensive towards the North: but to explore this curious problem in geography, is one of the objects of the voyage on which captain Cook has now (December 1777) been embarked about seventeen months. This sea, therefore, may be said to embrace an entire hemisphere of the globe of the world, within about five degrees. In describing the islands in this ocean we shall begin with those nearest to the western coast of South-America, and proceed westwardly until we arrive at New-Guinea, Papua, and New-Holland.

B

C H A P.

C H A P. I.

Of the Islands of JUAN FERNANDEZ and MASAFUERO.

THESE islands are two in number, and are distant from each other about thirty-one leagues; they were first discovered by Juan Fernandez, a Spaniard, from whom they take their name, in 1572. The Spaniards distinguish them by the greater and less Juan Fernandez, but the smaller island is more generally known by the name of Masafuero. The greater Juan Fernandez lies to the eastward, in latitude 33 deg. 40 min. south, and 78 deg. 30 min. west from London^a. It was formerly a place of resort for the buccaniers who annoyed the western coast of the Spanish continent. They were led to resort hither from the multitude of goats which it nourished; to deprive their enemies of which advantage the Spaniards transported a considerable number of dogs, which encreasing greatly, have almost extirpated the goats, who now only find security among the steep mountains in the northern parts, which are inaccessible to their pursuers. There are instances of two men living, at different times, alone on this island for many years; the one a Musquito Indian, the other Alexander Salkirk, a Scotchman, who was, after five years, taken on board an English ship, which touched here in about 1710, and brought back to Europe. From the history of this recluse Daniel Defoe is said to have conceived the idea of writing the adventures of Robinson Crusoe. This island

^a Dalrymple's historical account of voyages to the South-Sea, Vol. I. page 175.

was very propitious to the remains of commodore Anson's Squadron in 1741, after having been buffeted with tempests, and debilitated by an inveterate scurvy during a three months passage round Cape Horn; they continued here three months, during which time the dying crews, who on their arrival could scarcely with one united effort heave the anchor, were restored to perfect health^b. Captain Carteret, in the Swallow, in 1767, having met with many difficulties and impediments in his passage into the South-Sea, by the straits of Magelhaens, attempted to make this island in order to recruit the health of his men; but he found it fortified by the Spaniards, and therefore chose rather to proceed to the island of Masafuero^c. But M. de Bougainville, that same year, is said to have touched here for refreshments, although in the narrative of the voyage the fact is cautiously suppressed. This island is not quite fifteen miles long, and about six broad; its only safe harbour is on the north side. It is said to have plenty of excellent water, and to abound with a great variety of esculent vegetables highly antiscorbutic, besides which commodore Anson sowed a variety of garden seeds, and planted the stones of plums, apricots, and peaches, which he was many years afterwards informed had thriven greatly, and now doubtless furnish a very valuable addition to the natural productions of this spot. Vast shoals of fish of various kinds frequent this coast, particularly cod of a prodigious size, and it is said in not less abundance than on the banks of Newfoundland. There are but few birds here, and those few are of species well known and common^d.

^b Anson's Voyage, duodecimo edition, page 109, &c. ^c Hawkesworth's Voyages, Vol. I. page 87. ^d Anson's Voyage, page 118.

Of MASA FUERO.

Commodore Byron, in the *Dolphin*, accompanied by the *Tamur*, anchored off this island in 1765, and sent out his boats to endeavour to get wood and water; but as the shore was rocky, and a surf broke with great violence upon it, he ordered the men to put on cork jackets, by the help of which they brought off a considerable quantity of both. Here they found plenty of goats, which proved to be as good food as venison in England. In this expedition the gunner, and a seaman who could not swim went on shore with the waterers, and when the business was completed, the violence of the surf which beat against the shore made them afraid to venture off to the boat; they were therefore left behind on the island. The next day the commodore sent out a boat to bring them back; the gunner swam through the surf, and got on board, but the seaman had so thorough a presage of being drowned in the attempt to reach the boat, that preferring life to social intercourse, he chose to remain at all events on the island. Having formed this resolution, he took an affectionate leave of the people in the boat; a midshipman, however, just as they were about to return without him, taking one end of a rope in his hand, jumped into the sea, and swam through the surf to the beach, where the poor isolated despondent sat ruminating on his situation. The young man remonstrated to him on the absurdity of the resolution he had formed, and having made a running nooze in the rope, suddenly threw it over the sailor; and fixing it round his body, the people in the boat began to drag him through the surf, and thus brought him on board; but he had swallowed so great a quantity of water

M A S A F U E R O.

on his passage, that he was to all appearance dead; but proper means being used he soon recovered, and was no doubt abundantly thankful for the friendly violence that had forced him from the dreary solitude which his fears had courted^e.

Captain Carteret describes this island to lay 33 deg. 45 min. south, longitude 80 deg. 46 min. west, from Greenwich. It is very high and mountainous, and at a distance appears as one hill or rock; it is of a triangular form, and seven or eight leagues in circumference.

There is here such plenty of fish, that a boat, with a few hooks and lines, may presently catch as much as will serve an hundred people. Here are coal-fish, cavilliers, cod, hallibut, and cray-fish. Captain Carteret's crew caught a kingfisher that weighed eighty-seven pounds, and was five feet and an half long. The sharks here were so ravenous, that in taking soundings one of them swallowed the lead, by which they hauled him above water, but he regained his liberty by disgorging his prey. Seals are so numerous here, that captain Carteret says, if many thousands were killed in a night, they would not be missed the next morning. These animals yield excellent train oil, and their hearts and plucks are very good food, having a taste something like those of a hog; their skins are covered with very fine fur.—There are many birds here, and some very large hawks. Of the Pintado bird the crew of the Swallow caught seven hundred in one night^f.

^e Hawkesw. Vol. I. page 30.

^f Hawkesw. Vol. I. page 100.

6 NEW DISCOVERIES, &c.

C H A P. II.

Of EASTER-ISLAND:

S E C T. I.

Its Situation, Extent, Climate, and Face of the Country,

THIS island was first discovered by Davis, an Englishman, who called it Davis's Land; afterwards Roggewein, in 1722, visited it, and gave it the name of Easter-Island; but the writers of that voyage, in describing it, are said to have consulted fancy more than truth^e. It is called by the natives, according to Mr. Forster^h, *Wachu*; but captain Cook says, that three different names were given for it by the natives, viz. *Tamareki*, *Whybue*, and *Teapy*ⁱ. It was also visited by a Spanish ship in 1770, who gave it the name of *St. Carlos Island*^k, and several articles of European manufacture, particularly wearing apparel, were seen in the possession of the natives, which they had procured in consequence of that visit. It lies in latitude 27 deg. 4 min. south, longitude 109 deg. 46 min. west, from Greenwich; it is nearly of a triangular form; its greatest extent, which is from north-east to south-west, is about four leagues, and its greatest width about two. From the appearance of the country, it was conjectured by the philosophical gentlemen who visited it with captain Cook in the Resolution, that it had received a recent violence from volcanic fires^l. The

^e Cook I. 287. Forster I. 579.
page 293.

^k Forster I. 551.

^h Vol. I. page 592.
^l Forster I. 601.

ⁱ Vol. I.

whole country is barren, and, in some places, a bare rock without any covering of earth. The whole ground was bespread with rocks and stones of all sizes, which seemed to have been exposed to a great fire, where they had acquired a black colour, and porous appearance. Towards the north is a single coherent rock, or lump of black melted lava, which appeared to contain some iron ore, but many proofs remained of its having been formerly cultivated^m. Mr. Forster is of opinion, that this island was at first produced by a volcano, as all its minerals are merely volcanic, and that it has been reduced to its present desolate state by an eruption.

The soil of this island is a dry hard clay, and notwithstanding it is every where covered with stones, yet there are several large tracts planted with potatoes, and plantains, but no fruit was seen on any of the treesⁿ. The most remarkable curiosity belonging to this island is, a number of Colossian statues, of which, however, very few remain entire; these statues are placed only on the sea coast; on the east side of the island were seen the ruins of three platforms of stone-work, on each of which had stood four of these large statues, but they were all fallen down from two of them, and one from the third; they were broken or defaced by the fall; Mr. Wales measured one which had fallen, which was fifteen feet in length, and six broad over the shoulders: each statue had on its head a large cylindrical stone of a red colour, wrought perfectly round: others were found that measured near twenty-seven feet, and upwards of eight feet over the shoulders; and a still larger one was seen standing, the shade of which was sufficient to shelter all the party, consisting of near thirty persons, from the

^m Forster I. 566, 569.

ⁿ Cook I. 281.

8 NEW DISCOVERIES, &c.

rays of the sun. The workmanship is rude, but not bad, nor are the features of the face ill formed; the ears are long, according to the distortion practiced in the country, and the bodies have hardly any thing of a human figure about them. How these islanders, wholly unacquainted with any mechanical power, could raise such stupendous figures, and afterwards place the large cylindric stones upon their heads, is truly wonderful! The most probable conjecture seems to be, that the stone is factitious, and that each figure was gradually erected, by forming a temporary platform round it, and raising it as the work advanced; but they are at any rate very strong proofs of the ingenuity and perseverance of the islanders in the age when they were built, as well as that the ancestors of the present race had seen better days than their descendants ^o. The water of this island is in general brackish, there being only one well that is perfectly fresh, which is at the east end of the island; and whenever the natives repair to it to slake their thirst, they wash themselves all over; and if there is a large company, the first leaps into the middle of the hole, drinks, and washes himself without ceremony, after which another takes his place, and so on in succession ^p. This custom was much disrelished by their new friends, who stood greatly in need of this valuable article, and did not wish to have it contaminated by such ablutions.

S E C T. II.

Of the Animals, Birds, Trees, Plants, and Vegetables of Easter-Island.

THE only quadruped seen here was black rats, which is common to all the islands of the South-Sea. Domestic fowls of a very small breed, and dull plumage, are

^o Cook I. 281, 284, 293.

Cook I. 283, 284.

here

here in small numbers; and two or three noddies were seen, which were so tame as to settle on the shoulders of the natives^a. This country produces only a few shrubs; the leaf and seeds of one of which (called by the natives *Torremedo*) was not much unlike that of the common *Vetch*; the seeds had a disagreeable bitter taste, and are considered by the natives as poisonous; the wood is of a reddish colour, hard and heavy, but crooked, and exceeding six or seven feet in height; and not a tree was seen on the whole island that exceeded the height of ten feet^r. Another small shrub was seen here, whose wood is white and brittle, and as well as its leaf somewhat resembles the ash. There are also some of the Taheitean cloth plant, (which will be described hereafter) but dwarfish and weak, being from two to four feet high. They are planted in rows among very large rocks, where the rains have washed a little soil together. Here are sugar-canes, bananas, and yams, which thrive to admiration, considering the stoney quality of the ground. The sugar-canes were about nine or ten feet high, and contained a very sweet juice, which the inhabitants very hospitably presented to their guests, whenever they asked for something to drink. These are said to be sweeter than those at Taheitee^s. The whole number of plants growing on this island, according to Mr. Forster, does not exceed twenty species^t.

Here are potatoes of a gold-yellow colour as sweet as carrots; these were found very nourishing and antiscorbutic; here is likewise a species of nightshade which is made use of at Taheitee, and the other islands, as a vulnerary medicine, and is probably cultivated here for the same purpose. The grass, which commonly springs up among the

^a Forster I. 568, 71, 74. ^r Forster I. 559. Cook I. 285. ^s Cook I. 285.
^t Forster I. 563, 571, 572, 573. ^t I. 599.

stones on the uncultivated soil, is carefully plucked up and spread over their plantations as a manure, or to preserve them, in some measure, from the parching beams of the sun, from whence it should seem that the natives are not at all ignorant of rural œconomy, and till their sterl patrimony at a great expence of time and labour ^u.

S E C T. III.

Of the Inhabitants of Easter-Island; their Persons, Dress, the Dissoluteness of the Women seen here, their Customs, Manners, and Mechanic Skill.

THESSE people are of a middle size, rather thin, in general, go entirely naked, and have punctures on their bodies, which is common in a greater or a less degree to all the south sea islands. Their greatest singularity is the size of their ears, the lobe or extremity of which is stretched out so, as almost to rest on the shoulder, and is pierced by a very large hole, through which four or five fingers might with ease be thrust. The chief ornaments for their ears are the white down of feathers, and rings which they wear in the inside of the hole, made of the leaf of the sugar cane, which is very elastic, and is rolled up like a watch spring. Some were seen covered with a kind of bright cloth of an orange colour, and these were supposed to be chiefs. Their ideas of decency are of course very different from those of nations who are accustomed to clothing ^v. Their colour is a chefnut brown; their hair black, curling, and remarkably strong; that on the head, as well as on the face, is cut short. One of the natives who came on board the ship, had a belt

^u Forster I. 578.

^v Forster I. 558, 560.

round his middle, from whence a kind of net-work descended before, but too thin to answer the purpose of concealment; a string was tied about his neck, and a flat bone something shaped like a tongue, and about five inches long, was fastened to it, and hung down on the breast, which he said was the bone of a porpoise. He was presented with nails, medals, and strings of beads, all of which he desired to have tied round his head. At first he shewed signs of fear or diffidence, asking, in a dialect of the language generally used in the South-Sea, and which was somewhat understood by many on board, whether they would kill him as an enemy? but, on being assured of good treatment, he became perfectly unconcerned and at ease, and talked of nothing but dancing w^r

The

* Forster I. 561.—It was little more than half a century before the Resolution touched here, that admiral Roggerwein had paid this Island a visit, from whence the apparent apprehensions of the natives on the first interviews with our people may be easily explained; for though the natives shewed the Dutch a most engaging friendly disposition, it was not a security to them from the wanton cruelty of these European savages; many appear, from the relation of that voyage, to have been killed without any reason being assigned for their execution. Indeed it is said, “some of them ventured to touch our arms; they were fired upon, which frightened and dispersed them immediately *.” And further, “these good people; that they might get the dead bodies, brought us all kinds of provisions; their consternation was very great, and expressed by doleful cries and lamentations; all of them, men, women, and children, carried palm-branches, and a sort of a red and white flag: they threw themselves on their knees, and testified, by the most humble attitudes, how much they wished for our friendship: at length they showed us their women, intimating that we might dispose of them, and carry any of them aboard †.”—Nothing can be more shocking to humanity, than to read the accounts which are given, with great indifference, of the unprovoked barbarities which both the Spaniards and the Dutch exercised towards the natives of those countries in the South-Sea, where they obtruded themselves. The smallest act of pilfering, which in these

* Dalrymple, V. I. page 92.

† Idem, page 93.

The women are small, and slender limbed, and have punctures on the face resembling the patches sometimes in fashion among European ladies; they paint their whole face with a reddish brown ruddle; over which they lay a bright orange colour extracted from the *turmeris* root; or they variegate their faces with strokes of white-shell lime, which led an observer to remark, that the art of painting is not confined to those ladies who have the opportunity of imitating French fashions*. All the women were clad in scanty pieces of cloth; one piece wrapped round their loins, and another over their shoulders, make a complete dress; both sexes have thin but not savage features. The women wear their hair long, and sometimes tied on the crown of their head,

The violent action of the sun upon their heads, has led them to contrive various coverings for that part; their head-dress is a round fillet adorned with feathers, and a straw bonnet something like a Scotch one; the former worn by the men, the latter by the women. Many of the men wore a ring about two inches thick, strong and curiously plaited of grass, and fitted close round the head; this was covered with the long feathers of the man of war bird; others had huge bushy caps of brown gull's feathers, which were al-

untutored people could not possibly be construed into a crime, and might have warranted perhaps a whipping, *in terrorem*, when the offender could be seized, procured the immediate SLAUGHTER of the transgressor; for the death-dealing tube was instantly levelled, and if the skill of the stern avenger was equal to his rancour, the fate of the poor Indian was inevitable. And truth obliges us to own, that the same degree of barbarism possessed our countrymen falls even at this day, and would have produced as many fatal consequences on the late voyages as on the former ones, if the humanity of the commanding officers had not opposed with steady attention, and compulsive authority, this cruel bias!

* Forset I. 564.

most as large as the full-bottomed wigs of European lawyers: besides which, some wore a simple hoop of wood, round which the long white feathers of the gannet hung nodding^y. All the natives that came on board the ship, expressed the utmost admiration at every thing they saw, and every one of them measured the whole length of the vessel, from head to stern, with his extended arms. Among these was one woman, who carried on a particular traffic of her own; she visited several of the inferior officers, and then addressed herself to the sailors, emulating the famous exploits of Messalina.

Et lassata viris, necdum satiata recessit. JUV. vi. 130.

In colour, features, and language, says captain Cook, the inhabitants of Easter-Island bear such affinity to the people of the more western isles, that no one will doubt that they have had the same origin. It is extraordinary, continues he, that the same nation should have spread itself over all the isles in this vast ocean, from New Zealand hither, which is almost one fourth part of the circumference of the globe. Many of them have now no other knowledge of each other than what is preserved by antiquated tradition; and they have, by length of time, become, as it were, different nations; each having adopted some peculiar custom or habit, &c. Nevertheless, a careful observer will soon see the affinity each has to the other. The nicest calculation that could be made, never brought the number of inhabitants in this island to above seven hundred, and of these the females bore no proportion in number to the males. Either they have but few females, or else their women were restrained from appearing during the stay of the ship, notwithstanding, the men shewed no signs of a zealous disposition, or the women any scruples of appearing in public; in fact, they

^y Cook I. 291. Forster I. 565.

seemed to be neither reserved nor chaste; and the large pointed cap which they wore, gave them the appearance of professed wantons; but as all the women who were seen were liberal of their favours, it is more than probable, that all the married and modest had concealed themselves from their importunate visitants, in some inscrutable parts of the island; and what further strengthens this supposition is, that heaps of stones were seen piled up into little hillocks, which had one steep perpendicular side, where a hole went under ground; the space within, says Mr. Forster, could be but small, and yet it is probable, that these cavities served, together with their miserable huts, to give shelter to the people at night, and they may communicate with natural caverns, which are very common in the lava currents of volcanic countries. We should have been glad, continues he, to have ascertained this circumstance, but the natives always denied us admittance into these places, and the ship continued only two days at this island (March 14 & 15, 1774); and in one of the excursions made by Mr. Forster, and some others, they thought they heard the voice of women in an hut, the entrance of which was stopped up by brushwood; but after listening some time, nothing could be heard to confirm them in their conjecture^a. The few women that appeared, were the most lascivious of their sex that perhaps have been ever noticed in any country, and shame seemed to be entirely unknown to them.

It was presently discovered, that these islanders were very expert thieves. It was with difficulty the people of the ship could keep their hats on their heads, and hardly possible to keep any thing in their pockets, nor even such articles as the natives had sold; for they would watch every opportu-

^a Forster I. 570, 571.

^a Forster I. 578.

nity to snatch them away, so that the same thing was sometimes bought two or three times over, and at last dexterously purloined. The only severity, however, exercised on these people for such peccadillos, was on a man who had stolen Mr. Forster's plant-bag from the sailor who carried it; the thief was fired at with small shot, which wounded him so as that he fell, soon after he had thrown down the fatal acquisition^b.

There is a mildness and good-nature in the disposition of this people, which prompt them to behave as kindly and hospitably as their barren country will permit them. A party who had rambled up the island, and were returning to the ship, passed a native who was digging potatoes in a field; they no sooner complained to him of great thirst, than he ran immediately to a large plantation of sugar-canes, and brought out a load of the best and juiciest on his back for their refreshment^c. Their disposition is far from being warlike, although they have weapons of defence.

Potatoes, bananas, yams, sugar-canes, and about fifty fowls, were the only provisions obtained here; in exchange for which, the natives received with great pleasure, empty cocoa-shells which had been procured upon other South-Sea islands: the cloth made at O-Taheitee, (of which more will be said in the sequel) and European cloth, bore the next degree of esteem, and iron ware held the lowest place. Most of the natives, on receiving a cocoa-nut, piece of cloth, or a nail, in the way of barter, ran away immediately, as if apprehensive, lest the other should repent his bargain, and insist on a re-exchange. Their eagerness for cloth led them to part with their caps, head-dresses, neck-

^b Forster I. 590.

^c Forster I. 579.

laces, ornaments for the ears, and several human figures made out of narrow pieces of wood about eighteen inches or two feet long, and wrought in a much neater and more proportionate manner than could have been expected from such a forlorn race: they represented men and women: the features were not pleasing, and the whole figure was much too long to be natural, but notwithstanding there was something characteristic in them which bespoke a taste for the arts. The wood of which they were made was finely polished, close grained, and of a dark brown; and it is quite inexplicable how such toys could come into . . . possession, as no tree could be found on the island after the nicest scrutiny, which produced this kind of wood, it being the perfume wood of O-Taheitee. A very singular figure thus carved with long nails, and fingers bent downwards, was brought to England by Mr. Forster, and presented by him to the British Museum. Beads they rejected with contempt, and threw them away as far as possible whenever they were offered to them^d. Their houses are low miserable huts, constructed by setting sticks upright in the ground, at six or eight feet distance; then bending them towards each other, and tying them together at the top, forming thereby a kind of Gothic arch; and in appearance these dwellings resemble a canoe, with the keel or bottom turned upwards. The longest sticks are placed in the middle, and shorter ones each way, and at less distance asunder, by which means the building is highest and broadest in the middle, and lower and narrower towards each end: to these, other sticks are tied horizontally, and the whole is thatched over with leaves of sugar-cane. The door-way is in the middle of one side, formed like a porch, and so low and narrow, as just to admit a man to enter on all-fours; the largest of these hovels that were

^d Foster I. 578, 580, 1, 572.

seen, seemed only six feet long, eight or nine feet high in the middle, and three or four at each end; its breadth at those parts being nearly equal to its height. Of these huts very few were seen in the excursions made into the country. Mr. Forster counted only ten or twelve from an eminence, that commanded a great part of the island^e. A further proof that there are recesses known only to themselves.

Their offensive weapons are short wooden clubs, and spears about six feet long, crooked, and armed at one end with pieces of flint; they have likewise a weapon made of wood like the *patco-patoo*, of New-Zeeland^f, which will be described when we speak of that country.

Not more than three or four canoes were seen in the whole island, and these very mean, constructed of many pieces of wood sewed together with small line, each piece not more than four or five inches wide, and two or three feet long. These boats measure from twelve to twenty feet long; they have out-riggers or balances made of three slender poles; they seem not to be capable of carrying more than four persons, and are quite unfit for any distant navigation; each of the men work this boat with a paddle, the blade of which is composed of several pieces of wood^g. There was no kind of musical instrument seen among the people^h. From the small number, and slightness of their boats, it may be supposed that they procure very little of their subsistence from fishing, and no mention is made either by Mr. Forster, or captain Cook, of any fishing implements seen here.

^e Cook I. 291. 2. Forster I. 560. ^f Cook I. 291. ^g Cook I. 292.
Forster I. 558, ^h Forster I. 400.

While the Resolution lay at Easter Island, a circumstance happened which showed that the idea of private property was known among them. A field of sweet potatoes furnished a desirable article of traffic to the ship's company; several of the natives dug up these roots, and exchanged them with the officers for what they most valued. After they had employed themselves in this manner for some hours, another native arrived, who with great fury drove the intruders away, and himself alone dug up the roots, and sold them in the manner that the others had done; from which circumstance it was inferred very naturally, that this man was the owner of the field, whom the others had robbed of the fruits of his labour, being tempted to commit the trespass by the ready market to which they brought their plunder^l.

They have a king, whom they style *aree*, or *hareekée*; he is described as a middle-aged man, rather tall, his face and whole-body strongly punctured. He wore a piece of cloth made of the mulberry bark, quilted with threads of grass, and stained yellow with tumeric. On his head he had a cap of long shining black feathers, which might be called a diadem. No great degree of homage was observed to be paid to him by the people, and from the poverty of the country, his subjects can afford to shew but few distinctions to their monarch. Of the religion of these people both our narrators declare themselves entirely ignorant^k. And it would have shewn less petulant presumption, if the historian of Roggevein's voyage had candidly done the same. But very little regard is to be had to such a writer; one of the accounts makes the men on this island to measure twelve feet high, and the women to be about ten or eleven feet in height^l.

^l Foster L. 52. ^k Cook I. 294. Forster L. 589. ^l Dalrymple I. 113.

C H A P. III.

*Of the MARQUESAS ISLANDS, and the LOW ISLANDS
to the South-West.*

THESE islands were first discovered by Mendana, a Spaniard, in 1597, and from him obtained the general name they now bear, as well as the names of the particular islands, the last excepted. They occupy one degree of latitude, and near half a degree of longitude. The Marquesas islands are five in number, viz. La Magdalena, St. Pedro, La Dominica, Santa Christina, and Hood island. All the natives of these islands may be supposed to be of the same tribe. Those spots that are fit for culture are very populous; but as each island is very mountainous, and has many inaccessible and barren rocks, it is to be doubted whether the whole population of this group amounts to fifty thousand persons. The Spaniards, who first visited here, found the manners of the people gentle and inoffensive; but these qualities did not prevent those who landed from wantonly butchering several of the natives at Magdalena^m.

HOOD-ISLAND was not seen by Mendana. Captain Cook, in the *Resolution*, who discovered it in April 1774, gave it that name from the person on board his ship who first saw the land. It is the most northerly of the cluster; it lies in latitude 9 deg. 26 min. south, and 139 deg. 13 min. west; five leagues and a half distant from the east end of La Dominica.

^m Dalrymple's historical account of voyages, vol. I. pa. 66. Cook, vol. I. p. 306. Foster, vol. II. p. 34.

LA DOMINICA, called by the natives *Heeveroa*, extends east and west six leagues, and is about fifteen leagues in circuit: it is an high and mountainous island, the north-east point of which is steep and barren; but further to the north are some vallies filled with trees, among which a few huts are scattered; here are many craggy rocks like spires, and several hollow summits piled up in the centre of the island, which prove that volcanoes and earthquakes have been active in changing the face of the country. All the eastern side is a prodigious steep and almost perpendicular wall of a great height, which forms a sharp ridge shattered into spires and precipicesⁿ.

MAGDALENA is about five leagues in circuit, and is supposed to lie 10 deg. 25 min. south, and 138 deg. 50 min. west; it was only seen at nine leagues distance^o.

ST. PEDRO is a small island of moderate elevation, neither fertile nor populous; it is called by the natives *Onateyo*, is about three leagues in circuit, and lies south about four leagues and an half from the east end of La Dominica.

ST. CARISTINA, called by the natives *Waitabo*, and lies under the same parallel with St. Pedro, being 9 deg. 55 min. south, and 139 deg. 8 min. west; it is the most westwardly of the Marquesas. This island stretches north and south, and is about nine miles long in that direction, and seven or eight leagues in circuit. A narrow ridge of hills of considerable height extends the whole length of the island: there are other ridges, which rising from the sea, and with a regular ascent join the main ridge; these are disjointed by deep hollow vallies, which are fertile, adorned

ⁿ Foster, II. 6.

^o Cook, I. 306.

with fruit and other trees, and enriched with streams of excellent water ^p. The island is described to be covered with a rich mould, laid out in plantations, and growing a variety of fruit-trees. The rocks under this mould, which appeared chiefly near the banks of the rivulet, or on the broken sides of the path, contained volcanic productions, or different kinds of lava, some of which are full of white and greenish shells; these islands are therefore similar in their origin, and the nature of their minerals, to the Society Islands; the greater part of which seem to have been burning mountains ^q. Christina is divided from Dominica by straits that are about two miles wide. There is an harbour on the western side, under the highest land in the island, in which Mendana anchored in 1595, and which he named *Madre de Dios*, to which port captain Cook gave the name of Resolution Bay. When the ship anchored, about fifteen canoes put off from different parts, and came towards it; some of them were double, and contained fifteen men in each; others were small, and contained from three to seven persons. Every sign of friendship was made to invite these people to come on board without success; however, they came along side the ship, and offered some pepper-roots as signs of peace: these roots were received and fixed in the shrouds to signify reciprocal amity. Fish were then given in exchange for nails; afterwards some excellent bread-fruit, quite ripe, than which nothing could give greater satisfaction to the whole ship's company, who during nineteen weeks had lived on the salt provisions of the ship, which had lost their former taste and nourishment, by having then been two years on board. As soon as it was dark the canoes retired, according to the general customs of the South-Sea nations, on whom

^p Cook I. 307.

^q Forster II. 26.

the novelty of an European ship cannot prevail to wake a single night^r.

The inhabitants of these islands collectively, says captain Cook, are, without exception, the finest race of people in the South-Sea. For symmetry of shape, and regular features, they perhaps surpass all other nations^s. Not a single deformed, or ill-proportioned person, was seen on the island; all were strong, tall, well-limbed, and remarkably active^t. The men are about five feet ten, or six inches high; their teeth are not so good, nor are their eyes so full and lively as those of many other nations; their hair is of many colours, but none red; some have it long, but the most general custom is to wear it short, except a bunch on each side of the crown, which they tie in a knot^u; their countenances are pleasing, open, and full of vivacity; they are of a tawney complexion, which is rendered almost black by punctures over the whole body; they were entirely naked, except a small piece of cloth round their waist and loins. These punctures were disposed with the utmost regularity, so that the marks on each leg, arm, and cheek, were exactly similar^v. The women, in two days time, began to appear in considerable numbers, and the sailors found them not less kind than those of the other islands which they had visited; they were inferior to the men in stature, but well proportioned; their general colour was brown; no punctures were observed upon them; they wore a single piece of cloth made of the mulberry bark, which covered them from the shoulders to the knees.

The principal head-dress used in these islands, and what appear to be their chief ornament, is a sort of broad fillet,

^r Forster II. 11.

^s Vol. I. p. 308.

^t Forster II. 25.

^u Cook I. 309.

^v Forster II. 11.

curiously

curiously made of the fibres of the husks of cocoa-nuts; in the front is fixed a mother-of-pearl shell, wrought round to the size of a tea-saucer; before that another smaller, of very fine tortoise-shell, perforated into curious figures; also before, and in the centre of that, is another round piece of mother-of-pearl, about the size of half a crown; and before this another piece of perforated tortoise-shell, the size of a shilling. Besides this decoration in front, some have it also on each side, but in small pieces, and all have fixed to them the tail-feathers of cocks, or tropic-birds, which when the fillet is tied on stand upright, so that the whole together makes a very sprightly ornament. They wear round the neck a kind of ruff, or necklace, made of light wood; the outward and upper sides covered with small peas, which are fixed on with gum; they also wear some bunches of human hair fastened to a string, and tied round the legs and arms. But all the above ornaments are seldom seen on the same person^w. All these ornaments, except the last, they freely parted with for a trifling consideration; but the human hair they valued very highly, though these bunches were the usual residence of many vermin. It is probable that these were worn in remembrance of their deceased relations, and therefore were looked upon with some veneration; or they may be the spoils of their enemies, worn as the honourable testimonies of victory. However, a large nail, or something which struck their eyes, commonly got the better of their scruples^x. The king, or chief of the island, came to visit captain Cook; he was the only one seen compleatly dressed in this manner; their ordinary ornaments are necklaces, and amulets made of shells, &c. All of them had their ears pierced, though none were seen with ear-rings^y. The king had not much respect paid to him by his attendants; he

^w Cook I. 309.^x Forster II. 16.^y Cook I. 309.

presented captain Cook with some fruit and hogs, and acquainted him that his name was *Honoo*, and that he was *he-ka-ai*, which title seems to correspond with the *aree* of O-Taheitee, and *arekas* of the Friendly Isles^a. Their dwellings are in the vallies, and on the sides of the hills near their plantations. They are built in the same manner as those at O-Taheitee, which will be particularly described when we speak of that island, but they are much meaner, and are only covered with the leaves of the bread-fruit tree; in general they are built on a square, or oblong pavement of stone, raised some height above the level of the ground; they likewise have such pavement near their houses, on which they sit to eat and amuse themselves^a. Along the uppermost edge of the mountain a row of stakes, or pallisades closely connected together, were seen like a fortification, in which, by the help of glasses, appeared something like huts, which seemed to bear a great resemblance to the hippas of New-Zeeland, which will be described in speaking of that country. Their canoes resemble those of O-Taheitee, but not large; their heads had commonly some flat upright piece, on which the human figure was coarsely carved; and their sails were made of mats, triangular in shape, and very broad at the top: the paddles which they used were of heavy, hard wood, short, but sharp pointed, and with a knob at the upper end; they were from sixteen to twenty feet long, and about fifteen inches broad^b.

Their weapons were all made of the club-wood, or casuarina, and were either plain spears about eight or ten feet long, or clubs which commonly had a long knob at one end. They have also slings with which they throw stones with

^a Forster II. 19.^a Cook I. 310.^b Forster II. 29. Cook I. 311.

great velocity, and to a great distance, but not with a good aim^c.

The language of these people is much nearer that of O-Tahitee, than any other dialect in the South-Sea, except that they could not pronounce the letter *r*.

The only quadrupeds seen here were hogs, except rats; here were fowls, and several small birds in the woods, whose notes were very melodious. The chief difference between the inhabitants of the Marquesas and those of the Society-Islands, seems to consist in their different degrees of cleanliness; the former do not bathe two or three times a day, nor wash their hands and face before and after every meal, as the latter do; and they are besides very slovenly in the manner of preparing their meals. Their diet is chiefly vegetable, though they have hogs and fowls, and catch abundance of fish at certain times. Their drink is pure water, coconuts being scarce here.

It was not long before the propensity of the natives was discovered to be, rather to receive than give; for when they had taken a nail as the price of a bread-fruit, the article so purchased could not be obtained from them. To remove this dishonest disposition, captain Cook ordered a musket to be fired over their heads, which terrified them into fair dealing^d.

Soon after the natives had gained courage enough to venture on board the ship, one of them unfortunately stole an iron stanchion from the gang-way, with which he sprang into the sea, and, notwithstanding its weight, swam with it

^c Forster II. 17. Cook I. 311.

^d Forster II. 11.

to his canoe, and was making to the shore with all speed. A musket was fired over his head to frighten him back, but to no effect, he still continued to make off with his booty; the whistling of another ball over his head was as ineffectual; an officer, less patient of such an injury than reason and humanity should have taught him to be, levelled a musket at the poor fellow, and shot him through the head. Captain Cook had given orders to fire *over* the canoe, but not to kill any one; he was in a boat, and came up with the canoe soon after; there were two men in her, one sat bailing out the blood and water in a kind of hysterical laugh; the other, a youth of about fourteen or fifteen years of age, who afterwards proved to be the son of the deceased, fixed his eyes on the dead body with a serious and dejected countenance^e. This act of severity, however, did not estrange the islanders to the ship, and a traffic was carried on to the satisfaction of both parties; bread-fruit, bananas, plantains, and some hogs, were given in exchange for small nails, knives, and pieces of Amsterdam cloth; red feathers of the Amsterdam-Island were greatly esteemed here. Captain Cook, accompanied with the gentlemen of the ship, in their walks about the country lit on the house which had been the habitation of the man who had been shot; there they found his son, who fled at their approach^f; they enquired for his female relations, and were told that they remained at the top of the mountain, to weep and mourn for the dead^g. Notwithstanding they were then among the relations of a man who had been killed by them, not the least tokens of animosity, or revenge, were discernible among the natives.

^e Cook I. 300.

^f Cook I. 301.

^g Forster II. 22.

The weather being extremely hot, the inhabitants made use of large fans to cool themselves, of which great numbers were purchased; these fans were formed of a kind of tough bark, or grass, very firmly and curiously plaited, and frequently whitened with shell-lime. Some had large feathered leaves of a kind of a palm, which answered the purpose of an umbrella^h.

The natives at length became so familiar as to mount the sides of the ship in great numbers. They frequently danced upon deck for the diversion of the sailors: their dances very much resembled those of O-Taheitec; their music too was very much the same.

A sailor having been inattentive to his duty, received several blows from captain Cook; on seeing which the natives exclaimed, *tape-a hai-te tina*, "he beats his brother." From other instances that had occurred, it was clear that they knew the difference between the commander and his people, but at the same time they conceived them all brethren; and, says Mr. Forster, "to me the most natural inference is, that they only applied an idea to us in this case, which really existed with regard to themselves; they probably look on themselves as one family, of which the eldest born is the chief, or kingⁱ."

S E C T. II.

Of the Low Islands lying between Latitude 14 deg. and 2 min. South; and Longitude 138 deg. and 150 min. West; and two others more to the Southward.

A String of Low Islands, connected together with a reef of coral rocks, lay scattered in this spot. The sea is, in general, every where on their outside unfathom-

^h Forster II. 23.

ⁱ Vol. II. page 31.

able; their interior parts are covered with water abounding with fish, on which the inhabitants subsist, and a commerce is carried on with the High Islands, in which the turtles caught here is given for their cloth^k.

ISLANDS OF DISAPPOINTMENT. These were first discovered by Commodore Byron in 1765, and so named from the shores affording no anchorage for his ships, on which account he was obliged to quit them, without landing or procuring any refreshments for his crew, who were then languishing with sickness; they are a cluster of small islands, and lay in latitude 14 deg. 10 min. south; longitude 141 deg. 6 min. west, from London. They are inhabited by Indians, who appeared on the beach with spears in their hands that were at least sixteen feet long. They every where discovered hostile intentions, and seemed by signs to threaten the people in the boat with death, if they came on shore. There are cocoa-trees in great abundance, and the shore abounds with turtle^l.

KING GEORGE'S ISLANDS. These are two islands lying in latitude 14 deg. 28 min. south; longitude 144 deg. 56 min. west. They were first discovered by commodore Byron in 1765; on their landing they saw many houses or wigwams of the natives, which were entirely deserted, except by the dogs who kept an incessant howling all the time they continued on shore. They were low mean hovels thatched with cocoa-nut branches, but most delightfully situated in a fine grove of stately trees, many of which were cocoa-nut, and several of a species quite unknown. From the cocoa-nut-tree the natives seem to draw almost all the necessaries of life, for it supplies them with food, sails,

^k Cook L. 315.

^l Hawkesw. I. 101.

cordage, timber, and water casks. Indeed the cocoa-palm is the principal support of many nations on the globe, and almost every part of it is essentially useful. The nuts which it bears, whilst they are green, contain from a pint to a quart of limpid liquor, which has a very pleasant sweetness, joined to a peculiarly agreeable flavour: its coolness and integral particles make it a most delicious draught, powerful beyond comparison in quenching thirst in a hot climate. When the nut grows older the kernel forms, which is at first like a rich cream, and afterwards grows firm and very oily like an almond, being extremely nutritious. The oil is frequently expressed, and employed to anoint the hair, and the whole body. The hard shell furnishes cups; and the fibrous coating round it affords variety of cordage, which is strong, elastic, and durable. Several articles of Indian household furniture, and several sorts of ornaments, are also constructed of this substance. The long-feathered leaves, or branches, which spread from the top of the stem, are fit coverings for their houses, and when plaited, make good baskets for provisions. The inner bark yields a kind of cloth, sufficient for covering the body in a hot climate; and the stem itself, when grown too old to bear, is at last fit to be used in the construction of a hut, or may make the mast of a canoe^m. The shore was covered with coral, and the shells of very large pearl-oysters. All that could be perceived of the inhabitants was, that the women wore a piece of cloth hanging from the waist down to the knee, and the men were naked. Close by their houses were buildings of a different kind, which commodore Byron supposes to be burying places; and his conjecture is confirmed by what has since been seen at other islands, which will be hereafter related. They were situated under lofty trees that gave a thick

^m Forster II. 45.

shade: the sides and top were of stone, and in their figure they sometimes resembled the square tombs with a flat top, which are in our country church-yards. Near these buildings were found many neat boxes full of human bones; and upon the branches of the trees which shaded them, hung a great number of the heads and bones of turtle, and a variety of fish enclosed in a kind of basket-work of reeds; on examining which, nothing appeared to remain but the skin and the teeth;—the bones and entrails seemed to have been extracted, and the muscular flesh dried awayⁿ.

Captain Cook sailed between these two islands in April 1774; they lie nearly east and west; the island to the eastward is called by the natives *Tiookea*, it is something of an oval shape, and about ten leagues in circuit^o. The inhabitants of this island, and probably of all the low ones, are of a much darker colour than those of the higher islands, and of a hostile disposition. Their origin is doubtless one and the same, but being dependent on the sea for a subsistence, and from their way of life exposed to the sun and weather, their colour is darker, and their bodies become more hardy and robust. The rude figure of a fish is punctured or marked on their bodies^p. A lieutenant, with two boats well armed, were sent on shore; the two Mr. Forsters were of the party; they landed without any opposition from the natives. As soon as the gentlemen landed, the islanders embraced them by touching noses, a mode of civility used in New Zealand, which is nine hundred leagues distance, and the only place besides this, where the custom has been observed to prevail! Notwithstanding a rencounter with some of commodore Byron's people nine years before, when they landed in their boats, which proved

ⁿ Hawkesw. I. 122.

^o Cook I. 313.

^p Cook I. 314.

fatal

fatal to some of the natives, had made them disinclined to the visits of such formidable strangers. The Mr. Forsters found here various plants, and particularly a scurvy-grass; the natives shewed them that they bruised this plant, mixed it with shell fish, and threw it into the sea; whenever they perceived a shoal of fish; this preparation intoxicates them for some time, and thus they are caught on the surface of the water without any other trouble than that of taking them out. The name which this plant bears among the natives is *enow*.

The soil is extremely scanty, the foundation consists of coral, very little elevated above the surface of the water.

The officer distributed presents to such as were about him, which they received with great indifference; he therefore stayed on shore but a short time, being desirous to avoid any affray, and as he perceived the Indians collecting into a large body. These crowded about the boats as the people were stepping into them, and seemed in doubt, whether they should detain them or let them go; but as their strength was not then all collected, they appeared contented with their departure, and assisted them in pushing off the boats. Some of the most turbulent, however, threw stones into the water, which fell very near them; and all seemed to glory in having, as it were, driven them off. When this adventure was related to captain Cook, he ordered four or five cannon shot to be fired into the sea close by the shore and over the heads of the Indians, as they were seated along the beach, to shew them how entirely they were at the mercy of their visitors. Although so little cordiality was shown at this interview, the party brought off to the ship five dogs;

of which the island seemed to be plentifully supplied; these they purchased with small nails, and some ripe bananas, which latter had been brought from the Marquesas. The dogs had fine long hair, and were of a white colour.

The other island is two leagues to the westward of Tiookea, four leagues long from north-east and south-west, and from five to three miles broad.

PALLISER ISLANDS. These are four in number; they were discovered by captain Cook, in the Resolution, April 1774; they lie 15 deg. 26 min. south; 14 deg. 20 min. west; the largest is seven miles long, and not above two broad. The greatest distance of one from the other is not above six leagues. People, huts, canoes, places erected for drying fish, were seen here; the natives were armed with long spikes. These islands are probably the same that Roggewein touched at in 1722, and named the Pernicious Islands, from his losing one of his ships in this dangerous navigation; a quarter-master and four seamen were left on shore here; having mutinied after the loss of the ship, they concealed themselves in the woods. Twenty-five leagues to the west of these islands, Roggewein discovered six others, which he called *the Labyrinth*, on one side of which, named *Recreation*, the writer of that voyage relates, that a number of the natives being collected on the shore, to gaze at so wonderful a phenomenon as the ships, without any provocation given on their part, a continual firing was made on them from the ships, the reason for doing which the writer says, was "to scour the beach, and facilitate a descent;" he then goes on, exultingly saying, "that expedient succeeded to our wishes, and we got on shore without

* Cook I. 313. Forster II. 40.

* Cook I. 316.

meeting

meeting with any resistance from the islanders, who being frightened at the fire of our musketry; had retired¹". However, the natives, in some measure, revenged the cruelties committed on themselves; and the other South-Sea islanders, by killing several of the crew that came on shore, and wounding many others with stones.

Neque enim lex ulla æquior est, quam necis artifex opè perire sua:

But this distributive justice was not executed without the loss of their chief, and many others. Their women, on the landing of some of the crew for water and refreshments, received them with great kindness; , admired their white complexions, examined and handled them from head to foot, and bestowed on them a thousand caresses; but, says the historian, "they were traitoresses, and only cajoled us to lull us into security, that they might deceive us more certainly; for as soon as the people from the ships had filled their sacks with herbs, they advanced further inland, and climbing up the steep rocks which enclosed a deep valley, they were soon beset by some thousands of the natives²," these bravely attacked their insolent foes with stones, and made many of them pay the forfeit of their lives for their cruelty: a just retaliation for the hostile manner in which they invaded countries to which they had no right, and massacred people who had done them no injury: This is, however, the only instance to be met with in any former, or more modern account whatever, wherein the natives of the South-Sea islands laid a deliberate plan of revenge for injuries received, concealed under the disguise of simulated friendship.

¹ Dalrymple, II. 100.

² Dalrymple, II: 103.

DOG-ISLAND, 15 deg. 12 min. south, discovered by Le Mair and Schouten, April 1616, who gave it that name from having seen three Spanish dogs on the island v.

QUEEN CHARLOTTE'S ISLAND, 19 deg. 18 min. south; 138 deg. 4 min. west; first discovered by captain Wallis, in the Dolphin, in 1767, who took possession of it in the name of king George the Third. Here is good water, and plenty of cocoa-nuts, palm-nuts, and scurvy-grafs. The inhabitants are described to be of a middle stature, and dark complexion, with long hair hanging loose over their shoulders; the men well made, and the women handsome; their cloathing is a kind of coarse cloth, or matting, which they fasten about their middle w.

LAGOON-ISLAND, 18 deg. 47 min. south; 139 deg. 28 min. west, is of an oval form, with a lake in the middle, which occupies much the greatest part of it. The whole island is covered with trees of different verdure. It is inhabited by a race of Indians, tall, of a copper colour, with long black hair. Their weapons are poles, or spikes, which reach twice as high as themselves. Their habitations were seen under some clumps of palm-trees, which formed very beautiful groves. This island was discovered by captain Cook, April 1769*.

THUMB-CAP lies about seven leagues north-west of Lagoon-Island; it is a low, woody island, of a circular form, and not much above a mile in compass. There was no appearance of inhabitants; the land was covered with verdure of many hues.

v Dabrymple, II. 123 w Hawkesw. I. 230. * Hawkesw. II.

BOW-ISLAND, had this name given it by captain Cook in 1769, on account of its singular figure, being shaped exactly like a bow; the arch and curve of which is land, and the space between them water. The curve is a flat beach, without any signs of vegetation, having nothing upon it but heaps of sea-weed. It appeared to be about three or four leagues long, and narrow. The horns, or extremities of the bow, were two large tufts of coca-nut trees, and much the greater part of the arch was covered with trees of different height, figure, and hue. This island appeared to be inhabited, from the smoak that was seen in different parts; longitude 141 deg. 12 min. west; latitude 18 deg. 23 min. south^r.

THE GROUPS lay twenty-five leagues west, half north, from Bow-Island, in 18 deg. 12 min. south; 142 deg. 42 min. west. These islands are long, narrow strips of land, ranging in all directions; some of them ten miles, or upwards, in length, but none more than a quarter of a mile broad. Trees of various kinds, particularly the cocoa-nut, abound here. They are inhabited by a people who appear to be well made, of a brown complexion; most of them carried in their hands a slender pole, about fourteen feet long, pointed like a spear; they had likewise something shaped like a paddle, about four feet long. Their canoes were of different sizes, some so small as to carry no more than three men; others had six or seven, and some of their boats hoisted a sail^r.

BIRD-ISLAND is supposed to be about four miles in circumference; it is low, with a piece of water in the middle; no inhabitants appeared. Captain Cook gave it its name

y Hawkesw. II.

z Hawkes. II.

D 2

from

Bow-

36 NEW DISCOVERIES, &c.

from the great number of birds that were seen upon it ; 17 deg. 48 min. south ; 143 deg. 35 min. west.

CHAIN-ISLAND seemed about five leagues long, in the direction of north-west and south-east, and about five miles broad. It appeared to be a double range of woodey islands, joined together by reefs, so as to compose one island in the form of an elipsis, or oval, with a lake in the middle. The trees are large, and from the smoak that issued from the woods it appeared to be inhabited ; 17 deg. 23 min. south ; 145 deg. 54 min. west ; distant forty-five leagues from Bird-Island, west by north. Captain Wallis also saw five other islands, which he named WHIT-SUNDAY, EGMONT, GLOUCESTER, CUMBERLAND, and PRINCE WILLIAM HENRY ; and in August 1773, captain Cook fell in with five others, which he named RESOLUTION, DOUBTFUL, FURNEAUX, ADVENTURE, and CHANE. Some of the most westwardly of these scattered islands were seen by M. de Bougainville, and called *Les quatre Facardins*, and *Isle des Lanciers*. That navigator, very properly, calls this cluster of low, overflowed islands, *The dangerous Archipelago*. More to the south-eastward lie

OSNABURGH-ISLAND, called by the natives *Maitoa* ; it was first discovered by captain Wallis in 1767. It is a high, round island, not above a league in circuit ; in some parts covered with trees, in others a naked rock ; 22 deg. 48 min. south ; 141 deg. 34 min. west ; forty-four leagues distant from Chain-Island, west by south ^a.

And PITCAIRN-ISLAND, discovered by captain Carteret in 1767, who lays it down in 25 deg. 2 min. south ; 133 deg. 21 min. west. Captain Cook was very near this island in August 1773, but could not fall in with it ^b.

^a Hawkesw. I. 280.

^b Hawkesw. I. Cook I. 141.

the
iles
ds,
the
The
the
th ;
ird-
her
NT,
AM
with
UL,
the
. de
des
after
fore

; it
igh,
parts
min.
stant

teret
133
land

PERSONS and DRESSES of the INHABITANTS



Samuel delin.

A. A. A. A Man, Woman, & Child, of Easter-Island.
 B. Woman of New Zealand.
 C. A New Zealand Warrior.
 D. Native of New Caledonia.
 E. Woman of New Holland.
 F. Woman of O-Tahitee.
 G. Another Woman of O-Tahitee, with a Bonnet
 of Leaves to shade the Sun.

H. Men of O-Tahitee.
 I. Man of Mallicollo.
 K. K. Man and Woman of S^t Christina, in the
 Marquesas
 L. A Priest of the Society Islands.
 M. Dancing Girl at Ulivata.
 N. A Musician playing on a Lute from his Nose.
 O. The Drum of Ulivata.

N. The
 at C
 O. A Te
 ma
 Sec
 P. A G
 Q. A H
 R. A G

London Published Jan^y 26th 1778, by J.

of the INHABITANTS of the SOUTHERN ISLANDS.



Page 504.

N. The very singular habit of mourning worn at O-Tahetee.

O. A Tipapiew or Bier, with a Corpse, being the manner of depositing the dead at the Society Islands.

P. A Canoe of the Friendly Islands.

Q. A Hippiak, or fortified Village of New Zealand.

R. A Canoe of O-Tahetee.

S. A Branch of the Bread fruit Tree, with the Fruit.

T. The Kangaroo, an Animal peculiar to New Holland

U. The manner of constructing the Houses at O-Tahetee.

X. A Species of the Fig Tree found at New Caledonia

Y. A Floating Ice Island, numbers of which were seen towards the Southern Frigid Zone.



Several desks.

- A. A Man, Woman, & Child, of Easter Island.
- B. Woman of New Zealand.
- C. A New Zealand Warrior.
- D. Native of New Caledonia.
- E. Woman of New Holland.
- F. Woman of O-Tahitee.
- G. Another Woman of O-Tahitee, with a Bonnet of Leaves to shade the Sun.

- H. Men of
- I. Man of
- K. K. Ma
- Mary
- L. A Priest
- M. Dance
- M. A Mu
- M. The D

C H A P. IV.

Of O-TAHEITEE; called by Captain Wallis, KING
GEORGE THE THIRD'S ISLAND.

S E C T. I.

*Its Situation, Extent, Climate, Soil, Mountains, and Face of
the Country.*

THIS island consists of two distinct kingdoms, which are united by a narrow neck of land, the largest of which is called by the natives *Tiarrabou* or *O-Tabeitee-nue*, the smaller one *Opoureonu* or *O-Tabeitee-Ete*. The circumference of both islands is about forty-leagues; the larger kingdom is divided into forty-three districts, and lies in latitude 17° deg. 46 min. south; and longitude 149 deg. 13 min. west, from Greenwich^c. The country has a delightful romantic appearance, it is level towards the sea, and is covered with fruit trees of various kinds, particularly the cocoa-nut. Among these are the houses of the inhabitants. At the distance of about three miles from the shore, the country rises into lofty hills that are covered with wood, and terminates in peaks, from which large rivers are precipitated into the sea. The island is skirted with a reef of rocks^d. The aspect of this coast, elevated like an amphitheatre, presents to the view the most captivating prospect. Notwithstanding the great height of the mountains, none of the rocks have the appearance of barrenness; every part

^c Hawkesworth II. 79. Cook I. 350. Forster I. 253. ^d Hawkesworth II. 80.

is covered with woods. "We hardly believed our eyes," says M. de Bougainville, "when we saw a peak covered with trees up to its highest summit, which rises above the level of the mountains in the interior parts of the southern quarter of the island. Its apparent size seemed to be more than thirty toises in diameter, and grew less in breadth as it rose higher. At a distance it might have been taken for a pyramid of immense height, which the hand of an able sculptor had adorned with garlands and foliage". The soil every where is a rich fat earth, of a blackish colour. The bread-fruit and apple-trees are planted in rows on the declivity of the hills, and the cocoa-nut and plaintain, which require more moisture on the level ground. Under the trees, both on the sides and at the foot of the hills, is plenty of grass but no underwood. One of the mates of the Dolphin, with a party of marines and seamen, penetrated into the internal parts of the island, and having ascended with great difficulty a mountain, which they supposed to be a mile high, they discovered mountains before them so much higher, that with respect to them they appeared to be in a valley; towards the sea the view was enchanting, the sides of the hills were beautifully clothed with wood; villages were every where interspersed, and the vallies between them afforded a still richer prospect; the houses stood thicker, and the verdure was more luxuriant; and Mr. Forster, with other gentlemen, ascended to the summit of one of the highest mountains in the island, from whence they had a prospect of the island of Huahine, which lies forty leagues to the westward, and some other islands, from whence a judgment may be formed of its height; the view of the fertile plain below them, and of the river, making innumerable meanders, was delightful in the highest degree. The ve-

getation on the upper part of the mountains was luxuriant, and the woods consisted of many unknown sorts of trees and plants^f. The stones every where on this island, appear to have been burnt, not one could any where be found, that did not give manifest signs of fire, which gives reason for supposing, that this and the neighbouring islands are either shattered remains of a continent, which some have supposed to be necessary in this part of the globe, to preserve an equilibrium of its parts, and which were left behind, when the rest sunk by the mining of a subterraneous fire, so as to give a passage to the sea over it; or were torn from rocks, which from the creation of the world have been the bed of the sea, and thrown up in heaps to a height which the waters never reach. What is further extraordinary is, that the water does not gradually grow shallow as the shore is approached, and the islands are almost every where surrounded by reefs, which appear to be rude and broken in the manner, that some violent concussion would naturally leave the solid substance of the earth^g. And Mr. Forster saw a rock with projecting longitudinal angles of black compact basalt: "as it is now generally supposed," says he, "that basalt is a production of volcanoes; another strong proof hereby presents itself, that O-Taheitee has undergone great changes by such subterraneous fires, where nature produces the most wonderful chymical operations upon a very extensive plan^h." The exterior ranges of hills are sometimes entirely barren, and contain a great quantity of yellowish clay, mixed with iron ochre, but others are covered with mould and wood like the higher mountains. Pieces of quartz are sometimes met with here, but no indications of precious minerals or metals of any kind were

^f Cook I. 327. Forster II. 82, 83.

^g Hawkefworth II. 82.

^h Forster II. 87.

found, iron excepted, and of that the lava, which was picked up discovered but small remains: possibly the mountains may contain iron ore rich enough for fusion^l. Though this island lays within the tropic of Capricorn, yet it is one of the most healthy, as well as delightful spots in the world; the heat is not troublesome, and the air is so pure, that fresh meat will keep very well for two days, and fish one day. The winds do not blow constantly from the east, but generally a gentle breeze from east to south-south-east. The tide rises very little, and being governed by the winds, is very uncertain^k. "The climate," says M. de Bougainville, "is so healthy, that notwithstanding the hard labour of the ships companies whilst on shore, though the men were continually in the water, and exposed to the meridian sun; though they slept upon the bare soil, and in the open air, none of them fell sick; those who were afflicted with the scurvy, and were sent on shore, regained their strength, although they were obliged to assist in the erecting of a fort, and had scarce one uninterrupted night, yet they were so far recovered in the short space of time they continued there, that some of them were afterwards perfectly cured on board^l. These extraordinary advantages make this agreeable spot very deservedly called, The Queen of Tropical Islands^m.

S E C T. II.

Of the Trees, Plants, Insects, Reptiles, Birds, Beasts, and Fishes of O-Tahcitee.

THE earth here produces spontaneously, or with the slightest culture imaginable, a great variety of the most excellent fruits, such as bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, ba-

^l Forster I. 253, 254.
ville, English Translation, 248.

^k Hawkesworth, I. 250.
^m Forster II. 50.

Bougainville,
nanas

nanas of thirteen sorts, plantains, potatoes, yams, a fruit known here by the name of *jambu*, and reckoned most delicious; sugar-canes, which the inhabitants eat raw; ginger, turmeric; a root of the salop kind, called by the natives *pea*; a plant called *etbee*, of which the root only is eaten; a fruit that grows in a pod like that of a large kidney bean, by the natives called *abee*; a tree called *wharra*, which produces fruit something like the pine-apple; this is known in the East-Indies by the name of *pandanes*; a shrub called *nomo*; the *morinda*, which also produces fruit; a species of fern; a plant called *theve*; here is also the Chinese paper mulberry-tree, of the bark of which they make their cloth, with a great variety of plants. The trunk of the bread-fruit tree, which furnishes food to the whole island, is six feet in the girth, and about twenty feet to the branches. Here is an herb which the inhabitants eat raw; its flavour somewhat resembles that of the West-India spinach, called *calleloor*, but its leaf is very different. Here was seen a species of the fig, the branches of which bending down take fresh root in the earth, and thus form a congeries of trunks, which being very close to each other, and all joined by a common vegetation, seem as one trunk, and measure not less than six yards in circumference. A plant which the natives call *ava* *ava*, or *eava*^o, from the root of which they express a liquor, which, if drank to excess, intoxicates like wine or distilled spirits^p. Here are a sort of shady trees covered with a dark green foliage, bearing golden apples, which resemble the anana, or pine-apple, in juiciness and flavour^q. One of the most beautiful trees in the world received here the name of *Barringtonia*; it had a great abundance of flowers larger than lilies, and perfectly white, excepting the tips of their

^o Hawkesworth II. 122.

^p Parkinson, 37.

^q Cook I. 187.

^r Forster I. 270.

numerous chives, which were of a bright crimson. Such a quantity of these flowers were seen dropped off, that the ground underneath the tree was entirely strewed with them. The natives called the tree *buddos*, and said that the fruit, which is a large nut, when bruised and mixed up with some shell-fish, and strewed in the sea, intoxicates or poisons the fish for some time, so that they come to the surface of the water, and suffer themselves to be taken with the hands: it is singular that various maritime plants in tropical climates have the same quality. The practice at Tiookea has been already described; and a plant called *tubbe*, which grows on the island of Sooloo, inebriates fish in the like manner; it is a small bush; Mr. Dalrymple describes it to be done by thrusting the plant under the coral-rocks, or hollows, where the fish haunt; the effect is most sensible in still water, though it is effectual in the open sea; for the same gentleman says, he has seen fish soon after float on the surface of the water half dead, and some totally without life; and where the effect is less, the fish will be seen under the water to have lost their poize, without being brought up to the surface. Fish so caught are not in the least noxious or ill-tasted. The flies were found to be excessively troublesome when the Endeavour first arrived here in 1769, but musketto nets and fly-flaps, in some measure, removed the inconvenience. Sydney Parkinson, in his journal says, that notwithstanding these flies are so great a nuisance, the natives, from a religious principle, will not kill them. But there is a strange disagreement in the accounts of different voyagers, respecting these troublesome insects; for M. de Bougainville says, "this island is not infested by those myriads of troublesome insects that are the plague of other

^r Page 37.
worth II. 120.

^s Historical Account of Voyages I. 17.
^u Page 16.

^t Hawkes-

tropical countries v." And Mr. Forster says, "not a gnat or musquetto hummed unpleasantly about us, or made us apprehensive of its bite w." This inconvenience must therefore be supposed to be felt at certain seasons of the year, and in certain districts of the country, more sensible than at other times, and in other places. No frogs, toads, scorpions, centipedes, or any kind of serpent has been found here; and the only troublesome insect was the ant, of which there are but few x. Here are domestic poultry, or cocks and hens, exactly like those in Europe; besides which there are wild-ducks; also beautiful green turtle-doves, large pigeons of a deep blue plumage, and excellent taste; a very small sort of parrokeets, very singular on account of the various mixture of blue and red in their feathers y; also another sort of a greenish colour, with a few red spots; the latter were frequently seen tame in the houses of the natives, who valued them for their red feathers. Here is a king-fisher of a dark green, with a collar of the same hue round his white throat; a large cuckoo and a blue heron. Small birds of various kinds dwell in the shade of the bread-fruit and other trees, which have a very agreeable note, contrary to the commonly received notion, that birds in warm climates are not remarkable for their song z. There are no quadrupeds on the island but hogs and dogs, except rats; these latter the natives are said to have a scrupulous regard to, and will by no means kill a. But captain Cook, in 1773, turned about fourteen cats on this island, which are likely to reduce the number of these favoured vermin. They have great variety of excellent fish; to catch which is their principal labour, and to eat is their principal luxury. By the account of

v English Translation, p. 248.

w Vol. I. p. 293.

x Hawkes-

worth II. 82.

y Bougainy, 234.

z Forster I. 272.

a Par-

kinson 21.

44 NEW DISCOVERIES, &c.

Aitourou, a native, who embarked with M. de Bougainville, there are sea-snakes on the shore of O-Taheitee, whose bite is mortal.

S E C T. III.

Of the Persons, Dresses, Houses, Food, and intoxicating Liguor of the Tabeitians ; a peculiar Custom of the Sexes eating apart ; Cleanliness ; of their Staining or Tattowing their Bodies ; some few Instances of an extraordinary lufus naturæ ; the Diseases incident to these Islanders, and their Skill in Surgery.

THE inhabitants are a stout, well-made, active, and comely people. The stature of the men, in general, is from five feet seven to five feet ten inches ; the tallest man seen by captain Wallis measured six feet three inches and an half ; and captain Cook, in his second voyage, describes O-Too, the king of O-Taheitee, to be of that height. " In order to paint an Hercules, or a Mars," says M. de Bougainville, " one could no where find such beautiful models ^b." They are of a pale brown complexion ; in general their hair is black, and finely frizzled ; they have black eyes, flat noses, large mouths, and fine white teeth ; the men wear their beards in many fashions, all of them plucking out a great part, and have prominent bellies. Most of them smell strong of the cocoa-nut oil ^c. The women, in general, are much smaller, especially those of the lower rank, or *caiwaw*, which is attributed to their early and promiscuous intercourse with the men, whilst the better sort, who do not gratify their passions in the same unbridled manner, are above the middle stature of Europeans. Their skin is most delicately smooth and soft ; they have no colour in their

^b Page 249.

^c Parkinson 14.

checks ;

cheeks; their nose is generally somewhat flat, but their eyes are full of expression, and their teeth beautifully even and white. "The women," says M. de Bougainville, "have features not less agreeable than the generality of Europeans, and a symmetry of body and beautiful proportion of limbs which might vie with any of them^d. The complexion of the men is tawny; but those that go upon the water are much more red, than those that live on shore. Some have their hair brown, red, or flaxen, in which they are exceptions to all the natives of Asia, Africa, and America, who have their hair black universally; here, in the children of both sexes, it is generally flaxen.^e The strongest expression is painted in the countenances of these people; their walk is graceful, and all their motions are performed with great vigour and ease, "I never beheld stouter men," says Sydney Parkinson^f. The men of consequence on the island, wear the nails of their fingers long, which they consider as a very honourable badge of distinction, since only such people as have no occasion to work can suffer them to grow to that length; this custom they have in common with the Chinese^g, but the nail of the middle finger on the right hand, is always kept short, the meaning for which peculiarity could not be learned^h; only one single cripple was met with among them, and he appeared to have been maimed by a fallⁱ. The women always cut their hair short round their heads. Both sexes have a custom of staining their bodies, which they call tattowing; both men and women have the hinder part of their thighs and loins marked very thick with black lines in various forms; these marks are made by striking the teeth of an instrument somewhat like a comb just through the skin, and rubbing into the

^d Page 218.
^e For I. 232.

^c Hawkeſworth I. 260.
^h Bougainville 250.

^f Page 14.
ⁱ Ibid.

^g For-

punctures a kind of paste made of soot and oil, which leaves an indelible stain. The boys and girls under twelve years of age are not marked; a few of the men, whose legs were marked in chequers by the same method, appeared to be persons of superior rank and authority^k. In this practice they resemble the Indians of North America; and when Cæsar first landed in Britain, he found this custom prevail there; *Omnes vero se Britanni vitro inficiunt, quod cæruleum efficit colorem*^l; and the ancient Picts, long after the Romans had abandoned the island, retained the custom, on account of which they had received their name. Mr. Banks saw the operation of tattowing performed upon the backside of a girl about thirteen years old. The instrument used upon this occasion had thirty teeth, and every stroke, of which at least a hundred were made in a minute, drew an ichor or serum a little tinged with blood. The girl bore it with most stoical resolution for about a quarter of an hour; but the pain of so many hundred punctures as she had received in that time, then became intolerable. She first complained in murmurs, then wept, and at last burst into loud lamentations, earnestly imploring the operator to desist. He was, however, inexorable, and when she began to struggle, she was held down by two women, who sometimes soothed, and sometimes chid her, and now and then when she was most unruly, gave her a smart blow. Mr. Banks staid in a neighbouring house an hour, and the operation was not over when he went away; yet it was performed but upon one side, the other having been done some time before; and the arches upon the loins, in which they most pride themselves, and which give more pain than all the rest, were still to be done.^m Both men and women are not only decently but gracefully clothed, in a kind of white cloth that is made

^k Hawkesworth I. 300.

^l Cæsar de Bell. Gall. lib. v. sect. 14.

^m Hawkesworth II. 191.

of the bark of a shrub, and very much resembles coarse China paper. Their dress consists of two pieces of this cloth, one of them, having a hole made in the middle to put the head through, hangs down from the shoulders to the mid-leg before and behind; another piece, which is between four and five yards long, and about one yard broad, they wrap round the body in a very easy manner; this cloth is not woven, but is made like paper, of the macerated fibres of the inner bark spread out and beaten together; their ornaments are, feathers, flowers, pieces of shells, and pearls; the pearls are worn chiefly by the women. In wet weather they wear matting of different kinds, as their cloth will not bear wetting. The dress of the better sort of women, consists of three or four pieces; one piece about two yards wide, and eleven long, they wrap several times round their waist, so as to hang down like a petticoat, as low as the middle of the leg, and this they call *parou*. This simple drapery affords the sex an opportunity of displaying an elegant figure to the greatest advantage, according to the talents and taste of the wearer; no general fashions force them to disfigure instead of adorning themselves, but an innate gracefulness is the companion of simplicity. To this cloth they give a very strong perfume.

The chief use which they make of their houses is to sleep in them; for unless it rains they eat in the open air under the shade of a tree: these houses are no other sheds, although built in the wood between the sea and the mountains; they are erected on an oblong square; their width is nearly half of their length; they are nothing more than a roof, not quite four feet from the ground, raised on three rows of pillars, one row on each side, and one in the middle. The

■ Hawkesworth I. 200. □ Hawkesworth II. 130. ○ Forster I. 328.

roof resembles our thatched houses in England, and consists of two flat sides inclining to each other. Their thatch consists of palm-leaves. The floor of their dwelling is covered with hay, over which they spread mats. Some of these erections are furnished with a stool, which is appropriated solely to the use of the master of the family; they consist of no other furniture except a few blocks of wood, which being square, one side is hollowed into a curve, and these they use as pillows, and with their apparel they cover themselves. In these open dwellings the whole family repose themselves at night. The size of the house is proportioned to the number that constitutes the family. The established order in these dormitories is, for the master and his wife to sleep in the middle; round them the married people; in the next circle the unmarried women; and in the next, at some distance, the unmarried men; and the servants at the extremity of the shed; but in fair weather the latter sleep in the open air^p. Some few dwellings, however, constructed for greater privacy, are entirely enclosed with walls of reeds, connected together with transverse pieces of wood, so as to appear somewhat like large bird-cages closely lined; in these houses there is commonly a hole left for the entrance, which can be closed up with a board^q.

Their candles are made of the kernels of a kind of oily nut, which they stick one over another on a skewer that is thrust through the middle of them; the upper one being lighted burns to the second, at the same time consuming that part of the skewer that goes through it; the second taking fire burns in the same manner down to the third, and so to the last; they burn a considerable time, and afford a pretty good light. The natives generally retire to rest about an

^p Hawkesworth II. 194.

^q Forster I. 271.

hour after it is dark*. The food of the common people entirely consists of vegetables, whilst the gentry devour great quantities of the flesh of hogs, dogs, or fowls at a meal, for they are voracious eaters. Here is the bread-fruit, with bananas, plantains, yams, apples, and a sour fruit, which, though not pleasant by itself, gives an agreeable relish to roasted bread-fruit, with which it is frequently beaten up. So little is labour required in this happy climate, that the bread-fruit, which is the principal support of this people, requires no other attention after the tree is planted, than climbing it to gather its produce; and, says doctor Hawkesworth, "if a man plants ten of these trees, which he may do in an hour, it is a sufficient supply of this article for his whole life, as well as a portion to his posterity; and he will as completely fulfil his duty to his own and future generations, as the native of our less propitious climate can do, by ploughing in the cold of winter, and reaping in the summer; and when this fruit is not in season, cocoa-nuts, bananas, and plantains, supply the deficiency; or they substitute in its stead a kind of paste made of cocoa-nuts, bananas, or plantains, which they gather before the fruit is perfectly ripe, and lay it in heaps, covering it closely with leaves, it then ferments; after which the core being extracted, the fruit is put into a hole dug in the earth, which is lined with grass; this also is covered with leaves, and pressed down with a weight of stones. This occasions a second fermentation, when the fruit becomes sour; it is then baked and eaten at every meal, though to all but the natives it tastes very disagreeably. It will keep two months before it is baked, and a month or two afterwards. The preparation of this paste is the employment of elderly women chiefly, and sometimes the whole batch will fail without any apparent cause, by changing during fermenta-

* Hawkesworth II. 193.

* Hawkesworth II. 186.

* Vol. II. p. 186.

tion. Whilst therefore this business is performing, the dame who conducts the operation is superstitiously attentive to prevent any body touching, whatever, in the most trivial manner, contributes to the process: and it happened that Mr. Banks, by taking up one of the leaves that lay on the heap, in the opinion of the sagacious housewife, had spoiled the whole mass of fruit ^u. The paste so made is called *mabié*. Bread-fruit itself is converted into three different dishes, by putting to it either water, or the milk of the cocoa-nut; then beating it to a paste with a stone pestle, and afterwards mixing it with ripe plantains, bananas, or the four paste above described. The flesh which is reserved for the tables of the great, is either poultry, hogs, or dogs; the flesh of their fowls is not well tasted, but that of dogs is esteemed by the natives beyond pork. The smaller fish are generally eaten raw, as we eat oysters; every thing that can be procured from the sea is made an article of their food; for they will eat not only sea insects, but what the seamen call blubbers, though some of them are so tough that they are obliged to suffer them to become putrid before they can be chewed. A very large shark being caught by the Dolphin's people was given to the natives, who soon cut it to pieces, and carried it away with great satisfaction ^v.

They kill the animals they intend for food by suffocating them, which is done by stopping the mouth and nose with their hands; they then singe off the hair, by holding the animal over a fire, and scraping him with a shell; with the same instrument they cut him up, take out the entrails, which are washed, and put into cocoa-nut shells, together with the blood. Dogs are eaten that are fed wholly upon bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, yams, and other vegetables, and are never suffered to taste any animal food; and those who have tasted the flesh of a dog thus fed, have declared it to be

^u Hawkesw. II. 198.

^v Hawkesw. I. 280.

little inferior to English lamb. In order to dress their food they kindle a fire, by rubbing the end of one piece of dry wood upon the side of another, in the same manner as a carpenter with us whets a chissel. They then dig a pit about half a foot deep, and two or three yards in circumference; they pave the bottom with large pebble stones, which they lay down very smooth and even, and then kindle a fire in it with dry wood, leaves, and the husks of coconuts. When the stones are sufficiently heated they take out the embers, and rake up the ashes on every side; they then cover the stones with a layer of green cocoa-nut leaves, and wrap up the animal that is to be dressed in the leaves of the plantain. If it is a small hog they wrap it up whole; if a large one they split it. When it is placed in the pit, they cover it with the hot embers, and lay upon them bread-fruit and yams, which are also wrapped up in the leaves of the plantain. Over these they spread the remainder of the embers, mixing among them some of the hot stones, with more cocoa-nut-tree leaves upon them, and then close up all with earth, so that the heat is kept in; the oven is kept thus closed a longer or a shorter time, according to the size of the meat that is dressing. The meat, when taken out, is said to be better dressed than any other way. They use shells for knives, and carve very dexterously with them, always cutting from themselves. One of the principal attendants on *Oberoa*, whom captain Wallis described as the queen of the island, appeared more disposed than the rest to imitate the European manner of eating; the officers, therefore, distinguished him by the name of Jonathan. This man Mr. Furneaux, who was second lieutenant on that voyage, cloathed completely in an English

dress, which sat very easy upon him: he very soon attempted the use of the knife and fork at his meals; but at first, when he stuck some meat upon his fork, and tried to feed himself with that implement, he could not guide it; but by the mere force of habit his hand came to his mouth, and the victuals at the end of his fork went away to his ear^x.

They are quite unacquainted with the method of boiling water, as they have no vessels among them that will bear the fire. Whilst the noble Oberea was one morning at breakfast with captain Wallis on board the Dolphin, the surgeon filled the tea-pot by turning the cock of an urn that stood upon the table. One of this lady's attendants observed this practice very attentively, and soon after turning the cock himself, received the water upon his hand; he no sooner felt himself scalded, than he roared and danced about in an extravagant manner; the other Indians, unapprized of the cause of these emotions, stood gazing at him in amazement, and not without some mixture of terror; but the gentlemen in company, who soon perceived the cause of the outcry, dispelled the apprehensions of their visitants, and some ointment being applied to the scald, good-humour and confidence were again restored. The gunner of the ship, who was appointed comptroller of the market which was established on shore with the natives, used to dine on the spot; the astonishment of these people was very great to see him dress his pork and poultry in a pot; at length an old man, who was extremely serviceable in bringing down provisions to be exchanged, was put into possession of an iron pot, and from that time he and his friends ate boiled meat every day. See

* Hawkesw, I. 220.

veral iron pots were likewise given to Obeera, and some of the chiefs, which were in constant use, and drew every body to see them^y; but although the particulars of two successive voyages of captain Cook to this island are circumstantially related, we hear no more of this improvement in the culinary art, or of the further assistance which has been rendered these people in supplying them with pots for boiling; but however desirous the natives might be to eat boiled meat, it was not advisable to have such an article of barter as iron kettles, when a few spike nails, or a common hatchet, would procure one of their largest hogs.

Salt water is the usual sauce to their food; those who live near the sea have it furnished as it is wanted, others at a distance keep it in large bamboos. The kernels of the cocoa-nuts furnish them with another sauce, which made into a paste something of the consistence of butter, are beaten up with salt water, which has a very strong flavour; but though at first it seemed very nauseous, yet when the taste became familiar, it was much relished^z.

Their general drink is water, or the milk of the cocoa-nut; they shewed in general an aversion to strong liquors, and whenever any one of them happened to drink so freely with any of the ship's company, as to be intoxicated, he resolutely refused to taste any thing that was likely to produce the same effect again; but they have a plant which they call *ava ava*, from the root of which they procure a liquor, which has an inebriating quality; their manner of preparing this strong drink, is as simple as it is disgusting to an European. Several of the people take some of the

^y Hawkefw. I. 215.

^z Hawkefw. II. 202.

root and chew it till it is soft and pulpy; they then spit it out into a platter or other vessel, every one into the same, into this general receptacle water is poured according to the quantity prepared. The juice thus diluted, is strained through some fibrous stuff like fine shavings, after which it is fit for drinking, and it is always prepared for present use; it has a pepperish taste, drinks flat and rather insipid, and though it intoxicates, yet captain Cook saw but one instance where it had that effect, as the natives generally drink it with great moderation, and but a little at a time. Sometimes they chew this root as Europeans do tobacco, and sometimes they will eat it wholly ^a.

They eat alone, or at least only in company with a guest that happens to call in; and the men and women never sit down together to a meal; the shade of a spreading tree serves them for a parlour; broad leaves spread in great abundance serve for a table-cloth; and if a person of rank, he is attended by a number of servants who seat themselves round him; before he begins his meal, he washes his mouth and hands very clean, and repeats this several times whilst he is eating. If his meal consists of fruit only, with his fingers and nails he peels off the rind of the bread fruit. Whilst he is eating, he frequently drinks a small quantity of salt water, either out of a cocoa-nut shell, which is placed by him, and is filled with salt water, or in the palm of his hand; his apples he never eats before they are pared, to do which a small shell, of a kind which is to be picked up every where, is tossed to him by one of his attendants. If he eats of fish, it is dressed and wrapped up in leaves; this he breaks into a cocoa-nut of salt water, and feeds himself by taking up a piece with the fingers of one hand, and

^a Cook, I. 187.

bringing with it as much of the salt water, as he can retain in the hollow of his palm: a young cocoa-nut being stripped of its outer rind, by an attendant who makes use of his teeth very dexterously for this purpose, supplies him with its milk, which he sucks out of a hole made in the nut by his finger, or with a stone. Should he dine on flesh, a piece of bamboo is tossed to him to serve as a knife; having split it transversely with his nail, it becomes fit for use, and with this he divides the flesh. In eating he crams a great quantity into his mouth, and finishes his repast by sipping a quantity of bread fruit pounded, and mixed with water, till it is brought to the consistency of an unbaked custard. He then washes his mouth and hands; at the same time the attendants cleanse the cocoa-nut shells that have been used, and place every thing that is left in a kind of basket. The quantity of food which these people eat at a meal is prodigious; captain Cook says, he has seen one man devour two or three fishes as big as a peach; three bread fruits, each bigger than two fists; fourteen or fifteen plantains, or bananas, each six or seven inches long, and four or five round, and near a quart of the pounded bread fruit^b. Men of rank are constantly fed by their women, and one of the chiefs who dined on board the ships in 1769, shewed such a reluctance to feed himself, that one of the servants was obliged to feed him to prevent his returning without his meal. In one of the excursions which the gentlemen of the ships made into the country in 1773, they arrived at a neat house, where a very fat man, who seemed to be a chief of the district, was lolling on his wooden pillow; before him two servants were preparing his desert, by beating up with water some bread fruit and bananas in a large wooden bowl, and mixing with it a quantity of fomented sour paste called

^b Hawkesw. II. 206.

mahic. While this was doing, a woman who sat down near him, crammed down his throat by handfuls, the remains of a large baked fish, and several bread fruits, which he swallowed with a voracious appetite; his countenance was the picture of phlegmatic insensibility, and seemed to testify, that all his thoughts centred in the gratification of his appetite. He scarce deigned to look at the strangers, and a few monosyllables which he uttered, were extorted from him to remind his feeders of their duty, when by gazing at them they grew less attentive to him. From which instance, of uncivilized gluttony, Mr. Forster draws the following judicious remark: "We had flattered ourselves," says he, "with the pleasing fancy of having found at last one little spot of the world, where a whole nation, without being lawless barbarians, aimed at a certain frugal equality in their way of living, and whose hours of enjoyment were justly proportioned to those of labour and rest; our disappointment therefore was very great, when we saw a luxurious individual, spending his life in the most sluggish inactivity, and without one benefit to society, like the privileged drones of more civilized spots, fattening on the superfluous produce of the soil, of which he robs the labouring multitude."

That these people, who are remarkably fond of society, and particularly that of their women, should exclude its pleasures from the table, where, among all other nations, whether civil or savage, they have been principally enjoyed, is truly inexplicable. How a meal, which every where else brings families and friends together, comes to separate them here, was a singularity much enquired about, but never accounted for. "They ate alone, they said, because it was

right," but why it was right to eat alone, they never attempted to explain. Such, however, was the force of habit in this instance, as it is in every other, that they expressed the strongest dislike, and even disgust, at their visitants eating in society, especially with women, and of the same victuals. "At first, says captain Cook, we though this strange singularity arose from some superstitious opinion; but they constantly affirmed the contrary. We observed also some caprices in the custom, for which we could a little account as for the custom itself. We could never prevail with any of the women to partake of the victuals at our table, when we were dining in company; yet they would go five or six together into the servants apartments, and there eat very heartily of whatever they could find: nor were they in the least disconcerted if we came in while they were doing it. When any of us have been alone with a woman, she has sometimes eaten in our company; but then she has expressed the greatest unwillingness that it should be known, and always extorted the strongest promises of secrecy. Among themselves, even two brothers and two sisters have each their separate baskets of provisions, and the apparatus of their meal. When they first visited us at our tents, each brought his basket with him; and when we sat down to table, they would go out, sit down upon the ground, at two or three yards distance from each other, and turning their faces different ways, take their repast without exchanging a single word. The women not only abstain from eating with the men, and of the same victuals, but even have their victuals separately prepared by boys kept for that purpose, who deposit it in a separate shed, and attend them with it at their meals. But though they would not eat with us, or with each other, they have often asked us to eat with them, when we have visited those with whom

we were particularly acquainted at their houses; and we have often upon such occasions eaten out of the same basket, and drank out of the same cup. The elder women, however, always appeared offended at this liberty; and if we happened to touch their victuals, or even the basket that contained it, would throw it away^d."

After meals, and in the heat of the day, the middle aged people of the better sort generally sleep. They are indeed extremely indolent, and sleeping and eating are almost all that they do. Those that are older are less drowsy, and the boys and girls, are kept awake by the natural activity and sprightliness of their age.

Here were found five or six men of a very singular appearance, their skins of a dead white, like the nose of a white horse, scurfy, and covered with a kind of down, without the least appearance of what is called complexion; the hair on their head, eye-brows, and beard, as white as their skin, with eyes somewhat like those of a ferret, and having a very short-sighted vision. These may be justly considered as *lusus naturæ*, being of no particular race of mankind, nor do they appear to propagate their like^e.

These islanders, who inhabit huts exposed to all the winds, and hardly cover the earth, which serves them for a bed, with a layer of leaves, are remarkably healthy and vigorous, live to old age without enduring any of its infirmities; their senses are acute, and they retain their beautiful teeth to the last^f. M. de Bougainville describes an old man, whom they saw on their landing, who

^d Hawkefworth II. 203, 204. ^e Bougainville 248. Forster II. 85.

^f Hawkefworth II. 161.

had no other character of old age, than that respectable one which is imprinted on a fine figure. His head was adorned with white hair, and a long white beard; all his body was nervous and fleshy; he had neither wrinkles, nor shewed any other tokens of decrepitude. This venerable man seemed displeas'd at the arrival of these strangers; he even retired without making any returns to the courtesies they paid to him, but he gave no signs either of fear, astonishment, or curiosity: very far from taking any part in the raptures which the multitude expressed, his thoughtful and suspicious air seem'd to indicate, that he feared the arrival of a new race of men would interrupt the happiness he had so long enjoy'd. From whence it may be infer'd, that his mind was not a whit more impaired than his body. There are, however, several sorts of leprous complaints on this island, which appear in cutaneous eruptions of the scaly kind; some were seen that had ulcers upon different parts of their bodies; yet they seem'd little regarded by those who were afflicted with them, and no application whatever was us'd to them, not so much as to keep off the flies; but instances of them are rare, as the excellency of their climate, and the simplicity of their vegetable food, prevent almost all dangerous and deadly disorders; they are sometimes afflicted with the cholic, and coughs are not unknown among them; and the chiefs, who fare more sumptuously, as a punishment for their voluptuousness, are sometimes attack'd with a disorder similar to the gout, in which the legs are swelled and excessively painful^h. M. de Bougainville's surgeon assur'd him, that he had seen many with marks of the small-poxⁱ.

^g Bougainville, 220.
Cook I. 340.

^h Forster I. 371. Forster II. 81, 102.

ⁱ Bougainville 2, 59.

The usual method used here to restore the sick to health, is by pronouncing a set form of words, after which the exorcist applies the leaves of the cocoa-tree plaited, to the fingers and toes of the sick; so that nature is left to conflict with the disease, without being assisted with any salutary application of art^k. But though they seem utterly destitute of medical knowledge, they appear to be no inconsiderable proficient in surgery, which they had an opportunity of proving while the Dolphin lay here: one of the seamen, when on shore, ran a large splinter into his foot, and the surgeon not being at hand, one of his comrades endeavoured to take it out with a pen-knife; but after putting the poor fellow to a great deal of pain, he was obliged to give it over: an old native, who had been very active and successful in establishing a good understanding between the ship's company and his countrymen happening to be present, called a man from the other side of the river, who having examined the lacerated foot, fetched a shell from the beach, which he broke to a point with his teeth; with which instrument he laid open the wound, and extracted the splinter; whilst this operation was performing, the old man went a little way into the wood, and returned with some gum, which he applied to the wound upon a piece of the cloth that was wrapped round him, and in two days time it was perfectly healed. This gum was produced by the apple-tree; the surgeon of the ship procured some of it, and used it as a vulnerary balsam with great success^l. Captain Cook, in 1769, saw many of the natives with dreadful scars; one man, whose face was almost entirely destroyed; his nose, including bone, was perfectly flat, and one cheek and one eye were so beaten in, that the hollow would almost receive a man's fist, yet no ulcer remained; and *Tupia*, who accom-

^k Hawkesworth II. 231.

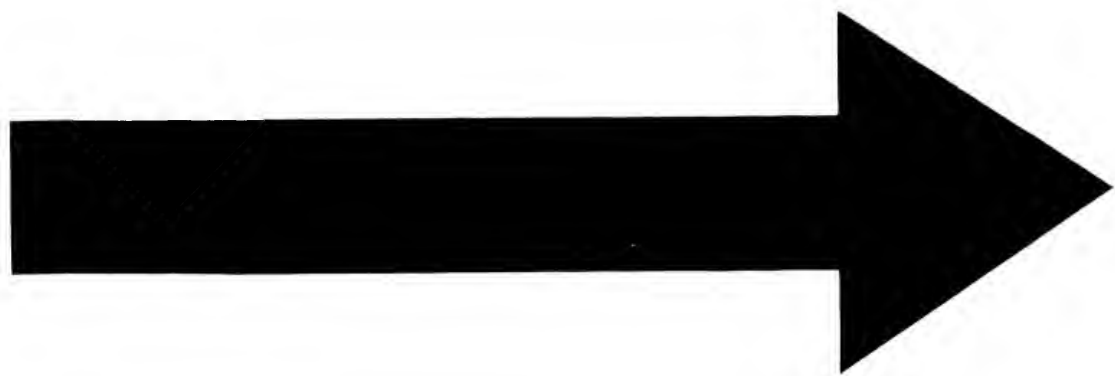
^l Hawkesworth I. 130.

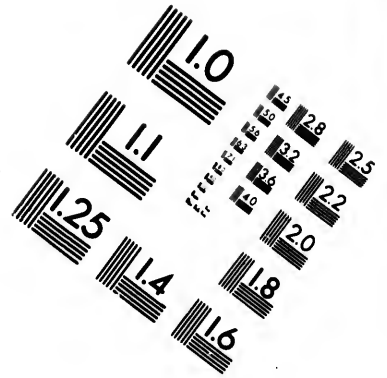
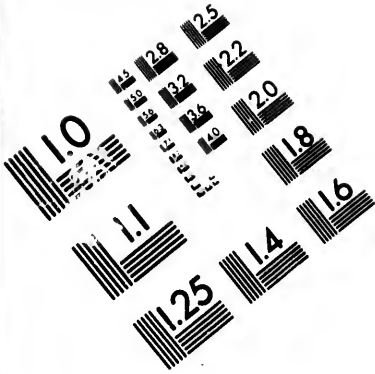
panied them in the ship, and of whom more will be said hereafter, had been pierced through his body with a spear, headed with the bone of a string-ray; the weapon had entered his back, and come out just under his breast^m.

The venereal disease is said to have been entailed upon these people by the crew of M. de Bougainville's ships, who visited this island a short time after captain Wallis had left it. In 1769, more than one-half of the crew in captain Cook's ship had contracted it, during a three months stay here. The natives distinguished it by a name of the same import with rottenness, but of a more extensive signification. They described, in the most pathetic terms, the sufferings which the first victims to its rage endured, and told him that it caused the hair and the nails to fall off, and the flesh to rot from the bones; that it spread an universal terror and consternation among the inhabitants, so that the sick were abandoned by their nearest relations, lest the calamity should spread by contagion, and were left to perish alone in such misery as till then had never been known among them; but there seems to be some reason to hope that they had found out a specific cure for it, as none were seen on whom it had made a great progress; and one who went from the ship infected, returned, after a short time, in perfect healthⁿ. Both captain Cook and Mr. Forster, in their relations of their voyage in the Resolution, endeavour to establish the opinion, that this scourge of licentiousness was felt in the South-Sea islands, previous to any of the modern voyages that have been made thither, and that it was an indigenous disease there; but if that conclusion is well founded, how comes it that at all the places where the Resolution touched in 1773, which had been before visited by the Endeavour in

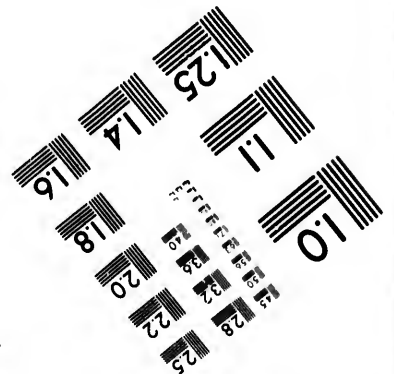
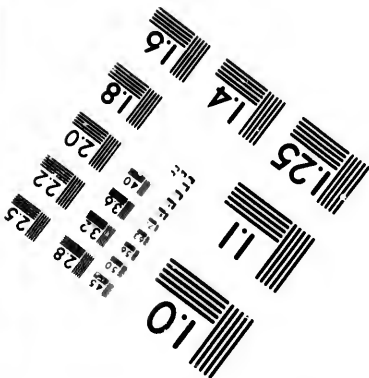
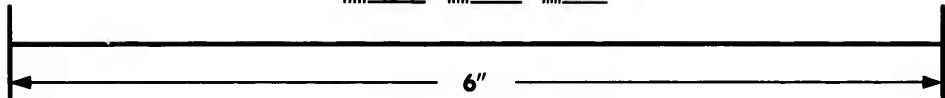
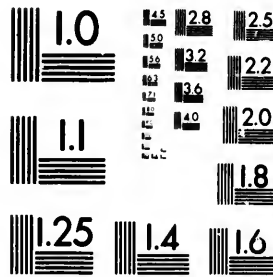
^m Hawkesworth II. 232.

ⁿ Hawkesworth II. 233.





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14590
(716) 872-4303



1769, such as New Zealand for instance, the crew, more or less, became infected by their commerce with the women, and not at all so at places which they visited, for the first time, in the Resolution? If an European ship (be it M. de Bougainville's only, or the Dolphin in some measure contributing, that) did communicate this baneful disease to a healthy race of people, and this not to one island only, but spreading it among several, it is a consequence incidentally arising from European curiosity, and thirst after knowledge, which cannot be too much regretted; and will entail a misery upon these Indians, so dreadful, that all the attempts to enrich them with new species of vegetables and animals cannot in any degree compensate for, even if such endeavours had proved as effectual as they were well-intended.

S E C T IV.

Of the Manufacture of the Tahitian Cloth and Matting; their Dies and Perfumes; their Weapons of War, and other Implements; Ignorance of the Use of Iron, and ingenious Substitute for it in their Tools; their Canoes, both for Fishing, and War.

THE principal manufacture among these people is their cloth, which is made of the bark of trees, and is of three kinds; the Chinese paper mulberry-tree, or *aouta*; the bread-fruit tree, or *ooroo*; and one that is described by doctor Hawkesworth, as resembling the wild fig-tree of the West-Indies. These are all made use of for this purpose; but of all these the paper mulberry affords the best; what is made from that being both finer, softer, whiter, and better suited to take a colour; the *ooroo* produces cloth much inferior in contexture; and the last is very coarse, and in colour

colour resembles the darkeſt brown paper. But this laſt is the only kind that will withſtand the water. This ſhrub all the inhabitants cultivate round their houſes; when it is two years old it is cut down, and a new one ſprings up from its roots, this tree being one of the moſt prolific in nature; and if ſuffered to grow till it flowered, and could bear fruit, might perhaps totally overrun the country; the bark is always taken from young trees, and theſe are carefully drawn into long ſtems, without any branches, except at the top. When they have ſtripped off a ſufficient quantity of the bark from the trees, it is laid in a ſtream to moiſten; having lain there ſome time, the women ſervants are employed to ſeparate the inner part from the outſide, for which purpoſe they go naked into the water; when nothing but the fine fibres of the inner coat remain after it is thus prepared, it is ſpread out on plantain-leaves; a ſquare piece of hard wood, fluted on its four ſides by furrows of different ſizes, is made uſe of in beating the bark on a ſmooth board; they ſprinkle ſome water on it during the operation, and thus they at laſt form a very equal and fine cloth, of the nature of paper, but much more pliable, and leſs apt to be torn, to which they give a great breadth and length, theſe pieces being ſometimes two or three yards wide, and fifty yards long. In this proceſs they uſe a kind of glutinous water, which the manufacturers keep by them in a cocoa-nut ſhell, to make the pieces of bark cohere together. The whole proceſs of making cloth is performed by women, who are dreſſed in old and dirty rags of their cloth, and have very hard and callous hands°. They likewiſe prepare a red dye, which is made by mixing the yellow juice of a ſmall ſpecies of fig, which the natives call *mattee*, with the greeniſh juice of a ſort of fern, or bind-weed; or of ſeveral other plants which produce a

° Hawkeſworth II. 212. 214. Bougainville 267. Forſter I. 177.

bright crimson, and this the women rub with their hands if the whole piece is to be uniformly of the same colour; or they make use of a bamboo reed, if it is to be marked, or sprinkled into different patterns. This colour fades very soon, and becomes of a dirty red, besides being liable to be spoiled by rain, or other accidents; the cloth, however, which is died, or rather stained with it, is highly valued by the O-Tahitians, and only worn by their principal people^p.

Mr. Forster enquired particularly for the perfume-wood, with which the natives perfume their cloaths and oils; and *Taboa*, a friendly native, shewed them several plants which are sometimes used as substitutes, but the most precious sort he either could not, or would not, point out; and from the account of O-Maj it should seem, that there are no less than fourteen different plants employed for perfume, which shews how remarkably fond these people are of fine smells^q.

Matting is another manufacture that finds them considerable employment, and of this they produce some finer and better than any in Europe. In this kind of work they are extremely dexterous. Rushes, grass, the bark of trees, and the leaves of a plant which they call *wharrau*, are the materials they work up for this purpose. The uses to which they apply their matting are various: on some, which is a coarser kind, they sleep in the night, and sit on in the day; the finer sort they convert to garments in rainy weather, their cloth being soon penetrated by the wet.

They are very dexterous in making basket and wicker-work; their baskets are of a thousand different patterns,

^p Sidney Parkinson, 18. Forster, I. 354. ^q Forster, II. 83

many of them exceedingly neat; and the making them is an art that every one practises, both men and women. They make occasional baskets, and panniers of the cocoa-nut leaf, in a few minutes; and the women who visited the gentlemen who were on shore, early in a morning, used to send as soon as the sun was high, for a few of the leaves, of which they made little bonnets to shade their faces; at so small an expence of time and trouble, that when the sun was again low in the evening, they used to throw them away. These bonnets, however, did not cover the head, but consisted only of a band that went round it, and a shade that projected from the forehead^r.

The want of hemp is supplied by the bark of a tree, of which they make ropes and lines, and thereby provide themselves with fishing-nets; the fibres of the cocoa-nut furnish them with thread, with which they fasten the different parts of their canoes, and for other purposes. The bark of a nettle which grows in the mountains, and is called *erawa*, supplies them with admirable fishing-lines, capable of holding any kind of fish; and their hooks are made of mother-of-pearl, to which they fix a tuft of hair, made to resemble the tail of a fish. Instead of making them bearded, the point is made to turn inwards. They make also a kind of seine, of a coarse broad grass, the blades of which are like flags. These they twist and tie together in a loose manner, till the net, which is about as wide as a large sack, is from sixty to eighty fathom long. This they haul in shoal, smooth water, and its own weight keeps it so close to the ground, that scarcely a single fish can escape^r.

^r Hawkesw. II. 217.

^r Hawkesw. II. 218.

They make harpoons of cane, and point them with hard wood, with which they can strike fish more effectually than a European can with one headed with iron. But they have no method of securing a fish when they have only pierced it with their harpoon, and not killed it, for their instrument is not fastened to a line.

Pieces of coral are made use of as files to form mother-of-pearl, or other hard shells, into the shape required.

The only tools they use for all their purposes are, an adze, made of stone; a chissel, or gouge, of bone; generally the bone of a man's arm between the wrist and elbow; a rasp of coral; and a skin of a sting-ray; also coral sand as a file, or polisher; with these they fell timber, cleave and polish it, build canoes, and hue stone. The stone which makes the blade of their adzes is a kind of basaltés, of a blackish or grey colour; not very hard, but of considerable toughness: they are formed of different sizes; some that are intended for felling, weigh from six to eight pounds; others that are used for carving, not more than as many ounces; but it is necessary to sharpen both almost every minute, for which purpose a stone and a cocoa-nut shell full of water are always at hand. Their greatest exploit, to which these tools are less equal than any other, is felling a tree. This requires many hands, and the constant labour of several days. When it is down they split it, with the grain, into planks, from three to four inches thick, the whole length and breadth of the tree, many of which are eight feet in the girth, and forty to the branches, and nearly of the same thickness throughout. The tree generally used is in their language called *avie*; the stem of which is tall and straight, though some of the smaller boats are made of the bread-fruit tree, which is a light, spongy wood, and easily wrought. They smooth the plank very

very expeditiously and dexterously with their adzes, and can take off a thin coat from a whole plank, without missing a stroke. As they have not the art of warping a plank, every part of the canoe, whether hollow or flat, is shaped by hand. Their weapons are slings, which they use with great dexterity; pikes, headed with the stings of sting-rays, and clubs, of about six or seven feet long, made of a very hard, heavy wood. Thus armed, they are said to fight with great obstinacy, and give no quarter to man, woman, or child, who is so unfortunate as to fall into their hands during the battle, or for some hours afterwards, till their passion, which is always violent, though not lasting, has subsided^u. They have likewise bows and arrows, but the arrows are fit for nothing but to bring down a bird, being headed only with a stone, and none of them pointed^v. They have targets of a semicircular form, made of wicker-work, and plaited strings of the cocoa-nut fibres, covered with glossy bluish-green feathers of a kind of pigeon, and ornamented with many shark's teeth displayed in three co-centric semicircles^w. Their boats, or canoes, are of three different sorts; some are made out of a single tree, and carry from two to six men; such are employed principally in fishing. Some are constructed of planks very dexterously sewed together. These are of different sizes, and will carry from ten to forty men; they generally lash two of these together, and set up two masts between them; if they are single, they have an outrigger on one side, and only one mast in the middle. In these vessels they sail far beyond the sight of land. The third sort seems to be principally for pleasure or show; they are very large, but have no sail, and in shape resemble the

^t Hawkesw. II. 226.

^u Ib. 244.

^v Ib. I. 170.

^w Forster, I. 283.

gondalos of Venice. The middle is covered with a large awning, and some of the people sit upon it, and some under it. The plank of which these vessels are constructed is made by splitting a tree, with the grain, into as many thin pieces as possible. They fell a tree with a kind of hatchet, or adze, made of a tough greenish kind of stone, very dexterously fitted into a handle; it is then cut into such lengths as are required for the plank, one end of which is heated till it begins to crack, and then with wedges of hard wood they split it down; some of these planks are two feet broad, and from fifteen to twenty feet long; the sides are smoothed with adzes of the same materials and construction, but of a smaller size. As their tools presently lose their edge, every man that works has by him a cocoa-nut shell filled with water, and a flat stone, with which he sharpens his adze almost every minute. These boards are generally brought to the thickness of an inch, and are afterwards fitted to the boat with the same exactness that would be expected from an expert joiner. To fasten these planks together holes are bored with a piece of bone, that is fixed into a stick for that purpose. Through these holes a kind of plaited cordage is passed, so as to hold the planks strongly together. The nails which they receive in exchange for provisions from our people, were afterwards used with great advantage, instead of the bone with which they before joined their planks. The seams are caulked with dry rushes, and the whole outside of the vessel is painted with a gummy juice, which supplies the place of pitch. When captain Cook paid this island the last visit, in May 1774, he saw a naval armament prepared which surprized him very much, as it far exceeded every idea he had formed of the power of this small island. It was intended to reduce the neighbouring little island of

Eimeo, which had been attacked about five or six years before, but the forces from *O-Tabeitee* were then repulsed. The captain was desirous of staying to see this formidable fleet sail on its expedition, but the admiral seemed determined to wait the departure of his guests before he sat off, though at first the leaders had solicited his assistance to enable them to reduce their enemies; and though the captain had refused taking any part in their quarrel, he had assured *O-Too*, the king, that if they got their fleet ready in time, he would sail with them down to *Eimeo*, after which he heard no more of it. They probably had taken the matter into consideration, and concluded themselves safer alone. The captain took a view of some of the dock-yards, (for such, says he, they well deserve to be called), and large canoes; some lately built, and others building, two of which were the largest he had ever seen in that sea, or any where else under that name. The quantity of iron tools which had been procured by the natives, had so much accelerated the labour of these people, that when the *Resolution* last visited this island, after having been eight months absent, employed in making researches towards the South-Pole, the number of houses that had been erected, and canoes built in that short space of time, appeared to the gentlemen of the ship incredible. A plain proof of the industry, as well as ingenuity of the commonalty of this island. The power and consequence of *O-Tabeitee* never appeared to such advantage as when the fleet of war canoes was assembled. No less than one hundred and fifty-nine great double canoes were seen, each of which was from fifty to ninety feet long, between stem and stern; besides these, seventy smaller ones were seen without the ranks, most of which were likewise

* Cook, I. 348.

y Ib. 335.

z Ib. 346.

a Captain Cook

say one hundred and seventy, Vol. I. 321.

double, with a roof at the stern, intended for the reception of the chiefs at night, and as victuallers to the fleet; a few of them were seen, on which banana-leaves were very conspicuous; these the natives said were to receive the killed, and they called them *e-vaa-no-l' Eatua*, "the canoes of the Divinity." The vast number of people assembled together was still more surprizing than the splendor of such a fleet; upon a moderate computation there could not be less than fifteen hundred warriors, and four thousand paddlers, besides those in the provision-boats. By conversing with Potatow, a chief, with whom the captain had always been intimate, they learnt, that this formidable fleet was only the naval force of a single district; and that all the other districts could furnish their quota of vessels, in proportion to their size^b. The chief, and all those on the fighting stages, were dressed in their war-habits; that is, a vast quantity of cloth, turbans, breast-plates, and helmets; some of the latter of which were of such a length, as greatly to encumber the wearer. Indeed, their whole dress appeared to be better calculated for show than use, and but badly suited to the day of battle. The vessels were decorated with flags, streamers, &c. so that the whole made a grand and noble appearance. Their instruments of war were clubs, spears, and stones; the vessels were ranged close along-side of each other, with their heads ashore, and their stern to the sea, the admiral's vessel being nearly in the centre^c. About three weeks afterwards, in the district of *Titaba*, which is the smallest in the north-west peninsula of O-Taheitee, forty-four more war canoes were seen; the king ordered the warriors to go through some of their military evolutions before his guests; two parties first began with clubs, but this mode of attack was soon laid aside, and they fell to single combat, exhibiting the various

^b Forster, II. 60, 65, 66.

^c Cook, I. 321.

methods of fighting with great agility, parrying off the blows and pushes, which each combatant aimed at the other, with great address. Their arms were clubs and spears, the latter they also use as darts;

S E C T. V.

Of the Temper and Disposition of the O-Tahaitians; their Propensity to Theft; Readiness to forgive Injuries; Great Sensibility, and Friendliness. Of their Women; Profigacy of the lower Class; Account of a Society established among those of Rank, called ARREOY; their Diversions. A Sketch of their general Character.

ALL the passions of these people are violent, but transitory; extreme sorrow and joy frequently succeed each other, in a manner equally quick, and without any apparent cause; though from their effeminate voluptuousness one would suppose them entirely averse to the enduring of pain; yet the women inflict the most violent acts of cruelty upon themselves in expressing their grief, particularly on the death of a relation, which will be particularly described in its proper place. The manner of singling out a man here for a chosen friend, is by taking off a part of their cloathing, and putting it upon him. Their behaviour to all the English was constantly good-natured and friendly; and *Tuabetu*, a chief, who had made the circuit of the island with captain Cook, Mr. Banks, and doctor Solander, in 1769, became familiarized with the gentlemen who visited this island in 1773; eagerly entered into discourse with them, enquired after *Tabane*, (Mr. Banks); *Tolano*, (doctor Solander); *Tupaya*, (Tupia); and several persons in the En-

^d Forster, II. 203. Cook, I. 343.

deavour, whose names he recollected. He rejoiced to hear that Mr. Banks and doctor Solander were well; and having often renewed his question, always received the same answer to it; upon which he asked whether they would not come back to O-Tahitee, accompanying his question with a look which strongly expressed the wish of seeing them again. Whenever a kind look from a native was returned by a smile, they thought that a proper opportunity to convert to their advantage, and immediately in a begging tone would say, *tayo pa*, "friend, a bead;" whether their request was complied with or refused, did not alter their good temper; when the petitions became too frequent, the gentlemen used to mock them by repeating their words in the same tone, which always produced a general peal of good-humoured laughter among them. Their conversation was generally loud, and it seemed that the strangers were their principal topic; every new comer was immediately made acquainted by the others, with the names of the party, which they reduced to a few vowels, or soft consonants, and were entertained with a relation of what they had said or done that morning. Their first request generally was to hear a musket fired off, which they always complied with, on condition the natives would point out a bird for a mark; but whenever they pointed one out at four or five hundred yards distance, that no imputations might light on their supposed invincible prowess, (for the natives had no idea that the effect of fire-arms was limited to a certain space) they always pretended that they could not see the bird, till they came near enough to shoot it. The first explosion frightened them exceedingly, and on some produced such a violent consternation, that they dropped down on the ground, or retreated a considerable way backwards, and there continued till their fears were quieted by

professions of friendship, or till their more undaunted companions had picked up the bird that had been killed. But they soon became more familiar; and though they always expressed some sudden emotion, yet they conquered by degrees the appearance of fear. When the Resolution touched here last, in April 1774, a great alteration in the behaviour of the natives was observed; no importunate begging for beads, or nails, was practiced; and instead of being backward to part with their stores, they appeared eager to outdo each other in acts of benevolence and hospitality. At every hut the parties who walked into the country were invited to come in and partake of some refreshment; and as often as these pressing invitations were accepted, their unaffected urbanity heightened every act of hospitality.

Their usual manner of expressing their respect to strangers, or to their superiors at a first meeting, is by uncovering themselves to their middle. They have a custom of saluting those who sneeze, by saying, *evarooia-t-eatoua*, "may the good eatoua awaken you," or "may not the evil eatoua lull you asleep."

Their propensity to theft was very great, insomuch that the lively French historian says, "even in Europe itself one cannot see more expert filchers than the people of this country." When some of the natives first went on board the Dolphin, they watched every opportunity to steal some of the things that happened to lay in the way; a midshipman who had a new-laced hat on, was talking by signs to one of them, when another came behind him, and suddenly snatching off the hat, leaped into the sea, and swam away with it.

^f Forster, I. 286, 287.

^g Forster, II. 86.

^h Bougainv. 256.

ⁱ Bougainv. 228.

At length their thefts were so notorious, that captain Wallis would no longer permit them to come on board; but when they had seen and felt the terrible destruction produced by a gun, they were always disposed to bring back whatever they had purloined, by only levelling the piece at them. A fellow had the dexterity and address to cross the river unperceived, and steal a hatchet. The gunner, who presided on shore, as soon as he missed it, signified to an old man who was appointed a kind of commissary of trade on the part of the Indians, by signs, what had happened, and got his party ready, as if he would have gone into the woods after the thief: the old man, however, gave him to understand, that he would save him the trouble; and setting off immediately, returned, in a very short time, with the hatchet. The gunner then insisted that the offender should be delivered up, which was at length yielded to, though reluctantly. When the delinquent was brought down he was known to be an old offender, and therefore sent prisoner on board; the captain, who only meant to punish him by the dread of punishment, having terrified him sufficiently, gave him his liberty, and sent him on shore. The natives expressed the greatness of their joy at his returning safe, by loud and general acclamations, and carried off the acquitted petit larcener triumphantly into the woods. The next day the poor fellow, overcome by this act of lenity, returned with a quantity of bread-fruit, and a roasted hog, of which he made a thank-offering to the gunner^k.

On captain Cook's first arrival at this island in 1769, whilst the gentlemen were paying a visit to one of the chiefs, doctor Solander, and Mr. Monkhouse, the surgeon, found that their pockets had been picked; one had lost an opera-

^k Hawkeſw. I. 170.

glafs in a fhagreen cafe, the other a fuff-box. Complaint of the injury was made to the chief, and to give it weight, Mr. Banks started up, and haftily ftruck the but-end of his firelock againft the ground, which fpread a general panic among the natives, who all ran precipitately out of the houfe, except the chief and two or three others. Confufion and concern were vifibly blended in the countenance of the chief, who took Mr. Banks by the hand, and led him to a large quantity of cloth, which he offered him piece by piece, intimating that he fhould have any part of it, or the whole, in compenfation for the wrong which had been done; but being given to underftand that reftitution muft be made of the thing ftolen, and that the injury could be no otherwife cancelled, the chief went out, and in about half an hour returned with the fuff-box, and the cafe of the glafs; his countenance then had become animated with the ftrongeft expreffions of joy; but when, on opening the cafe, it was found to be empty, as violent an expreffion of concern inftantly fucceeded; but at length this mifunderftanding was adjusted by the glafs being procured¹. *Toubourai Tamai*, a chief, who fhewed the moft friendly attachment to Mr. Banks, and the other gentlemen, was vifiting them on board the fhip when a knife was miffed. The general character which the natives had for being thieves, concurring with the circumftance of the chief being feated next the perfon who had loft the knife, fixed a ftrong fufpicion on him as being the thief; and Mr. Banks, though reluctantly, accused him of having taken it. He pofitively denied any knowledge of it; and when the affair was cleared up, and the knife produced, which had not been ftolen but taken away by one of the fervants, the chief expreffed the ftrongeft emotions of mind, both in his looks and geftures; the tears

¹ Hawkefw. II. 29.

started from his eyes, and he made signs with the knife, that if he had been guilty of such an action as had been imputed to him, he would submit to have his throat cut. The dispositions of these people, however, seem to be happily free from the smallest tincture of rancorous resentment, or a fullen spirit of revenge, for when the innocence of Toubourai Tamaide was thus certified, Mr. Banks could not but feel himself much concerned at the groundless charge that had been made, for which he endeavoured to atone by presents, and paying him particular marks of attention, which presently obliterated all remembrance of the transaction from the breast of the placid chief. But alas, when poor Tamaide had established, among the gentlemen of the ship, a character for immaculate honesty, one private act of theft sullied his fair fame. A parcel of nails, which lay in a corner of the cabin, and which were larger than any that had been produced in barter, was a temptation too strong to be resisted; the poor chief was overcome by it, and at different times secreted five of these inestimable rarities. He happened to be detected, one was found upon him, and he who was thought to have been the only exception to the general character of pilferers which had been given to these Indians, was found to possess a portion of the same spirit. His shame and sorrow, on the detection, was very apparent; but though he promised to return all his stolen goods, yet when he went home he chose rather to remove into the country, than fulfil his engagements; and no after-persuasion could induce him to part with what he had thus unwarrantably acquired. Great allowances, however, ought certainly to be made for the pilfering propensity so prevalent among these people; for an Indian among penny knives and beads, or even nails and broken glass, is in the same state of trial with the meanest servant in Europe, among unlocked coffers of jewels and gold ^m.

^m Hawkesw. II. 101, 129, 137.

The ship's butcher, in 1769, was charged by the same Toubourai Tamaide, with having, by threats and menaces of death, obtained a stone hatchet in exchange for a nail from a woman; being found guilty of the offence, he was ordered by the captain to be stripped, and tied up to the rigging, there to receive a certain number of lashes. The natives viewed this transaction very attentively, and on the first stroke being given they interposed, and with great emotion entreated for the delinquent's pardon: but an example being necessary, both to deter the natives and ship's company from acts of violence, and to shew the impartial manner in which justice was administered on offenders, they interceded in vain, on which they expressed their sorrow and pity, by tears and exclamations^a.

A chief visited captain Cook on board the Resolution, and presented him with a quantity of fruit, among which were a quantity of cocoa-nuts, from which the liquor had been drawn, and the shell thrown overboard; these he had picked up, and tied in bundles so artfully, that the cheat was not at first perceived; however, when it was detected, and the sly dissembler shewn his imposition, without betraying any emotion, and as if he knew nothing of the matter, he opened two or three of them himself, signifying that he was satisfied it was so, and then went on shore, and sent off a quantity of plantains and bananas, to compensate for his intended trick^b. At another time a musket had been stolen by one of the natives, and when captain Cook shewed a resolute determination to have it delivered up, or to make some severe reprisal, it was soon produced, with several other things that had been, at different times, conveyed away. All the natives present, and those who came in afterwards, pretended

^a Hawkesw. II. 103.

^b Cook, I. 150.

to have had some hand in recovering it; and put in a claim for a reward; but the most expert actor in this farce was a chief, who was well known by those who had visited this island in the former voyage; this man came with all the savage fury imaginable in his countenance; and a large club in his hand, with which he beat about him, meaning thereby to show how he alone had killed the thief; when at the same time it was well known to all present, that he had not been from his house the whole time ^p.

This propensity to steal; their governors either encouraged, or had not sufficient influence to prevent. The moment any thing of consequence had been stolen, the transaction was circulated over the whole neighbourhood; every one took the alarm, and encamped with his moveables in all haste. The chief then was *matcoued* or *matowed*; an ambiguous court phrase, expressing not only that he was afraid, but that he wished to be put in good humour with presents. Orders were then issued to bring no supplies to the ship; and the court removed to some distant part. All this was sometimes effected so suddenly, that these manœuvres were frequently the first intelligence to the ship's company, that a robbery had been committed. Whether the English obliged them to make restitution or not, the chief must be reconciled before any of the people were permitted to bring in refreshments; they knew very well the ships could not do without them, and therefore never failed strictly to observe this rule; without ever considering, that all their war canoes, on which the strength of the nation consisted, their houses; and even the very fruit they refused to furnish, were entirely in the power of their new friends. But, except the detaining a few of their canoes for a while, captain Cook never

touch'd the least article of their property; of the two extremes, he always chose that which appeared to him the most equitable and mild; a trifling present to the chief, always succeeded to his wish, and very often put things upon a better footing than they had been before. That they were the first aggressors had very little influence on his conduct in this respect, because no difference happened but when it was so: his people very rarely, if ever, broke through the rules he had thought it necessary to prescribe. Three things made these Indians the fast friends of the English; their own good nature and benevolent disposition; gentle treatment on the part of the Europeans; and the dread the natives were under of fire arms. By the English ceasing to observe the second, the first would have worn out of course; and the frequent resort to the musket, would have excited a spirit of revenge, and perhaps have taught them, that fire arms were not such terrible things as they had imagined; they were very sensible of the superiority of their numbers, and no one knows what an enraged multitude might have done. The determin'd, yet mild conduct of captain Cook, is exemplified in the following instance. In April 1774, one of the natives attempted to steal a cask from the watering place, and was caught in the fact; he was sent on board the Resolution and put in irons, in which situation O-Too the king, and several of the chiefs saw him: being acquainted with his crime, the king begged earnestly for his enlargement, which the captain refused, telling him, that since he, captain Cook, punished his people when they committed the least offence against the natives, it was but equitable this man should be punished likewise, and as he knew the king would not do it, the captain was determin'd to do it himself. Accordingly he ordered the offender to be carried

on shore to the tents, and soon after O-Too, *Tedua* (prince) *Torora* his sister, *Towha* a chief, and others, followed. The captain ordered the guard out under arms, and the man to be tied up to a post. The king and prince begged hard for him, while *Towha* said not a word, but was very attentive to the whole process. The captain then expostulated with the king on the conduct of this man, and of his people in general, adding, that the punishment of this offender might be the means of saving the lives of others of his people, by deterring them from committing the like crime. With these, and other arguments, which he seemed to understand, the king appeared satisfied, and only desired the man might not be *matteerou* (killed). The captain then gave orders for the crowd to be kept at a proper distance, and the fellow to receive two dozen of lashes with a cat-o-nine-tails, which discipline he bore with great firmness; he was then set at liberty, and the natives were dispersing; but *Towha* coming forward, called them back, and harangued them for some time. His speech consisted of short sentences, very little of which was understood by the European part of the audience; but from what could be gathered, he appeared to recapitulate what captain Cook had said to O-Too; named several advantages the islanders had received from the strangers, condemned the return they had made, and recommended a better conduct for the future. He represented, that although the power of their guests was infinitely superior to their own, yet they neither stole any thing, nor used any violence, but honestly paid a proper price for whatever they received; and frequently gave presents besides, where none was expected. The gracefulness of his action, and the attention with which he was heard, bespoke him a great orator; O-Too said not a word. As soon as *Towha* had ended his speech, the captain ordered the marines to go through their exercise,

exercise, and to load and fire in volleys with ball; and as they were very quick in their manœuvres, it is easier to conceive than describe the amazement the natives were wrapt in the whole time. This exemplary punishment, however, was not effectual to work a reformation; for eight or nine days after, the princess *Tororai* happening to be on board the ship with the king her brother, the elder Mr. Forster being with them, they were looking upon great heaps of iron ware, and other articles of trade; she whispered something to her brother, who immediately endeavoured to divert Mr. Forster's attention, by asking several questions: the scheme was seen through, though the princess concluded she was not observed, and thereupon concealed two large spike-nails in the folds of her garments. Captain Cook soon after coming in, Mr. Forster informed him of the confederated theft, but it was agreed to be most advisable to take no notice of it. What rendered this little stratagem more culpable was, that this lady had frequently conceived a *penchant* for something or other which she saw, which was always gratified by presenting her with the article coveted, and generally something more was superadded to the gift: it should seem, therefore, that the royal damsel had a strange predilection for riches acquired by stealth, and for which she was only indebted to her own ingenuity. An European might be apt to exclaim on this occasion, how little conscious dignity do these Indian princes possess; but perhaps it may be for the credit of civilized blood-royal, not to analyze too philosophically the component parts of true dignity. — But to introduce the reader to another trait of character in these people:

¹ Cook, I. 326, 327. Forster, II. 79.

² Forster, II. 97, 98.

They have not the idea of any thing indecent, and gratify every appetite and passion before witnesses, with no more sense of shame, or notion of impropriety, than people in other countries associate together at a meal, and gratify their hunger^u. M. de Bougainville's people were daily straggling about the island unarmed, in small parties, and sometimes even single; they were invited to enter the houses where they came, and provisions were set before them; nor did the kindness of their hosts end here, for they presented young girls to them, and immediately the hut was invested with a group of spectators, both men and women, who formed a circle round their guest, and the young victim of their hospitality; the ground was presently spread with leaves and flowers, and their musicians struck up an hymeneal song to the tune of their flutes. Here Venus is the goddess of hospitality; her worship is carried on without any mysteries, and the tributes which are paid to her are feasts for the whole nation^v. "They were surprized," says this agreeable French writer, "at the confusion our people appeared to be in, as our customs do not admit of such public proceedings; however, I will not answer for it, that every one of our men had found it impossible to conquer his repugnance to conform to the customs of the country^w. At the house of *Toutaa*, which M. de Bougainville visited, he was very kindly received, and the good-natured chief offered his European guest one of his wives, who was very young, and moderately handsome; the assembly was very numerous, and the musicians had already began the hymænean; such is their manner of receiving visits of ceremony^x;" and the same civility is practised by the tribes of North-American Indians. But notwithstanding these instances, the wives here owe their

^u Hawkesw. II. 240.

^v Bougainv. 223.

^w Ib. 228.

^x Ib. 230.

husbands

husbands a blind submission, and would wash away with their blood any infidelity committed without their husband's consent; to be sure that consent is easily obtained, and jealousy is so unknown a passion here, that the husband is commonly the first who persuades his wife to yield to another man. An unmarried woman suffers no restraint on that account, every thing invites her to follow the inclinations of her heart, or the instinct of her sensuality, and public applause honours her defeat; nor does it appear that how great soever the number of her previous lovers may have been, it should prove an obstacle to her meeting with an husband afterwards.

When the Dolphin first appeared on the coast in 1767, which is supposed to have been the first ship ever seen here; great number of women appeared on the beach, and were very importunate with the men in the boat to come on shore; they stripped themselves naked, and endeavoured to allure them by many wanton gestures; the next day the same allurements were used, if possible, with a greater degree of lasciviousness; and when they found that, notwithstanding all their endeavours to detain them, the boat was putting off, they pelted them with apples and bananas, shouting, and shewing every possible sign of derision and contempt. After this, canoes, with a number of women, came close by the side of the ship, where the same wanton gestures were acted over again. When a regular traffic was established on shore, it was settled that a river should separate the natives and the strangers, and a few only of the former should cross at a time, for the purpose of trading. Several young women were then permitted to cross the river, who though they were not averse to the granting of personal favours, were tenacious of making

the most of them. An iron nail was generally the price of beauty; and, according to the charms of the damsel, was the size of the nail that she received. An iron nail having thus become the medium for the commerce of the sexes, every consideration of duty, and even personal safety, was forgotten in this fascinating traffic, and the nails of the ship were drawn without scruple, to furnish presents for their mercenary Laïses. But these depredations, that threatened the most fatal consequences, being discovered, and as much as possible prevented, the supply of nails fell short. The impassioned tars had then recourse to artifice; they watched every opportunity to steal all the lead they could find, and cutting it into the shape of nails, by that means became welcome suitors to their mistresses. This base currency was, however, soon detected, for the gunner, who acted as the president of the factory, was applied to, with a request to change them for iron. Nor did the men scruple to abet and promote this kind of dealing, for fathers and brothers would bring their daughters and sisters, for the purpose of prostitution to the sailors, and the man who could produce the largest nail was permitted to enjoy the lady; according to the beauty of the girl was her price, and the men who came down with her to the side of the river, when they presented the girl, shewed a stick of the size of the nail which was demanded for her, and if any of the people on the opposite shore agreed, she was sent over to them, for the crew were not permitted to cross the river. This commerce was carried on a considerable time before the officers discovered it. And when M. de Bougainville arrived some time after, the Indians along the shore, by signs, pressed his people to choose a woman, and to come on shore with her; and their gestures, which were by no means equivocal, denoted in what manner

an intercourse should be maintained. "It was very difficult," says that officer, "with such seducing incitements, to keep at their work four hundred young French sailors, who had been deprived of the sight of women for six months".^a Notwithstanding the endeavours used to keep the crew in order, the captain's cook found means to escape on shore; he had no sooner singled out a fair one, than he was immediately encircled by a large party of natives, who stripped him of his cloaths from head to feet, and with great tumult, and violent exclamations, examined every part of his body very minutely. When their curiosity had been fully gratified, they returned him his cloaths, and what is rather wonderful, put into his pockets whatever they had taken out of them, and handing the girl to him, signified that she was very much at his service; but by this time the trembling Frenchman had found every passion absorbed in that of fear, and the only favour he asked of them was, to convey him on board the ship, which he reached more dead than alive. To avert the punishment for his desertion he told his captain, that whatever severity he might use, it could not terrify him equally to the treatment which he had met with on shore.^b

When the Resolution lay here in 1773 and 1774, the women of O-Taheitee had so totally divested themselves of all apprehensions of ill treatment from the English sailors, that great numbers of the lowest class remained on board the ship, after the numerous tribe of visitants had returned on shore in the evening. They ventured, without scruple, to pass the night on board, having studied the disposition of British seamen so well as to know, that they ran no risk by confiding in them, but on the contrary, might make sure of every head, nail, hatchet, or shirt, that their lovers could muster.

^a Bougainv. 218.

^b Ib. 219.

The evening therefore was as completely dedicated to mirth and pleasure, as if the ship had lain at Spithead instead of O-Tahitee. Before it was perfectly dark the women assembled on the fore-castle, and one of them blowing a flute with the nostrils, all the rest danced a variety of dances usual in their country, among which there were some that did not exactly correspond with an European's ideas of delicacy^c. Some of the females who yielded, without scruple, to the ardent solicitations of the sailors, seemed not to be above nine or ten years old, and had not the least marks of puberty^d. But the readiness with which women prostituted themselves to the common sailors on board the ships, ought not to be made the standard of female manners on this island: a foreigner visiting England would entertain a most unfavourable opinion of the character of the women there, if he founded it on the examples he met with on board the ships, in any of the naval ports, or in the purlieus of Covent-Garden, and the hundreds of Drury. Captain Cook, in the narrative of his last voyage, has been induced to speak with some degree of exception to the general profligacy of the women of O-Tahitee, and seems to think that there are some who are governed by the restrictions of chastity; but when he speaks most favourably of the Tahitians on this head, he says, that those women who came on board the ship, and frequented the posts on shore, and were prodigal of their favours, mixed indiscriminately with others who were looked upon as impregnable to the attacks of illicit love, and who were even of the highest rank, which he acknowledges at first led him to think that every woman among them was disposed the same way, and that the only difference was in the price; but the truth is, that a woman who becomes a prostitute does not seem, in their estimation, to have committed a crime of fo-

^c Forster, I. 336.

^d Ib. I. 265.

deep a dye, as to exclude her from the esteem and society of the community in general*. And perhaps in a civilized state, where the restraints laid on marriage amount to an absolute prohibition on more than one-half of the youth of both sexes, it might be expedient to make larger allowances for the indiscretions of the passions, and by such means to make good members of society of very many, who are hurried into desperation and profligacy by obdurate and indiscriminating austerity: the loss of every good quality of the heart is not consequent on the transgression itself, but is frequently occasioned by the general scorn and contempt which follows it.

A chief, named O-Tai, came on board the Resolution, accompanied by his wife and two sisters; one of his sisters, who was named *Marorai*, was a graceful figure, with the most delicate and beautiful contours in the hands, and all above the zone; an ineffable smile sat on her countenance: she was struck with admiration at beholding the variety of objects that presented themselves on board the ship; and not content with looking round the decks, she descended into the officers cabins, attended by a gentleman of the ship. Having curiously examined every part, *Marorai* took particular fancy to a pair of sheets which she saw spread on one of the beds, and made a number of fruitless attempts to obtain them from her conductor, to whom they belonged; he proposed a special favour as a condition; she hesitated some time, and at last, with seeming reluctance, consented; but when the yielding nymph was about to surrender, the ship struck violently on the reef: the affrighted lover, more sensible of the danger than his fair mistress, quitted her unrifed charms, and flew on deck: repeated shocks made the condition of the ship more terrifying; every one on

* Cook, I. 187, 188.

board exerted himself to the utmost on this emergency; at length they brought her again afloat. When the danger was over, the officer bethought him of his kind fair one; but on visiting the cabin he found her gone, and his bed stripped of its sheets, which, most probably, the forsaken *Marorai* had taken care of. She had, however, the Lacedemonian sanction for theft, as she conducted the business so adroitly as to appear on deck without exciting any mistrust of her acquisition. Four days after this adventure the same officer, in company with several others, strolling about the country, came to the spot where O-Tai, and his fair sister, resided; he thought it to no purpose to enquire after his lost bed-linen, but rather chose to renew his *tendres* to the lady: beads, nails, and various trifles were presented to her, which she readily accepted, but remained inflexible to the passionate solicitations of her lover: as she was, most probably, in possession of the wealth which she prized above her chastity, no other consideration seemed to be sufficient to procure her consent to the transient embraces of a stranger. That she was governed by such motives seems most probable, as she belonged to a family of some note, and few instances have been seen of women among the better sort of people, being liberal of their favours. But the princess *Tororai*, whose talents for fishing have been already recorded, was accused by her countrywomen of admitting *towtaws*, or men of the lowest rank, to her bed at night, privately, and unknown to her brother.

It has already been related, that the usual way of expressing their respect to strangers, is by uncovering themselves to the middle; but a ceremony of a different kind, but expressive of the same thing, was used by *Oorattooa*, a woman

^f Forster, I. 258, 259, 284.

^g Forster, II. 98.

of distinction, who visited Mr. Banks. After laying down several young plantain-leaves, a man brought a large bundle of cloth, which having opened, he spread it piece by piece upon the ground, in the space between Mr. Banks and his visitants. There were in all nine pieces, but having spread three pieces one upon another, the lady came forward, and stepping upon them, took up her garments all round her to the waist; she then turned about with great composure and deliberation, and with an air of perfect innocence and simplicity three times, which having done, she dropped the first: when other three pieces were spread she practiced the same ceremony; and so the third time, when the last three pieces were laid out: after which the cloth was again rolled up, and delivered to Mr. Banks, as a present from the lady, who, with her attending friend, came up and saluted him, in return for which he made them such presents as he thought would be most acceptable^h. From the unbridled licentiousness of these people, the French gave this island the name of the New Cytheraⁱ.

By this time the reader has probably conceived more favourably of these islanders on the score of their mildness and urbanity, than as possessing a delicate sentiment of love refined from lust; but the following relation proves them to be capable of the most shocking acts of cruelty, as well as the grossest lewdness. A very considerable number of the principal people of O-Taheitee have formed themselves into a society, in which every woman is common to every man. This society is distinguished by the name of *Arroy*, the members of which have meetings, from whence all others are

^h Hawkesw. II. 125.

ⁱ Bougainv. 230.

excluded. At these meetings the passions are excited by a studied course of sensuality, and the most delicate pleasures are converted to the coarsest and most brutal. If, notwithstanding these sterilizing excesses, any of the women should prove with child, unless she can procure a man to adopt the infant as his own, not all the strong affections of a mother, if such are not entirely eradicated by a course of life subversive of the feelings as well as modesty of nature, can spare the life of the pre-condemned innocent, but the child as soon as born is smothered, and the mother is left at liberty to renew her former course of execrable prostitution. Should a man be found to co-operate with the mother in rescuing a child from death, they are both excluded forever from the *arreoys*, and are considered as man and wife; the woman, from that time, is distinguished by the term *whannowow*, “bearer of children,” which in this spot of the globe, and in this only, is considered as a term of reproach: and so de-
 praved are these people, that being a member of such a society is boasted of as a privilege, instead of being stigmatised as the foulest crime^k: even the intelligent and enlightened *Tupia*, whose history will be given in the eleventh section of this chapter, declared himself a member of this unnatural confederacy. The *arreoys* enjoy several privileges, and are greatly respected throughout the Society-Islands, as well as at O-Taheitee; nay, they claim a great share of honour from the circumstance of being childless. *Tupia*, when he heard that the king of England had a numerous offspring, declared he thought himself much greater, because he belonged to the *arreoys*^l. From the establishment of such a society among the chiefs of this and the neighbouring islands, it should seem that the leading men among them are not unacquainted with the refinements of political subtilty;

^k Hawkesw. II. 207.

^l Forster, II. 130.

they

they have therefore hit upon this institution to prevent the too rapid encrease of the order of nobility; from the same principle the grandees in Roman-Catholic countries are led to consign their superfluous daughters to the celibacy of a cloystered life. That this society indulge themselves in promiscuous embraces, and that every woman who is a member of it is common to every man, is contradicted by Mr. Forster^m; he says, these *arreoys* choose their wives and mistresses from among the prostitutes, and from this circumstance, as well as from their voluptuousness, they have seldom reason to dread the intrusion of childrenⁿ. But herein we must beg leave to differ from this agreeable writer, as we do not apprehend that he has wiped off any part of the disgrace incident to the society, on account of their promiscuous intercourse, or even rendered the contrary fact more credible; for is it at all probable that these prostitutes, who have been accustomed to roving variety, should cease to be eccentric and inconstant, when initiated into this community of profligates? Mr. Forster had the following circumstances related to him by O-Mai, who said that the pre-eminence and advantages which a man enjoyed as *arroy* were so valuable, as to urge him on against his own feelings to destroy the child; that the mother was never willing to consent to the horrid murder, but that her husband, and other *arreoys*, persuaded her to yield up the child; and that when entreaties were not sufficient, force was sometimes employed. But above all, he added, that this act was always performed in secret, and so that none of the people, not even the *towtows*, or attendants of the house, were present; because, if it were seen, the murderers would be put to death^o.

^m Vol. II. page 132.

ⁿ Page 134.

^o Forster, II. 134.

It

they

It appears that the *Aborigines* of our island of Great-Britain, had a custom among them similar to this among the *arréoyis* in its licentiousness, though free from its cruelty. Ten or a dozen brothers, or friends, lived together, and had their wives in common. "This custom," says the laborious and accurate Rapin^p, "continued a long time among them, though in other respects they were grown very civilized by their commerce with the Romans, when masters of this island." A British lady being upbraided by Julia, the empress of Severus, with a custom so contrary to the practice of other nations, is said by Diodorus Siculus^q, to have returned this bold answer. "The Roman ladies have little reason to reproach us on this account, since we do publicly with the best of our men, no more than what they do privately with the worst of theirs, freed men and slaves."—But to have done with this flagrant enormity, let us now proceed to give some account of the diversions of O-Tahcitee.

1768.

Captain Cook, Mr. Banks, and several other gentlemen, paid a visit to a chief, who resided at some distance from the bay where the ship lay at anchor; they found him like an ancient patriarch sitting under a tree, with a number of venerable old men sitting round him, so as to form a semicircle; here they entertained their guests with a wrestling-match; the combatants, to the number of ten or twelve, who were naked, except a cloth that was fastened about the waist, entered the area, and walked slowly round it in a stooping posture, with their left hands on their right breasts, and their right hands open, with which they frequently struck the left fore-arm, so as to produce a quick smart sound, which it seems was their manner of giving a general challenge to all present, which done, each proceeded to

^p Introduction, page 7.

^q Lib. lxxvi.

single out his particular antagonist; this was done by joining the finger ends of both hands, and bringing them to the breast, at the same time moving their elbow up and down with a quick motion. If the person to whom this was addressed accepted the challenge, he gave the same signs, and immediately both put themselves in an attitude to engage. The next minute they closed; each endeavoured to lay hold on the other first by the thigh, and if that failed by the hand, the hair, the cloth, or wherever he could; when this was effected, they grappled without the least dexterity or skill, till one of them having a more advantageous hold, or muscular force, threw the other on his back. When the contest was over, the old men gave their plaudits to the victor, in a few words which they repeated together in a kind of tone; his conquest was also generally celebrated by three huzzas. The entertainment was then suspended for a few minutes, after which another company of wrestlers came forward and engaged in the same manner: if neither was thrown after a contest of about a minute, they parted either by consent, or the intervention of their friends; and then each slapped his arm as a challenge to a new engagement. While the wrestlers were engaged, another party of men performed a dance, which also lasted about a minute, but neither of these parties took the least notice of each other, their attention being wholly fixed on what they were doing. What is very remarkable, and shows the placidity of this people is, that the conquerors did not exult, nor the vanquished repine at the event of the conflict, but the whole was carried on with perfect good will and good humour, though in the presence of more than five hundred spectators. Besides the amusement of wrestling, they have music, dances, and shooting with bows. They also

² Hawkeſw. II. 119.

sometimes

sometimes vie with each other in throwing a lance. They shoot, not at a mark, but for distance; they throw the lance, not for distance, but at a mark. The weapon is about nine feet long, the mark is the bowl of a plantain, and the distance is about twenty yards^s. Their flutes have only two stops, and therefore sound no more than four notes by half tones; they are sounded like our German flutes, only the performer, instead of applying it to his mouth, blows it with one nostril, stopping the other with his thumb. They are made of a hollow bamboo about a foot long; only one tune was heard. To the stops they apply the forefinger of the left hand, and the middle finger of the right^t. Whilst these instruments are sounding, others sing and keep time to them. Their drum is made of a hollow block of wood, of a cylindrical form, solid at one end and covered at the other with shark's skin, which are beaten with their hands instead of sticks: their skill extends to tuning of two drums of different notes into concord, and their flutes likewise they can bring into unison; their songs are generally extemporary and in rhyme^u. Mr. Banks met with a party of travelling musicians, who exactly resembled the ancient minstrels in their employment and manner of passing from place to place. The band consisted of two flutes and three drums. The drummers accompanied the music with their voices, and the gentlemen of the ship were generally the burden of their song^v. One of their dances is called *Timorodee*, which is performed by eight or ten young girls; and consists of the most wanton and lascivious attitudes and gestures in which they are trained from their very infancy. These dances are accompanied with the grossest language. The regularity of their motions is said to be scarcely excelled by the best performers upon the stages of Europe.

^s Hawkesw. II. 104.^t Ib. 97, 204.^u Ib. 206.^v Ib. 148.

No sooner does the young virgin, thus initiated in the mysteries of love, become practically acquainted with its rites, than she is disqualified from performing in these inflaming exhibitions^w. The resemblance between the music and dances of this country, and that of Hindostan, is very strong; their excellence in keeping time; the lasciviousness of the entertainment, and youth of the performers, perfectly agree^x; but they differ in that the women of the highest rank perform in the dances here, whilst it is made a distinct profession there. When O-Too the king received a visit from captain Cook, a dramatic *heava* or play was performed, which consisted both of dancing and comedy; the performers were five men and one woman, who was no other than *Tedue Towrai* before spoken of. The music consisted of three drums only; it lasted about an hour and an half, or two hours, and was upon the whole well conducted. Some part of this dramatic piece seemed formed on the circumstances of the visit made them by the Europeans, as *Toote* (Cook) was frequently repeated. The manner of acting was exactly similar to that of *Ulietea* in the former voyage, which will be described in speaking of that island. The dancing dress of the lady here was more elegant, being decorated with long tassels made of feathers, hanging from the waste downward^y. In return for these public diversions exhibited in honour of their guests, captain Cook ordered an Highlander, one of the marines, to play on the bagpipe before the king; and his uncooth music, though almost intolerable to English ears, delighted the prince and his subjects to an astonishing degree. They listened to him with rapturous delight, and O-Too, as a token of his high esteem for the musical abilities of the performer, ordered him

^w Hawkesw. II. 207. ^x Fenning's System of Geography, Vol. I. page 184; and Grose's Voyage to the East-Indies. ^y Cook, I. 257.

a large piece of the coarser cloth. At another time his majesty was entertained with the discharge of twelve great guns from the ship towards the sea, which changed the esteem of the islanders into admiration of their guests: afterwards some sky-rockets were let off with some air balloons; these threw the gazing Indians into raptures unmixed with fear; they looked upon their guests as most extraordinary people, who had fires and stars at command; they gave these fire works the name of *Heiva-Britannee*, "The British festival."—To close this section. An idea of the temper and disposition of the Tahetians, cannot be better conveyed to our readers, than by the following relation, given by Mr. Forster's animated pen.

"When the gentlemen of the ship paid a visit to O-Too, the number of uncles, aunts, cousins, and other relations of his majesty, among whom they were seated, vied with each other in bestowing on them kind looks, making professions of friendship, and—begging for beads and nails. The methods to obtain these esteemed trifles, were very different, and consequently not always equally successful. When they distributed a few beads to one set of people, some young fellows would impudently thrust their hands in between them, and demand their share, as though it had been their due; these attempts were always discouraged by a flat refusal; but a venerable old man, who with a hand not yet palsied with age, vigorously pressed theirs, and with a perfect reliance on their good-nature, whispered the petition in their ears could not be refused. The elder ladies too, in general, made sure of a prize by a little artful flattery. They commonly enquired of the gentlemen their names, and then adopted them as their sons, at the same time

introducing to them the several relations they had by this means acquired. After a series of little caresses, the old lady began, *Aima pos-eetee no te tayo mettea?* "Have you not a little bread for your kind mother?" Such a trial of their filial attachment had always its desired effect, as they could not fail to draw the most favourable conclusions from thence, in regard to the general kind-disposition of the whole people: *for to expect a good quality in others, of which we ourselves are not possessed, is a refinement in manners peculiar to polished nations*^a. Their other female relations, in the bloom of youth, with some share of beauty, and constant endeavours to please, laid a claim to their affections and bounty, by giving themselves the tender name of sisters. In a little time an ample return was made for their presents, especially from the ladies, who immediately sent their attendants (*toutous*) for large pieces of their best cloth, dyed, scarlet, rose and straw colour, and perfumed with their choicest fragrant oils: these they put over the cloaths of their new relations in such abundance, that they could scarce move under the unweildy proofs of gratitude given by their Indian kindred^b".

S E C T. VI.

An Account of some peculiar Customs and Manners in the Island of O-Taheitee.

THEY constantly, both men and women, wash their whole bodies three times a day in running water, and are remarkably cleanly in their cloaths^c. Captain Cook relates an instance which he saw of their amazing expertness in the water. On a part of the shore where a tremendously

^a Foster, l. 329.^b Ib.^c Hawkesw. II. 201.

high surf broke, insomuch that no European boat could live in it, and the best swimmer in Europe, he was persuaded, could not have preserved himself from drowning, if by any accident he had been exposed to its fury, as the shore was covered with pebbles and large stones; yet here were ten or twelve Indians swimming for their amusement. Whenever a surf broke near them, they dived under it, and rose again on the other side. The stern of an old canoe added much to their support; this they took before them, and swam out with it as far as the outermost breach; when two or three getting into it, and turning the square end to the breaking wave, were driven in towards the shore with incredible rapidity, sometimes almost to the beach; but generally the wave broke over them before they got half way, in which case they dived, and rose on the other side with the canoe in their hands, and swimming out with it again, were again driven back. This amazing expertness drew the captain's attention for more than half an hour, during which time none of the swimmers attempted to come on shore, but seemed to enjoy the sport in the highest degree. At another time, one of the officers of the quarter deck intending to drop a bead into a canoe for a little boy about six years old, it accidentally missed the boat, and fell into the sea; but the child immediately leaped overboard, and diving after it, recovered his jewel. To reward him for this feat some more beads were dropped to him, which excited a number of men and women to amuse the officers with their amazing feats of agility in the water; and not only fetched up several beads scattered at once, but likewise large nails, which, from their weight, descended quickly to a considerable depth. Some of these people continued a long time under water, and the velocity with which they were seen to go down, the water

being perfectly clear, was very surprizing. The view of several nymphs swimming nimbly round the sloop, such as nature had formed them, was more than sufficient to subvert the little reason which a mariner commonly possesses to govern his passions. Swimming seems to be familiar to these people from their earliest childhood, and their easy position in the water, and the pliancy of their limbs, made them appear as a kind of amphibious creatures *.

Here a green branch of a tree is used as an emblem of peace, in exact conformity to the custom which prevailed among the ancient nations.

O-Too made a visit to captain Cook on board the Resolution, and when he entered the cabin he found some of the chiefs sitting there, who, the moment they saw the king enter, stripped themselves in great haste, being covered before. Seeing captain Cook take notice of it, they said *earee, earee*, signifying it was on account of O-Too being present. This was the only instance of respect they paid him, for they never rose from their seats, nor made him any other obeisance.

A chief named *Potatow*, who had been particularly intimate with captain Cook in his first voyage, agreed to accompany Mr. Pickersgill, who had been on the former voyage, to visit his old friend at *Mutavai* bay, where the Resolution lay at anchor; but to assure himself of being received with friendship, the chief produced a few small yellow feathers tied together with a little tuft, which he desired Mr. Pickersgill to hold, while he repeated his promise

* Forster, I. 265, 266.

“that *Toote* (captain Cook) would be the friend of *Potatow*.” This done, he carefully wrapped the feathers into a bit of Indian cloth, and put it in his turban. Red and yellow feathers are employed by the inhabitants of this island to fix their attention while they pray to the Deity, but this ceremony on making a solemn promise or oath, had not been observed before. *Potatow* was so well satisfied of the integrity of his friend after this ceremony, that he, and his wives, and several of their attendants, carrying with them two hogs and abundance of cloth, marched towards the boat amidst an immense crowd of people. When he arrived at the water-side, all his followers persuaded him earnestly not to venture on board the ship, and clinging to his feet, endeavoured to hold him back. These intreaties for a moment seemed to shake his resolution, but immediately banishing all suspicion, he thrust aside an old man who was most forward in his entreaties, saying, *Toote aipa matte te tayo*, “Cook will not kill his friends,” and stepped into the boat with an air of undaunted majesty that struck the officers who were witnesses to it with astonishment. When he came on board the sloop, he descended into the cabin, accompanied by his then wife, a former one whom he had repudiated, and a friend or husband whom she had adopted in his stead. This chief is described as one of the tallest men upon the island, with mild, comely, and majestic features; his whole body remarkably strong and heavily built, so that one of his thighs nearly equalled in girth the waist of the stoutest of the sailors; *Polatchera*, his former wife, resembling him in stature and bulk; her appearance and behaviour were extremely masculine, and strongly conveyed the ideas of superiority and command. When the Endeavour bark lay here, she distinguished herself by the name of captain Cook’s sister, *tuahaina no Toote*, and one day being denied admittance

admittance into the fort erected on shore, she knocked down the centinel that opposed her, and complained with great warmth to her adopted brother of the indignity that had been offered her^f. The young man whom this lady had chosen for her second husband, had taken an affection to a Tahitian girl, and the ship was the place of their assignations. They did not, however, manage their interviews so as to elude the watchful eyes of *Polatchera*, who surprized them one morning. Her resentment against her rival was expressed by giving her many hearty boxes on the ear, whilst the false lover escaped with only a severe reprimand, which considering the athletic powers of the injured lady, was a great instance of her moderation and affection^g.

Here were seen fifteen human jaw bones, which were fastened to a semicircular board. These, like scalps among the Indians in North America, were trophies of war^h.

S E C T. VII.

Of the Language of the O-Tahitians, their mental Endowments and Skill in the Sciences.

THEIR language is soft and melodious; it abounds with vowels, and the pronunciation of it was easily acquired; but it was found exceedingly difficult to teach the natives to pronounce a single English word: probably not only from its abounding in consonants, but from some peculiarity in its structure; for Spanish and Italian words, if ending in a vowel, they pronounced with great facility. A sufficient acquaintance with it has not been formed to de-

^f Forster, I. 361.

^g Forster, II. 94.

^h Hakefw. II. 170.

termine, whether it is copious or otherwise, but it is certainly very imperfect; being almost totally without inflexion, both of nouns and verbs. Few of the nouns have more than one case; and few of the verbs more than one tense. It was impossible to teach the Indians to pronounce the names of their guests; they called captain Cook, *Toote*; Mr. Hicks, the first lieutenant, *Hete*; Molyneux they renounced in absolute despair, and called the master *Roba*, from his christian name Robert; Mr. Gore, the second lieutenant, was *Toarro*; Dr. Solander, *Torano*; Mr. Banks, *Tapane*; Mr. Green, *Eteroe*; Mr. Parkinson, *Patini*; Mr. Sporing, *Polini*; Mr. Pickersgill, *Pedrodero*; and in this manner they had formed names for almost every man in the ship. In some, however, it was not easy to find any traces of the original, and they were perhaps not mere arbitrary sounds formed upon the occasion, but signified words in their own language; and it seems they could very perfectly remember these appellations at the distance of four years, by their enquiries after such gentlemen as were absent on the second voyage by name. Mr. Monkhouse, a midshipman, they called *Matto*, which signifies in their language dead, because he commanded a party that killed a man for stealing a musket. The nearest imitation which they could reach of king George, was by calling him *Kihiargo*.

The captains Cook and Furneaux, with several officers, paid a visit to *Abeatua*, the king of the less peninsula, *O-Tahetee etee*, in 1773; he received them seated on a large stool cut out of solid wood, and recollected captain Cook, whom he had seen on his former voyage, and immediately made room for him on his stool, while captain Furneaux, and the rest, chose large stones for their seats. In the course of this visit, the king took particular notice of captain Cook's watch;

‡ Hawkesw. II. 228.

after curiously examining the motion of so many wheels, that seemed to move as it were spontaneously, and shewing his astonishment at the noise it made, which he could not express otherwise than by saying "it spoke," (*pareu*) he returned it, and asked what it was good for. With a great deal of difficulty they made him conceive, that it measured the day, similar to the sun, by whose altitude in the heavens he and his people divided their time. After this explanation he called it "a little sun," to shew them that he perfectly understood their meaning ^k.

A map of O-Taheitee, engraved for captain Cook's first voyage, was taken out and laid before *Tuaboru*, the high admiral, without informing him any thing of what it was; he was, however, too good a pilot not to find it out presently, and was overjoyed to see a representation of his own country. Immediately with his finger he pointed out the situation of all the *whennuas* or districts upon it, naming them at the same time in their order ^l.

These people have a remarkable sagacity in foretelling the weather, particularly the quarter from whence the wind will blow. In their long voyages they steer by the sun in the day, and in the night by the stars; all of which they distinguish separately by names; and know in what part of the heavens they will appear in any of the months, during which they are visible in their horizon; they also know the times of their annual appearing and disappearing, with more precision than would easily be believed by an European astronomer. They seem to reckon time by moons; thirteen of which compose their year. The day they divide into six parts, and the night into the same number; the height

^k Forster, I. 309.

^l *Ib.* 301.

of the sun enables them to judge of the time of the day, but of the night they cannot ascertain the division by the stars. In numeration, the highest number to which they ascend is 200; they count by the fingers of both their hands to ten. When they take the distance from place to place, they express it by the time that is required to pass it^m. They call comets *evatou-cave*, but entertain no notion of any baneful influence which they have on our globe: those meteors, however, which we call shooting stars, are known to them by the name of *epao*, and are thought to be evil genii, *eatoua-toa*ⁿ.

S E C T. VIII.

Of the Government of O-Taheitee; their King, Nobility, Gentry, and Commonalty; its Populousness and Wars.

THEIR government seems greatly to resemble the early state of every nation in Europe under the feudal system. Their orders of dignity are, *Earee rahie*, which answers to king; *Earee*, baron; *Manahouni*, vassal; and *Toutow*, vassal. There are two *Earee rahies*, or kings, in this island, one being the sovereign of each of the peninsulas of which it consists. Each is treated with great respect by all ranks, but does not appear to be invested with so much power as was exercised by the *earees* in their own districts. The *earees* are lords of one or more of the districts into which each of the peninsulas is divided, of which there are forty-three on the larger one; these parcel out their territories to the *manahounis* who superintend the cultivation of the ground. The lowest class, called *Toutows*, seem

^m Hawkesw. II. 227.ⁿ Bougainv. 267.

to be nearly under the same circumstances as the villeins in feudal governments: they do all the laborious work; they cultivate the land under the *mabounonis*, who are only nominal cultivators for the lord; they fetch wood and water, and under the direction of the mistress of the family, dress the victuals; they also catch the fish. Each of the earees keeps a kind of court, and has a great number of attendants, chiefly the younger brothers of their own tribe; and among these some hold particular offices, but of which little more is known than the names of some of them. One was called the *Eowa no l'Earee*, another the *Whanno no l'Earee*, and these were frequently dispatched to the gentlemen of the ship with messages ^o.

In this country a child succeeds to his father's titles and authority as soon as he is born; and thus the king no sooner has a son born, than his sovereignty ceases; a regent is then chosen, and the father generally retains his power under that title, until his child becomes of age. The child of the baron or earee, as well as of the sovereign or earee rabie, succeeds to the titles and honours of his father as soon as it is born; so that a baron, who was yesterday called earee, and was approached with the ceremony of lowering the garment, so as to uncover the upper part of the body, is today, if last night his wife was delivered of a child, reduced to the rank of a private man; all marks of respect being transferred to the child, if it is suffered to live, though the father still continues possessor and administrator of his estate ^p. But the acquiescence which the lower class of people or *towtows* yield to the controul of their chiefs, is well worthy of remark. They are not suffered to taste any animosity ^q, although they are employed in the feeding of it

^o Hawkesw. II, 241.

^p Ibid.

for their pampered lords; the little labour which is required is exacted from them; and they endure patiently severe blows, if, when collected into a large body, they in any manner press upon or annoy the king or a chief in his progress; and all this passive spirit is preserved without any power appearing to be lodged in the hands of the king to exact it. He does not seem to have any military force to keep the body of his subjects in awe, or to suppress a rising spirit of rebellion if it appeared. He is attended by no guards; the few eunuchs who are about his person do not go armed; so that the distinction of rank maintained in this island, may be supposed to be acquired in by the body of the people, merely from that placid temper and mildness of soul which pervades the whole community. But the admirable policy of this government is shewn in prohibiting all intermarriages between the children of chiefs and the common people, by which means every spark of an aspiring spirit among the lower ranks is effectually extinguished. It is true, the simplicity of their whole life contributes to soften these distinctions, and to reduce them to something like a level, for the necessaries of life are within reach of every individual at the expence of a trifling labour; and though the higher class possess exclusively some dainty articles, such as pork, fish, fowl, and cloth, yet there is here no such thing as that absolute want which occasions the miseries and desperation of the lower class in some civilized states; at O-Taheitee there is not in general that disparity between the highest and the meanest men, which subsists in England between a reputable tradesman and a labourer^a.

There are very few actions which among these people are denominated crimes; the use of money is unknown among

^a Forster 364, 366.

them;

them ; adultery is held criminal, but then as the promiscuous uses of unmarried women is perfectly venial, the temptation to it is not strong ; and where the personal charms of women are not heightened by the studied embellishments of dress, and where the polite arts being unknown, very little intellectual disparity prevails, a strong predilection for any one woman is not likely often to produce acts of outrage against the decorum of society. However, adultery is sometimes punished with death, when the husband is possessed of the means of executing his vengeance, whilst he is under the influence of that fury which a sudden discovery of the fact excites ; but in general the woman, if detected, undergoes a severe beating, and the gallant passes unnoticed. Although the different ranks in society seem here to be so well understood, yet the regulation of public justice is not committed to the magistrate, but every man seems to do that which is right in his own eyes ; for the injured party redresses his own wrong, by inflicting what punishment he chooses, or has in his power to inflict on the offender : in matters of notorious wrong, it seems, however, that the chiefs sometimes interpose^r. The nobility have liveries for their servants. In proportion as the master's rank is more or less elevated, their servants wear their fashes more or less high. This fash is fastened close under the arms of the servants belonging to the chiefs, and goes round the loins of those belonging to the lowest class of nobility^s. These people shew an intelligence and influence that would do honour to any system of government, however regular and improved ; whatever design is formed, is presently generally known. One of the water casks belonging to the Endeavour was stolen in the night ; the next morning the transaction was universally known among the

^r Hawksworth II. 242..^s Bougainville 270.

Indians,

Indians, though it was evident that the theft had been committed by one in a distant part of the island, who had taken it away in his canoe, and that they had not been at all concerned in it; and with the same accuracy an attempt of the same kind was foretold would be made the next night; in consequence of which a sentinel was placed to watch the casks; the thief came as was predicted, but finding a watch set, returned without his booty.

Several parts of the island seem to be private property, which descend to the heir of the possessor on his death, and the descent seems to fall indifferently to man or woman.

Captain Cook is of opinion, that the number of inhabitants on the whole island amounts to two hundred and four thousand, including women and children.

The carree, or king of *Obereongo*, or the greater peninsula, takes to himself the title of king of the whole island, though the other peninsula, or *Tiarraboo*, is governed by a king. In the interval between the visit made to this island in 1769 in the Endeavour, and that in 1773 in the Resolution, a great naval engagement had been fought between *Toohabah*, the regent of *O-Taheitee nua*, during the minority of *O-Too* the king, and old *Aheatua*, or *Waheatua*, the then king of *O-Tahitee eete*, in which neither party had gained any decisive advantage. But *Toohabah* afterwards marching an army across the isthmus, which separates the two states, had been defeated in an obstinate engagement, in which himself, and many persons of distinction, had been slain; a peace ensued, and at that time remained unbroken.

¹ Hawkef. II. 129. ² Idem 131. ³ Cook II. 349. ⁴ Forster I. 300.

S E C T. IX.

Of the Religion of O-Tahctee; their Priests; human Sacrifices; their Morais, or Burying-places, and Manner of Mourning for the Dead.

THE religious language of these people, like that of the *Shanscrita* among the Gentoo Brahmins; is different from that used in common discourse*. Nothing can be more ridiculous than the notions of the first creation of the world that is conceived by them, if the imperfect account that we are possessed of anywise does them justice; for as the language of the priests has been observed to differ widely from that commonly spoken on the island, very little knowledge could be gained on this head. These people suppose every thing to have been produced, either immediately or derivatively, from one first cause. Thus the Supreme Being they suppose to have impregnated a rock, from whence was brought forth a daughter, which is the year; which daughter, from the embraces of the father, produced the thirteen months; which months, in conjunction with each other, produced the days. Their Supreme Being, whom they call *Tettow Matatayo*, they imagine to have had another intrigue with the rock, whom they call *Tepapa*, from whence the stars were engendered; which having been brought into existence, followed what they imagine to have been the universal bent of all nature, and propagated other stars. The Supreme Deity they then suppose to have continued his amours with *Tepapa*, from whence sprang an inferior race

* Dow's Hindostan. Kercher China Illustrata. Fenning's System of Geography I. 193.

of Deities, whom they call *Eatnas*; some of which being male, and others female, became fruitful like their parents; whether they made the stars or the earth their residence is not known, any more than how the sun and moon happened to have an existence; but it so happened, that a male and female *Eatna* inhabited the earth, and were the first parents of the human race. The first man when born, they say, was round like an apple, but that his mother, with great care, drew out his limbs, and having at length moulded him to his present form, she called him *Eothe*, or, finished. This *Eothe*, out of gratitude to his mother for her plastick art, begot on her a daughter; leaving then the embraces of his mother, he maintained a very successful intercourse with this daughter, by whom he had many daughters, and at length a son, who lent his assistance to the good work of encreasing and multiplying, and, in conjunction with his sisters, peopled the whole world.

In this wildest of all wild notions concerning the origin of the world, and of mankind, the manner in which the earth was at first produced is not at all accounted for, any more than the sun and moon, or the animal and vegetable tribes. Their Supreme Being is not supposed to have finished his labours till he had begotten a son, whom they call *Tanz*, but he is not described as symbolical of any planet, or visible appearance; but to this emanation of the Deity they direct their worship, though they do not believe that the good or bad conduct of mankind here on earth makes them more or less acceptable to this Divinity. They believe the existence of the soul after death, and of a greater or less degree of happiness to be then enjoyed; but they seem to have no conception of a state of punishment, or of suffering hereafter. The share of happiness which they imagine every individual will

will enjoy in this future state, will be assigned to him according to the rank he holds on earth; to their chiefs and principal people will be assigned the most honourable situations in this region of spirits, whilst the body of the commonalty must be content with the lowest conditions, and smallest proportion of enjoyment. We are not, however, told, wherein they suppose the happiness of this future state consists, but it is most probably a pretty exact imitation of a Mahomedan Paradise, for these voluptuaries can hardly be supposed capable of imagining any pleasures independent of those which arise from the intercourse of the sexes. The priesthood seems to be hereditary in one family or tribe; and as it is said to be numerous, probably those of that order are restrained from becoming members of the barren society of *Arroy*: but whether any peculiar decorum of character is enjoined to such, does not appear in any relation given of them. These priests are professedly the men of science, but their knowledge is altogether frivolous and useless, for it consists in being conversant with the names and rank of the different *Eatus*, or subordinate Divinities, and the opinions concerning the origin of things that have been handed down from one generation to another, by oral tradition, in detached sentences, and in a phraseology unintelligible to the common people. As the Deities they thus conceive of are supposed to be quite indifferent to the actions of mankind, the priests can have no hold upon them by working upon their hopes or their fears; but though this grand engine of priesthood is unknown here, other effectual means are made use of to secure consequence and respect to the priests: Their religious notions being deposited in an unknown tongue, they are respected by the vulgar because they are not understood; and as the cure of the soul is no object of regard, the most important concern to these people, the cure of their

their

their bodies, when labouring under a disease, is committed to these venerable superiors, and it has been already shown, that much parade and little skill is exercised to recover the sick. Their marriages are merely secular contracts; but no one has a right to perform the ceremony of *tattooing* but the priests, which being universally adopted by every native on the island, may be supposed a pretty lucrative employment, that is to say, will enable them to feed sumptuously, and cloath themselves amply, which must be the boundary of all desires on this spot. The males, in general, undergo a sort of circumcision, which not to have submitted to is considered as a foul disgrace: this likewise is the exclusive privilege of the priests to perform. But what establishes the veneration for this order of men in this island, is their skill in astronomy and navigation ².

Captain Cook, who had some reason to believe that among the religious customs of this people human sacrifices were sometimes offered up to their Deities, went to a *marai*, or place of worship, accompanied by captain Furneaux, having with them a sailor who spoke the language tolerably well, and several of the natives. In the *marai* was a *tupa-pow*, a kind of bier, with a shed erected over it, on which lay a corpse and some provisions. Captain Cook then asked if the plantains were for the *Eatua*? If they sacrificed to the *Eatua* hogs, dogs, fowls, &c. to all of which an intelligent native answered in the affirmative. He then asked if they sacrificed men to the *Eatua*? He was answered, *taato eno*, "bad men, they did; first *tiparraby*, beating them till they were dead." He then asked if good men were put to death in this manner? His answer was no, only *taato eno*. The captain then asked if any *Earees* were? The native replied, they

² Hawkesv. II, 237, &c.

had hogs to give the Eatua, and again repeated *tato eno*. He was then asked if *toutous*, that is servants or slaves, who had no hogs, dogs, or fowls, but yet were good men, were ever sacrificed to the Eatua? The answer still was no, only bad men. Many other questions were put to him; all his answers to which seemed to confirm the ideas that men for certain crimes were condemned to be sacrificed to the Gods, provided they did not possess any property which they might give for their redemption. However, in pursuing such enquiries as these, no certain information could be obtained, on account of the slight knowledge which had been acquired of the language of the country; but, according to further accounts which captain Cook received from O-Mai, it seems to rest with the high-priest to single out the victims for sacrifice, who, when the people are assembled on any solemn occasion, retires alone into the house of God, and stays there some time: when he comes out he informs the assembly that he has seen and conversed with the great God, (the high-priest alone having that privilege) and that he has asked for a human sacrifice, and tells them he has desired such a person, naming a man present, who has most probably, on some account or other, rendered himself obnoxious to his ghostly father. The words are no sooner gone out of his mouth, than the devoted wretch is put to death; for his guilt cannot be doubted, after the oracle has pronounced his doom^a.

On this island was seen the figure of a man constructed of basket-work, rudely made, but not ill designed: it was something more than seven feet high, and rather too bulky in proportion to its height. This wicker skeleton was completely covered with feathers, which were white where the

^a Cook, I. 185, 186.

skin was to appear, and black in the parts which it is their custom to paint, or stain, as well as upon the head, which was designed to represent hair. Upon the head also were four protuberances; three in front, and one behind, which the Indians called *tate etc.* little men. The image was called *Manioe*; it was a representation of *Mauwe*, one of their Eatuas, or Gods of the second class; and was said to be the only one of the kind on O-Taheitee^b.

These people pray at sun-rise and sun-set. They have also a number of superstitious practices, in order to conciliate the influence of evil genii^c. *E-Tee*, a chief, who seemed to be the king's prime minister in 1774, very seriously asked Mr. Forster whether they had a God (*Eatua*) in their country, and whether they prayed to him (*epoore?*). When he told him that they acknowledged a Divinity who had made every thing, and was invisible, and that they were accustomed to address their petitions to him, he seemed to be highly pleased, and repeated their words with comments of his own, to several persons who sat round him; seeming thereby to intimate, that the ideas of his countrymen corresponded with theirs in this respect^d.

Their marais are used both as burying-grounds and places of worship; they are approached with the most wonderful expressions of reverence and humility; and this it should seem, not because any thing there is esteemed sacred, but because they there worship an invisible being, for whom they entertain the most reverential respect, although not excited by the hope of reward, or the dread of punishment. Though they do not appear to have any visible object of worship, yet, says captain Cook, this island, and indeed the

Hawkesw. II. 165. ^c Bougainv. 267. ^d Forster, I. 308.

rest that lie near it, have a particular bird, some a heron, and others a king-fisher, to which they pay a particular regard, and concerning which they have some superstitious notions, respecting good or bad fortune, as we have of the swallow and robin-redbreast, and will on no account molest or kill them*. One of these cemetrys, or places of worship, was known to captain Cook, on his first voyage, by the name of Tootahah's marai, then the regent; but when, on his second voyage, after the death of that chief, he called it by that name, *Maratata*, a chief that accompanied the party, interrupted him, intimating, that it was no longer Tootahah's after his death, but was then known as O-Toos marai, the then reigning prince. A fine moral for princes! daily reminding them of mortality whilst they live, and teaching them, that after death they cannot call even that ground their own which their dead corps occupies! The chief and his wife, on passing by it, took their upper garments from their shoulders †. From hence it should seem, that the royal family have a particular marai, and that it always bears the name of the reigning prince.

An Indian, who had snatched away a musket from a sentry whilst on duty, was, by the inhumanity of a midshipman who commanded the guard, pursued and shot. The unhappy fate of this poor fellow gave an opportunity for seeing the manner in which these people treat their dead. They placed the corps in the open air till the bones became quite dry: a shed was erected close by the house where the deceased had resided; it was about fifteen feet long, and eleven broad; one end was left quite open; the other end, and the two sides, were partly enclosed with a sort of wicker-work. The bier was a frame of wood, like that on which the sea-

* Hawkesw. II. 237.

† Forster, I. 314.

beds, called cots, are placed, with a matted bottom, and supported by four posts, at the height of about four feet from the ground. The body was covered first with a mat, and then with white cloth; by the side of it lay a wooden mace, one of their weapons of war; and near the head of it, which lay next to the close end of the shed, lay two cocoa-nut shells; at the other end a bunch of green leaves, with some dried twigs, all tied together, were stuck in the ground, by which lay a stone about as big as a cocoa-nut. Near these lay one of the young plantain-leaves that are used for emblems of peace, and close by it a stone ax. At the open end of the shed also hung, in several strings, a great number of palm-nuts; and without the shed was stuck up in the ground a stem of a plantain-tree, about six feet high, upon the top of which was placed a cocoa-nut shell full of fresh water; against the side of one of the posts hung a small bag, containing a few pieces of bread-fruit ready roasted, which had not been all put in at one time, some being fresh, and other stale. This minute examination of their manner of treating their dead, seemed to be very unwelcome to the natives. The food so placed by the corps is designed as an offering to their Gods. They cast in, near the body, small pieces of cloth, on which the tears and blood of the mourners have been shed, for in their paroxisms of grief it is an universal custom to wound themselves with a shark's tooth. The mourner is always a man; he is dressed in a very singular habit, which is represented in the plate; when the bones are stripped of their flesh, and become dry, they are buried. This regard to their dead is very remarkable; one of the ship's company happening to pull a flower from a tree, which grew on one of their sepulchral inclosures, an Indian came suddenly behind him and struck him; and a party of sailors who were sent to get some stones for ballast for the ship,

ship, had like to have been embroiled with the natives, by pulling down some part of an enclosure of this kind. The shade under which their dead are laid is called *tupapou*; the inclosure in which their bones are deposited is called *morai*; these latter, as has been already related, are also places of worship. As soon as a native of O-Taheitee is known to be dead, the house is filled with relations, who deplore their loss; some by loud lamentations, and some by less clamorous, but more genuine, expressions of grief. Those who are in the nearest degree of kindred, and are really affected by the event, are silent; the rest, are one moment uttering passionate exclamations in a chorus, and the next laughing and talking without the least appearance of concern. In this manner the remainder of the day on which they assemble is spent, and all the succeeding night. On the next morning the body is shrouded in their cloth, and conveyed to the seaside upon a bier, which the bearers support upon their shoulders, attended by the priest, who having prayed over the body, repeats his sentences during the procession. When it arrives at the water's edge, it is set down upon the beach; the priest renews his prayers, and taking up some of the water in his hands, sprinkles it towards the body, but not upon it. It is then carried back forty or fifty yards, and soon after brought again to the beach, where the prayers and sprinkling are repeated. It is thus removed backwards and forwards several times; and while these ceremonies have been performing, a house has been built, and a small space of ground railed in. In the centre of this house, or *tupapou*, as they term it, posts are set up to support the bier, which is at length conveyed thither, and placed upon it; and here the body remains to putrify, till the flesh is wholly wasted from the bones. These houses of corruption are of a size

proportioned to the rank of the person whose body they are to contain. Those allotted to the lower class are just sufficient to cover the bier, and have no railing round them. The largest that was seen was eleven yards long, and such are ornamented according to the abilities and inclination of the surviving kindred, who never fail to lay a profusion of good cloth about the body, and sometimes almost cover the outside of the house. Garlands of the fruit of the palm-nut, or *pandanus*, and cocoa-leaves, twisted by the priests in mysterious knots, with a plant called by them *ethee no morai*, which is particularly consecrated to funeral solemnities, are deposited about the place; provision and water are also left at a little distance. As soon as the body is deposited in the tupapow, the mourning is renewed. The women assemble, and are led to the door by the nearest relation, who strikes a shark's tooth several times into the crown of her head; the blood copiously follows, and is carefully received upon pieces of linen, which are thrown under the bier. The rest of the women follow this example, and the ceremony is repeated at the interval of two or three days, as long as the zeal and sorrow of the parties hold out. The tears also which are shed upon these occasions, are received upon pieces of cloth, and offered as oblations to the dead. Some of the younger people cut off their hair, and that is thrown under the bier with the other offerings. This custom is founded on a notion, that the soul of the deceased, which they believe to exist in a separate state, is hovering about the place where the body is deposited; that it observes the actions of the survivors, and is gratified by such testimonies of their affectionate grief. Whilst these ceremonies are carrying on by the women, the men seem to be wholly insensible of their loss, but two or three days after, they also begin to perform a part. The nearest relations take it in turn to assume the dress, and perform the offices.

The

The chief mourner carries in his hand a long flat stick, the edge of which is set with shark's teeth, and in a phrenzy, which his grief is supposed to have inspired, he runs at all he sees, and if any of them happen to be overtaken, he strikes them most unmercifully with his indented cudgel, which cannot fail to wound them in a dangerous manner. The processions continue at certain intervals for five moons, but are less and less frequent, by a gradual diminution, as the end of that time approaches. When it is expired, what remains of the body is taken down from the bier, and the bones, having been scraped and washed very clean, are buried according to the rank of the person, either within or without a morai. If the deceased was an earee, or chief, his skull is not buried with the rest of the bones, but is wrapped up in fine cloth, and put in a kind of box made for that purpose, which is also placed in the morai. This coffin is called *ewharre no te orometua*, "the house of a teacher, or master." After this the mourning ceases, except some of the women continued to be really afflicted at the loss, and in that case they will suddenly wound themselves with the shark's tooth wherever they happen to be. The ceremonies, however, do not cease with the mourning; for prayers are still said by the priest, and offerings made at the morai. Some of the things, which from time to time are deposited there, are emblematical: a young plantain is said to represent the deceased, and a bunch of feathers the Deity who is invoked. The priest places himself over against the symbol of the God, accompanied by some of the relations, who are furnished with a small offering, and repeats his orison in a set form, consisting of separate sentences; at the same time weaving the leaves of the cocoa-nut into different forms, which he afterwards deposits upon the ground where the bones have been interred: the Deity is then addressed by

a shrill screech, which is used only upon that occasion. When the priest retires, the tuft of feathers is removed, and the provisions left to putrify, or to be devoured by the rats.

This ceremony of mourning as described above, was performed by *Tirope*, one of the wives of *Tubourai Tamaide*, who, when the bleeding from the wounds which she had thus given herself ceased, she looked up with a smile on the company round her, and who had before enquired of her, very earnestly, the cause of her behaviour, without receiving any answer, or having been at all noticed by her. She then began to pick up some small pieces of cloth which she had spread to catch the blood, and having gotten them all together, she went to the shore, and threw them into the sea. She then plunged into the river, and having washed her whole body, returned to the company as cheerful as ever. To add to the singularity of this conduct, the Indians who stood round her all the time that this frantic distress was performing, conversed with great indifference and jocularity.

There is not a more ancient custom handed down to us than that of cutting the body to express grief and distress of mind. In the code of laws delivered by Moses to the Israelites, fourteen hundred years before the Christian æra, this practice is expressly forbidden to that people; "Ye shall not cut yourselves, or make any baldness between the eyes for the dead." Deuteronomy, xiv. 1. Hence it may be supposed that this rite prevailed in Egypt, from whence the Jews derived most of those propensities which were inhibited by their great legislator. We are told likewise, in the book of Kings, of the priests of Baal wounding themselves,

O-TAHEITEE.

121

after they had long waited, in vain, for the supernatural intervention of their idol. D'Arvieux informs us, that the modern Arabs retain the same custom, and that the part they chiefly wound is their arms. The difference in the practise as now prevailing in O-Taheitee and Arabia seems to be, that in the first none but the women make use of it, and in the latter it is confined to the men, and generally used to express their desperate passion for some favourite mistress.

The mourning which is worn here is an head-dress of feathers, the colour of which is consecrated to death, and a veil over the face. This dress is called *eeva*. The whole nation is said to appear thus on the death of their king. The mourning for fathers is very long. The women mourn for their husbands, but not the husbands for their wives^k.

S E C T. X.

An Account of the European Ships that have visited this Island, and the principal Transactions that happened whilst they remained here. Of Oberia, supposed by Captain Wallis to be the Queen of the Island. Of the Trade established with the Natives. Of European Seeds sown here, and the Animals left to stock the Country.

MR. Forster supposes this island to have been visited by Quiros in 1606, and that he gave it the name of *Sagitaria*, but neither the dress and manners of the people; the productions of the earth, or face of the country, as they are described in the account of the voyage and memorial presented to the king of Spain, which are both printed in

^k Harmer's Observations, II, 515. ^k Bougainv. 270.

Mr.

after

Mr. Dalrymple's collection¹, seem to warrant such a supposition; and as the longitude is not laid down by Quiros, no conjecture can with any tolerable datum be formed concerning it; the latitude of Sagitaria indeed agrees with that of O-Tahitee, but in every thing else they seem to differ. There is therefore nothing to prevent our concluding, that the first European ship that ever arrived off these coasts was the Dolphin, captain Wallis, on the 18th of June, 1767.

On first coming among these people, they appeared sometimes disposed to traffic, and immediately forward to attack the ship with stones, which they flung from a sling at a great distance, with wonderful force and dexterity, many of which were two pound weight. After a traffic had been established between the Dolphin's people and the natives, by which the former received hogs, fowls, and fruit, in exchange for knives, nails, beads, and other trinkets; a number of large double canoes, with twelve or fifteen men in each, put off towards the ship loaded with pebble stones; these drew together very near the ship, some of the Indians on board them singing in a hoarse voice, some blowing conches, and some playing on a flute. After some time, a man who sat on a canopy that was fixed on one of the large double canoes, made signs that he wished to come up to the ship's side. The captain signified his consent; when he came alongside, the Indian gave one of the sailors a bunch of red and yellow feathers, making signs that he should carry it to the captain, who received it with expressions of amity, and got ready some trinkets to present him in return; but instead of proceeding to the ship, they put off to a little distance, and upon

¹ Vol. I. page 169, &c.

throwing

ch a sup-
y Quiros,
med con-
with that
to differ.
ding, that
coasts was
ne, 1767.

y appeared
ately for-
they flung
erful force
nd weight.
e Dolphin's
er received
ives, nails,
double ca-
off towards.
w together
them sing-
and some
no sat on a
ble canoes,
s side. The
ngside, the
yellow fea-
he captain,
got ready
ead of pro-
, and upon

throwing

throwing up a branch of the cocoa-nut-tree, an universal shout resounded from the canoes, and instantly they moved towards the ship, and poured a volley of stones into her from all quarters; a great part of the ship's company were then sick, and in a feeble condition; nothing could repel such a formidable attack, but the desperate resort to fire-arms; orders were therefore given to fire the musquetry, and two of the quarter-deck guns loaded with small shot. This salute threw the Indians into confusion, which, however, they presently recovered, and renewed the attack. The captain therefore found it necessary for the safety of his ship and men, to order some of the great guns to play on shore, at a place where a number of canoes were taking in men, and pushing off with great spirit towards the ship. By this time there were not less than three hundred canoes about the ship, containing at least two thousand men, besides many thousands on shore, and canoes arriving from every quarter. It was not long before the effects of the ship's guns convinced the assailants of the inequality of the contest; and what tended greatly to intimidate them, was, a shot from a ship's gun, which hit a canoe that appeared to have a chief on board, so full as to cut it asunder; upon which the whole fleet dispersed in such haste, that in half an hour there was not a single canoe to be seen; and the people who had before crowded the shores, dispersed themselves precipitately over the hills. At length, a submissive tender of peace was made to the lieutenant who went on shore with the marines. An old man presented himself on the opposite side of a river a long which they were passing, and signs being made him that he should cross it, he approached the company, creeping on his hands and knees; but Mr. Furneaux, the lieutenant who commanded, raised him up, and whilst he stood trembling, shewed him the stones that were thrown at the ship,

ship,

ship, and endeavoured to make him apprehend, that if the natives attempted no mischief, they need not apprehend any annoyance. He ordered two of the water casks to be filled, to shew the Indian that they wanted water, and produced some hatchets and other things, to intimate that they wished to trade for provisions; after which, and having confirmed his professions of friendship by presenting the old man with a hatchet, some nails, beads, and other trifles, he re-embarked his men on board the boats, having first stuck up a staff on which was hoisted a pendant. As soon as the boats were put off, the old man went up to the pendant, and danced round it a considerable time; he then retired, but soon returned with some green boughs, which he threw down, and retired a second time. It was not long before he appeared again, with about a dozen of the natives, who putting themselves in a supplicating posture, all approached the pendant in a slow pace; but the wind happening to wave it when they were close to it, they retreated with great precipitation. After standing some time at a distance, and gazing at it, they went away; but in a short time came back with two large hogs alive, which they laid down at the foot of the staff, and again taking courage, they began to dance. When they had performed this ceremony, they brought the hogs down to the water side, launched a canoe, and put them on board. The old man, who had a large white beard, then embarked with them alone, and brought them to the ship; when he came along-side, he made a set speech, and afterwards handed in several green plantain leaves one by one, uttering a sentence in a solemn tone, with each of them, as he delivered it; after which he sent on board the two hogs, and then turning round pointed to the land. The captain then ordered some presents to be given him, but he would accept of nothing, and

and soon after put off his canoe and went on shore. The treaty of peace thus ratified, was, however, soon broken; for a party going on shore for water, was attacked by a large number of Indians, before whom they thought it prudent to retreat, leaving behind them the water-casks, which the natives seized with great exultation. Not content with this success, they got into their canoes, and pushed towards the ship; they were immediately fired at with such effect, that they dispersed as fast as possible; after which, to convince them of the force against which they opposed themselves, some of the ship's guns were fired into the woods at a considerable distance; and on an hill where several thousands were collected, as they imagined, in perfect security. Two of the balls fell close by a tree where a great number of these people were sitting; and struck them with such terror and consternation, that in less than two minutes not one of them was to be seen. To make the victory more decisive, the carpenter was dispatched to the coast to destroy all the canoes that had been run on shore: more than fifty were thus demolished; some of which were fifty feet long and three broad, and lashed together. Not long after, ten of the natives came out of the wood with green boughs in their hands, which they stuck up near the water-side, and retired. After a short time they appeared again, and brought with them several hogs with their legs tied, which they placed near the green boughs, and retired a second time; after which they brought down several more hogs, and some dogs; with their fore-legs tied over their heads; and going again into the woods, brought back with them several bundles of their cloth; all these they arranged upon the bezeh, and called to those in the ship to fetch these their peace-offerings away; which was done; and, in return, hatchets, nails, and other things were left, which when the Indians

Indians came down, they carried off with great signs of joy. The casks were now returned, which the crew, on getting possession of, filled with water and conveyed to the ship. The next day a conference took place between the old man and the waterers on shore. They endeavoured to express to him that the Indians had been the aggressors, and that the mischief done them was merely in self-defence. The old man seemed to understand what was meant, but would not admit the doctrine; but he addressed the people who were gathered at a distance, pointed to the stones, slings, and bags with great emotion; and sometimes his looks, gestures, and voice were so furious as to be frightful. By degrees these jealousies and apprehensions wore away, and the natives received their guests with great cordiality; the old man was made the broker on the part of the Indians, and the gunner acted in that capacity for the crew; by which regulation the productions of the island were purchased in great abundance. What served to strengthen this disposition to amity among the natives was a trivial accident. As the ship's surgeon was walking with his gun, a wild duck flew over his head, which he shot, and it fell dead among some of the natives who were on the other side of the river. This threw them into a panic, and they all ran away, but stopping at some distance, the surgeon made signs to them to bring the duck over; this one of them at last ventured to do, and pale and trembling laid it down at his feet. Several other ducks at that instant flying over the spot where they were standing, he fired again, and fortunately brought down three more. This incident gave the natives such a dread of a gun, that if a musket was pointed at a thousand of them, they would all run away like a flock of sheep ^m.

^m Hawkesw. I. 270.

A few months after captain Wallis had left O-Tahitee, M. de Bougainville arrived with two ships, being about to circumnavigate the world. He staid here eleven days. In general a good understanding was kept up with the natives, but in one rencounter four of the Indians lost their lives. In April 1769, captain Cook arrived here in the Endeavour bark, in order to observe the transit of Venus over the sun, which happened in the June following. On board this ship were embarked Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Mr. Green the astronomer, the latter of whom unfortunately fell a prey to the pestilent air of Batavia on his return home. They staid on this island three months. In August 1773, captain Cook again visited this inviting spot in the Resolution, with captain Furneaux in the Adventure; and having procured a rather scanty supply of provisions, sailed from hence on a second course towards the South Pole; after being eight months on this expedition, he returned without the Adventure the 22d of April following, and on the 14th of May took leave of these happy islanders, amongst whom he had become, as it were, an adopted brother. When the Resolution first arrived here, the natives gave intimation of a Spanish ship which had been there a few months before, and it was afterwards found that Don Juan de Langara y Harcarta, who sailed from the port of Callao in Peru, had visited O-Tahitee.

When captain Wallis had been here about a fortnight, a tall woman of majestic deportment, with a pleasing countenance, was introduced to him by the gunner on board the ship, his health not permitting him to go on shore. When she first entered the ship she seemed to be under no re-

strait, either from diffidence or fear, but behaved with an easy freedom that betokened conscious superiority and habitual command. The captain presented her with a large blue mantle, that reached from her shoulders to her feet, which he tied on with ribbons; also a looking-glass, several sorts of beads, and other things, which she accepted very gracefully. From this introduction an intimacy took place, the captain being then just able to go on shore, the next day visited her at her house. Whilst he was proceeding thither, a great number of the natives thronged about them, who all dispersed upon this lady's merely waving of her hand, without speaking a word. When they came near her house, a great number of both sexes came out to meet her, whom she presented to the captain, intimating by signs, that they were her relations, and taking hold of his hand she directed them to kiss it. They then entered the house, which covered a piece of ground three hundred and twenty-seven yards long, and forty-two broad. It consisted of a roof thatched with palm-leaves, and raised on thirty-nine pillars on each side, and fourteen in the middle; the ridge of the thatch on the inside was thirty-nine feet high, and the sides of the house to the edge of the roof were twelve feet high, all below the roof being open. As soon as they entered this erection, their royal hostess made them sit down, and then calling four young girls, she assisted them to take off the captain's shoes, draw down his stockings, and pull off his coat, and then directed them to smooth down the skin, and gently chafe it with their hands. The same operation was also performed on Mr. Furneaux, the first lieutenant, and the purser, but upon none of those who appeared to be in health. While these good offices were performing, the surgeon, who had walked till he was very warm, took off his wig to cool and refresh himself, on which a sudden exclamation of one of the

the

the Indians drew the attention of the rest, and in a moment every eye was fixed on the prodigy, and every operation was suspended. The whole assembly stood motionless in silent astonishment, which could not have been more strongly expressed, if they had discovered that their guest's limbs had been screwed on to his trunk. In a short time, however, the young women who were chasing the sick resumed their employment, and having continued it for about half an hour dressed them again. This operation was found very beneficial. In a little time after *Oberoa* (for by that name doctor Hawkesworth distinguishes her, but Mr. Förster calls her *O-Poorea*) ordered some bails of Indian cloth to be brought out, with which she cloathed the captain after the fashion of the country. When they departed, a large sow big with pig was ordered to the boat, and *Oberoa*, or *O-Poorea*, waited on the captain to the shore herself. He had been carried in the morning, by her direction, in the arms of some of her attendants, but as he now chose to walk, she took him herself by the arm, and whenever they came to a splash of water or dirt, she lifted him over with as little difficulty as a man would lift a child. This princess afterwards made frequent presents, and often went on board, but she never received any thing in return by way of barter. Captain Wallis shewed a reflecting telescope to this lady; after she had admired its structure, he endeavoured to make her comprehend its use; and fixing it so as to command several distant prospects with which she was well acquainted, but could not reach them with the naked eye, he brought her to look through it. As soon as she saw them she started back with astonishment, and directing her eye as the glass was pointed, stood some time wrapt in wonder; she then looked through the glass again, and again sought in vain with the naked eye for the objects

which the telescope discovered. As they by turns vanished or re-appeared, her countenance and gestures discovered a strong mixture of surprize and satisfaction ^o. At length, after an intimacy had been for some time established, her new guest intimated to her his intention of departing; she received this information with great concern; but when she found her persuasions to keep him longer were ineffectual, on the day of his departure she visited him on board the ship; when the anchor was weighed, and the ship under sail, with extreme reluctance she got into the boat, where she sat weeping with inconsolable sorrow. The captain presented her with many things which he imagined would be useful to her, as well as some for ornament. She silently accepted of all, but took little notice of any thing. A fresh breeze then springing up, a last farewell was taken, "with such tendernefs of affection and grief," says the captain, "as filled both my heart and my eyes ^p".

When the Endeavour arrived here two years afterwards, this lady is again brought forward on the canvas. She is described as about forty years of age, tall, and robustly made; her skin white, and a countenance bespeaking good sense and strong feelings. A child's doll was the present that most captivated her fancy; and even *Tootabah*, who has been already introduced to the reader ^q, and who was at that time regent of the island, gave such evident marks of displeasure at the lady's possessing such an envied prize, that it was found necessary, to conciliate the favour of the chief-tain, by a present of another doll ^r.

Mr. Banks one morning paid an early visit to this lady, and was told that she was still asleep under the awning of

^o Hawkesw. I. 276.

^p Ib.

^q Page 108.

^r Hawkesw. II. 107.

her canoe. Presuming on the gallantry established here, he proceeded thither to call her up, but looking into her chamber he saw an handsome young fellow sharing her bed. He thereupon retired, but was told that such intercourse was not considered as scandalous. This youth was about twenty-five years of age, and called *Obadæ*; he had been singled out by this lady as the object of her private regard. O-Poorea, however, with all her princely endowments, was yet tainted with the general leaven of pilfering, so predominant in these islanders. A party of six from the ship paying a visit to Tootahah, dispersed themselves different ways at night to seek lodging: when they assembled in the morning, every one, doctor Solander excepted, had had some part or other of his apparel stolen. Captain Cook had lost his stockings, though he had not slept at all. Mr. Banks had been offered a place in the same canoe with Oberea, who very kindly insisted on taking his cloaths into her possession, lest they should be stolen; but when he awoke his cloaths was not to be found; and notwithstanding the counterfeit solicitude of the lady, and of Tootahah, his coat and waistcoat could not be recovered, which occasioned strong suspicions of the regent and princess being assisting in the robbery^s.

O-Poorea had a husband named *Oamo*, but they had been long separated by mutual consent, after she had brought him a son and a daughter; the boy, whose name was *Terridiri*, was about seven years of age, and the girl about sixteen; and it was understood that a marriage was to take place between this brother and sister as soon as the boy became of proper age; so that nearness of kin seems to be no bar to marriage in this country. Doctor Hawkesworth describes this boy as heir to the sovereignty of the island, but further informa-

^s Hawkesw. II. 133.

^t Vol. II. page 154.

tion concerning these matters has shewn that to be a mistake. He was, most probably, the lord of the district where they resided.

When the Resolution lay here in 1773, we find poor O-Poorea thrust quite into the back ground of the piece. Lieutenant Pickersgill, who had been particularly noticed by this lady in the former voyage, when Mr. Banks and doctor Solander were on board, no sooner arrived at that part of the island where she resided, than she went to pay him a visit. But alas, she was then stripped of all those insignia of greatness, which had once rendered her conspicuous in story, and august even in the eyes of Europeans ^u. The wars between the two peninsulas had reduced her, as well as the whole district in which she dwelt, to a state of penury, so that she complained to the lieutenant that she was poor (teetee) and had not a hog to give her friends. Those on whom fortune frowns seldom receive long visits; and poor O-Poorea would have been totally forgotten, if on the return of the Resolution in April the next year, the fame of the red feathers which they had procured at the Friendly Isles had not drawn her from her retreat, and constrained her, poverty-stricken as she was, to pay a visit to her former intimates. Concluding that it was proper to renew her acquaintance with a gift, she found means to bring with her two hogs, which were presented to the captain. Even thus obscured, some vestiges of her former greatness remained. According to Mr. Forster, she had yet "an eye to threaten and command," and a free and noble deportment. Her stay on board was but short, as her former consequence was vanished. Having made particular enquiries after her friends in the Endeavour, and received some presents of feathers, to procure which she

^u Forster, I. 338.

very frankly told them was the object of her visit; she returned on shore in her canoe.

Whilst M. de Bougainville continued here, a very singular circumstance happened. On board his own ship, the *Boudeuse*, was M. de Commercon, a gentleman who went the voyage to collect natural knowledge; he had a servant named Baré, who, during the voyage, had attended on his master with unwearied assiduity; he had rendered himself an expert botanist, by accompanying his master in his botanical researches, amidst the snows and frozen mountains of the straits of Magelhaens, on which excursions he had even carried provisions, arms, and herbals, with so much strength and patience, that the naturalist had given him the name of his "beast of burden." When M. de Commercon went on shore at O-Taheitee, Baré followed him with the herbal under his arm. No sooner had he set foot on shore, than the men of O-Taheitee surrounded him, crying out, "it is a woman," and were proceeding to give her their fashionable welcome, and it was with difficulty that they could be restrained from accomplishing their purpose. For some time before there had been a report in both ships of the same kind; however, whilst they remained at O-Taheitee, this point was not absolutely proved; but, about a month afterwards Baré acknowledged her sex to M. de Bougainville. With her face bathed in tears she informed him, that she had hired herself to her master at Rochefort; that she had before served a Geneva gentleman in the capacity of a valet at Paris; that she was born in Burgundy, became an orphan, and having lost a law-suit which she had depending, was reduced to great distress, which urged her to the resolution of disguising her sex; that knowing M. de Commercon

was going round the world, her curiosity led her to make the voyage in quality of his servant. M. de Bougainville adds, that she always behaved on board with the most scrupulous modesty. He describes this extraordinary female as about twenty-six or twenty-seven years of age; her person passable, but neither ugly nor handsome. Whether she lived to return to France we are not told; her master remained on the Isle of France, where the two ships touched on their return, to acquaint himself with the natural history of that, and the adjacent islands, but nothing is said of his faithful attendant. —As these islanders seem, by this instance, to have such superior skill in the sexual system, it might be no incurious enquiry, whether Omai, whilst in England, was ever introduced to the celebrated chevalier D'Eon, whose equivocal sex was much speculated upon for some time,

Several Indians, who appeared, by their dress and behaviour, to be of superior rank, were entertained by captain Wallis with particular attention. In order to discover what present would most gratify them, he laid down before them a Johannes, a guinea, a crown piece, a Spanish dollar, a few shillings, some new halfpence, and two large nails, making signs that they should take what they liked best. The nails were first seized with great eagerness, and then a few of the halfpence, but the silver and gold they neglected^w.

Among the chiefs who were most intimate with the gentlemen who came in the Endeavour, was Toubourai Tamai, who has been before spoken of*. One day Mr. Banks received a hasty message, informing him that the poor chief was dying of poison, which some of the ship's company had given him. He sat out immediately, and found

^w Hawkefw. I. 280

* Page 75.

his Indian friend leaning his head against a post, in an attitude of the utmost languor and despondency; he had just before brought up a folded leaf which he had swallowed, and which those about him said contained some of the poison, which was producing his death. Mr. Banks was not a little pleased to find, on opening this deadly portion, that it was nothing more than a chew of tobacco, which having been given to him, he had swallowed. Whilst the leaf, and its contents, were examining, the poor despairing Indian looked up to Mr. Banks with the most piteous aspect. By the help of cocoa-nut milk, of which he drank plentifully, he was soon relieved from his sickness, and the apprehensions of immediate death. At another time, this chief being visited by Mr. Banks, suddenly seized the gun which his guest had in his hand, cocked it, and holding it up in the air drew the trigger, but it happened only to flash in the pan. As it was highly proper to keep these people in ignorance of the use of fire-arms, this liberty was severely reprov'd by Mr. Banks. The crest-fallen chief bore the reprimand very patiently, but his visitor had no sooner left him, than he sat off, with all his family and furniture, to a remote part of the island. His friendship and influence were of too much consequence in supplying the ship with provisions, to suffer this misunderstanding to continue. Mr. Banks, therefore, determin'd to follow him, and adjust the difference. He found him sitting in the middle of a large circle of people, himself apparently absorb'd in grief and despair, and the countenance of all around him betokening the same sensations. On Mr. Banks's entering the circle, a woman expressed her trouble, by striking a shark's tooth into her head several times, till it was covered with blood; but the endeavours of Mr. Banks to dissipate this

^y Hawkefw. II. 103.

general gloom were not ineffectual, and the same friendly intercourse was established as before: the chief and his retinue returned to their former habitation, and the whole was entirely forgotten^a.

One Sunday, when divine service was performed on shore, the same chief, and his wife Tomia, were persuaded to attend. During the whole service they very attentively observed the behaviour of Mr. Banks, and very exactly imitated it; standing, sitting, or kneeling, as they saw him do. They seemed to be apprehensive that they were employed about something serious and important, by their calling to the Indians that were without to be silent; yet when the service was over, neither of them asked any questions, nor would they attend to any attempt that was made to explain what had been done^a.

Towhah, a sensible old chief, whose oratorical abilities have been already related^b, invited Mr. Hodges, the painter, and the younger Mr. Forster, into his canoe, in which they accompanied the old man and his wife to the district of the island called Parree, which was their place of residence. In their passage thither the old man asked a variety of questions relating to the nature and constitution of the country from whence these wonderful strangers came. He concluded that Mr. Banks, whom he had seen a few years before, could be no less than the king's brother, and that captain Cook was high-admiral. The information that was given him was received with the greatest marks of surprize and attention; but when he was told that in England there were neither bread-fruit nor cocoa-nut trees, he seemed to think but

^a Hawkefw. II. 126.

^a Hawkefw. II. 127.

^b Page 80.

meanly of it, even after all its other advantages were circumstantially enumerated^d.

The rates at which a traffic was carried on with the natives were, a spike nail for a small pig; a smaller nail for a fowl; a hatchet for a hog; and twenty cocoa-nuts, or bread-fruit, for a middling sized nail^e.

This island, which in the years 1767 and 1768, abounded with hogs and fowls, in the latter end of August 1773, (which is the beginning of their spring) was so ill supplied with these animals, that scarce any consideration could induce the owners to part with them. The few they had at that time among them, seemed to be at the disposal of the kings. During a stay of seventeen days, the two ships procured but twenty-four hogs, half of which number came from the two kings themselves. Necessity seems to have forced the people to content themselves with scanty means of subsistence at certain seasons; and no time of the year is more likely to be severely felt than that of spring, when their winter stores are exhausted, and a new crop is not yet come up. Mahine, who accompanied captain Cook in one of his attempts to penetrate towards the South-Pole, and of whom more will be said in the next section, frequently used to mention, that even these opulent Indians, sometimes, though rarely, felt the inconveniences of a dry or barren year, and are obliged, during some months, to have recourse to fern-roots, the bark of various trees, and the fruit of wild bushes, to satisfy the cravings of hunger^f. But this scarcity of hogs after all, was, most probably, more pretended than real. The natives were very anxious to keep them out of sight; and whenever any of the gentlemen of the ship

^d Forster, II. 79, 80.
^e Forster, II. 408.

^e Parkinson, 21.

^f Cook, I. 182.

enquired

Page 80.
meanly

enquired for them they seemed uneasy, and either said they had none, or that they belonged to the king; but great numbers were seen confined in pigsties, almost by every hut. But by seeming not to know where any were, or not to care for them, the confidence which the people placed in their guests was greatly increased. It was, however, plain, that the war between the two peninsulas had been distressing to that part of the large one where the ships touched. But on the return of the Resolution in April 1774, (the autumn in those parts) no traces of the former distress remained. The whole country was a scene of plenty, where numbers of hogs grazed round every house, which none of the natives attempted to conceal as before.

Captain Cook found the best articles of traffic here to be axes, hatchets, spikes, large nails, looking-glasses, knives and beads^h; but on his last visit matters took a different turn. From the king down to the meanest of his subjects, a prodigious fondness prevailed for red feathers, which had been procured, in large quantities, at the Friendly-Islands. With these they ornamented the dress of their warriors. Among other innovations which this article of merchandize occasioned, a great revolution was brought about in the connections which the women had formed with the sailors, and happy was he who had laid in a sufficient stock of this valuable article; he was sure to have the women crowding about him, and might single out the most engaging. They called them *oora*, their value here seems to be equal to jewels in Europe; especially those which are called *ooravine*, which grow on the head of the green paroquet; and the natives were such good judges as to know very well how to distinguish one sort from another. Many attempts were

^g Forster, I. 287.

^h Hawkeſw. II. 183.

made to impose dyed feathers upon them, but without success. In short, their rage for possessing these rarities was such, as to shake their most established principles; for whatever liberties some unmarried girls allowed themselves with impunity, the married state was preserved inviolate, until this seducing merchandize appeared. So great was the force of the temptation, that a chief actually offered his wife to captain Cook; and the lady, by her husband's order, attempted to captivate him, by an artful display of all her charms, seemingly in such a careless manner as many a woman would be at a loss to imitate, but this conduct was discountenanced in the strongest manner. A single little feather was a more valuable present than a bead or a nail; and a very small bit of cloth, closely covered with them produced such ecstatic joy in him who received it, as might be excited in an European, who should unexpectedly find the diamond of the Great Mogul. One chief brought on board the ship his monstrous helmet of five feet high, which he sold for red feathers; and targets, without number, were bought by almost every sailor in the ship; even their curious and singular mourning dresses, which in captain Cook's former voyage were so highly prized, that every thing that could be offered in exchange for one was deemed inadequate, became vendible when the barter was feathers. Not less than ten of these mourning dresses were purchased. Captain Cook presented one, on his return, to the British Museum (See an exact representation of it in the plate)¹. In consequence of *Mahine's* relation of his adventures, (see an account of him in the following section) the chiefs became importunate for curiosities from *Tongo-Tabboo*, (Amsterdam); *Whyhue*, (Easter-Island); and *Waitahoo*, (St. Christina), instead of English goods, in exchange for their provisions; in this

¹ Cook, I. 352 Forster, I. 52, 58, 71, 72.

respect resembling the predilections of civilized nations. The baskets, clubs, and painted cloth of Easter-Island, pleased them excessively; and they were eager to possess the mats of Amsterdam, though generally they perfectly resembled their own manufacture. The sailors, therefore, frequently took advantage of their disposition, and gave them the same mats under another name, which they had formerly purchased at O-Taheitee, and in this deception they succeeded better than in colouring feathers. Thus there is a similarity in the general inclinations of human nature, and particularly in the desires of all nations that are not in a state of savage barbarism^k.

Captain Wallis planted several sorts of garden-seeds in this island, together with the stones of peaches, cherries, and plums, as well as limes, lemons, and oranges; the peas sprang up in a very flourishing state, but there were no remains of them when captain Cook left the island. Two years after captain Cook put some melon-seeds, and other plants, into the ground, but all except some mustard-seed failed; owing, it was supposed, to their having been sealed up so as entirely to exclude all fresh air^l. M. de Bougainville presented the chief of the district in which he was with a couple of turkies, and some ducks and drakes; he had likewise a piece of ground dug, in which he sowed some wheat, barley, oats, rice, maize, onions, and pot-herbs of various kinds, of the success of which he entertained great hopes, as the people appeared to love husbandry, and would easily be led to make advantage of their soil, which is the most luxuriant possible^m. But on captain Cook's arrival in 1773, he found none of the various seeds that had been sown by Europeans had succeeded except pumpkins, and for

^k Forster, II. 75, 76.

^l Hawkesw. II. 123.

^m Bougainv. 229.

these the natives have not, as may well be supposed, the least esteem °.

Captain Furneaux gave two goats to the king O-Too, which the next year were found to have succeeded very well. The ewe, soon after, had had two female kids, which were then so far grown as to be ready to propagate, and the old ewe was again with kid; the whole brood was in excellent order, extremely sleek and well fed, and their hair as soft as silk; the people seemed to be very fond of them, so that it may be expected that in a few years they will afford a new and most valuable article of food, and in a course of time, may spread over all the islands in this ocean. Some sheep were likewise left, but all died soon after, except one. This country has likewise been furnished with a stock of cats, no less than twenty having been left here, besides what were left at Ulietea and Huaheine°, of which neighbouring islands we are presently to speak. But a more effectual supply of sheep, together with some black cattle, were embarked for this fertile country, on board the Resolution and Enterprize, which ships sailed on a fresh voyage to the South-Sea, in July 1776, with a view to make further discoveries, by navigating parts hitherto unexplored.

In captain Cook's voyage in the Endeavour, a marine, named Gibson, was so much delighted with this island, that he made an attempt to conceal himself, and become a naturalized O-Taheitean; but he was soon traced to his retreat, and brought back to his former station. This man had made a greater proficiency in the language than any other seaman on board, which greatly recommended him to the natives. It appeared by the information which the Indians

° Cook, I. 183.

° Cook, I. 353. Forster, II. 56.

gave, that one of the crew of the Spanish ship which had visited the island had deserted, and then resided at *Tiarrabou*, or *O-Taheitee* &c; that he was much esteemed by *Abeatua*, the king of the smaller peninsula, with whom he constantly associated. But when the natives found that this intelligence excited the curiosity of their guests to see this man, they grew reserved and equivocal in their discourse, and at length told them that he was dead. Notwithstanding which assertion, some of the ship's company had seen a man, resembling an European in colour and features, whom they spoke to, but he hastily retreated among the crowd, and returned no answer. This European was described by the name of *O-Pabootee* P.

When the *Resolution* was about to leave this island the second time, and the gentlemen on board were to take their final leave of these agreeable islanders, *O-Too* went on board the ship to dinner; he solicited the elder Mr. Forster, and Mr. Hodges, to stay at *O-Taheitee*, and promised, with great gravity, to make them areas of two rich districts. When the ship was getting under sail, an Irish sailor, who had settled a plan of escape with some of the natives, slipped overboard with great secrecy, and being a good swimmer made towards the shore; but he was discovered, pursued, and brought back. This man had been a sailor in the Dutch service, and captain Cook had taken him on board at Batavia, in his former voyage in 1770; he was, at this time, a gunner's mate on board the *Resolution*; he had neither friends nor relations, it seems, to attach him to any particular part of the world, therefore his wish to make this spot his residence was not very surprizing: though it is highly probable, that if he had succeeded in his attempt, having been long

P Forster, I. 102, 108, 321. . . . 9 Cook, I. 345 Forster, II. 112.

accustomed

accustomed to an active life, the insipid uniformity of that for which he had changed it, would, in time, have become intolerable. He would soon have found, that the manners of these people were entirely different from those to which he had ever been habituated; that there was no medium of language by which reciprocal ideas might be freely, and as it were, insensibly communicated: but to a man harrassed by the severities of sea-service, and intent on procuring a cessation from fatigue and hardships, these considerations did not present themselves; but they would, most probably, have been very sensibly felt, after a very short possession of the Paradise he had pictured to himself; and he would then have pined for the variegated life of activity which he had rashly renounced. These are, at least, probable conjectures, and perhaps no good reason can be assigned why an European should make the manners of an Indian congenial with his own, for any length of time, any more than that an Indian should conceive a lasting relish for an European way of life; and that the latter is not disposed to do this, appears from a very striking and well known example in an Hottentot, who was taken young from his native country, and brought up among Europeans; yet found the *amor patriæ* so predominant when he grew to manhood, that the only request he made was, to be taken back to his natural associates; and, when arrived, he voluntarily divested himself of every badge of civilization, and returned, with a most hearty relish, to his indigenous manners. Omai also, when in England, discovered the same natural propensity very strongly. But it must be owned, that there is something to gratify pride in one case, if that were sufficient for all the purposes of enjoyment: an European among Indians is looked up to with admiration by every one, whereas an

Fennig's System of Geography, I. 376.

Indian

Indian among Europeans feels his inferiority, and wishes to regain his wonted level.

It was on the 14th of May 1774, when the Resolution took its last departure from O-Taheitee; a brisk gale wafted them swiftly from that hospitable asylum to a South-Sea navigator. They were still contemplating its beautiful scenery, when an unexpected object on the decks attracted their attention; this was no other than one of the finest women of the country, who had resolved to go in the ship to *Raieta* (*Ulietea*), her native island. Her parents, from whom she had eloped to O-Taheitee, with a favourite lover some years before, were still living, and the force of natural affection urged her, irresistibly, to visit them; she entertained no apprehensions of their anger, but relied on receiving a kind reception. The girl was dressed in a suit of cloaths belonging to one of the officers, and was so much pleased with her new garments, that she wore them on shore when she landed. She dined with the officers without the least scruple, and had the liberal sentiments of a citizen of the world. "With a proper education," says Mr. Forster, "she might have shone as a woman of genius, even in Europe; since, without the advantage of a cultivated understanding, her great vivacity, joined to very polite manners, already were sufficient to make her company supportable^s." At *Huabene*, which was the first island the ship touched at, this poor girl's European dress tempted a number of the natives to set upon her, when she was least on her guard; they proceeded to strip her of her cloaths with great dispatch, but some of the ship's company coming by, interrupted them in their scheme, and rescued the fair adventurous fugitive from her boisterous plunderers. This accident gave her so hearty

^s Vol. II. page 114, 115.

a fright,

a fright, that she never afterwards ventured out of the ship alone, until she arrived at the place of her destination.

S E C T. XI.

The History of TUPIA and AOTOUROU, who embarked with Captain Cook and M. de Bougainville, for Europe. Of MAHINE, or OEDIDEE, who made a Voyage towards the South-Pole with Captain Cook; and of OMAI, who came to England with Captain Furneaux.

AMONG the natives who associated most with the gentlemen of the ship in 1769, was one named Tupia; he had been the first minister of Oberea, when her power was at its height; he was also the chief *taboua*, or priest of the island, and of course well skilled in the religion of his country; to which he added a knowledge of navigation, and an acquaintance with the number and situation of the neighbouring islands. When the ship was about to leave the island, he begged to accompany the gentlemen on their voyage, which request was readily complied with, as by means of a person so intelligent and accomplished, much information concerning the customs and manners of these people might be obtained; he therefore went on board, attended by a boy about thirteen years of age, his servant, named *Tayeto*. When the ship weighed anchor the Indians on board took their leaves, and wept with a decent and silent sorrow, in which there was something extremely striking and tender. The people in the canoes, on the contrary, seemed to vie with each other in the loudness of their lamentations, in which there was, perhaps, more affectation than real concern. Tupia sustained himself in this scene with a firmness and resolution truly admirable. He wept indeed, but the effort that he made to conceal his tears, concurred with them to do him honour. He sent his last present to

³ Forster, II. 120. ⁴ He is called *Toobaiah* by Sydney Parkinson, page 67.

Potomai, a favourite mistress of one of the chiefs, and then went with Mr. Banks to the mast-head, waving to the canoes as long as they continued in sight.

When the Endeavour arrived within six leagues of *Huabine*, it fell calm; *Tupia* then addressed a prayer with much fervour, *O, Tane, ara, mai, matai, ora mai matai*, which signifies “*Tane*, (the God of his *morai*, or place of worship) send to me, or come to me, with a fair wind;” but his prayer not immediately proving effectual, he said, *Woor eede waow*, “I am angry.” On his arrival at *Huabine* he repaired to an adjacent *morai*, and returned thanks to *Tane* for his safe passage, whom he presented with two handkerchiefs, and some other trifles; and the surgeon who attended him he presented with a hog^u.

Nothing could be more engaging than the friendly disposition which this kind of adopted European discovered in the further progress of the voyage; so long as his health continued, he was of the most essential service, as he spoke the language generally understood at all the islands in the South-Sea where the Endeavour touched, and was extremely assiduous in removing the apprehensions of the natives concerning their wonderful guests, and conciliating their confidence and good-will. By the time that the ship had reached the eastern coast of New South-Wales, about eleven months from leaving O-Taheitee, *Tupia*'s health began to decline, and strong appearances of the sea-scurvy were visible on his body; all the relief which landing on that inhospitable country could render him was obtained, as he was entirely unaccustomed to the manner of life on board a ship, and the diet on so long a voyage being very different from his former food, his health had gradually decayed; but a short residence on shore, and subsisting chiefly on the fruits of the

^t Parkinson, 67.

^u Ib. 68.

country, contributed very much to his recovery. But when the ship arrived at Batavia two months after, his health was in a very declining state, having a bilious disorder, for which he obstinately refused to take any medicines. Before he landed he was quite lifeless, and extremely dejected, but he no sooner entered the town than he seemed to be animated with a new soul. The houses, carriages, streets, people, and a multiplicity of other objects, all new, which rushed upon him at once, produced an effect like the sudden and secret power that is imagined of fascination. The O-Tahitian boy, his attendant, expressed his wonder and delight, in the most extravagant manner; he danced along the street in a kind of ecstacy, examining every object with a restless and eager curiosity. One of the first things which Tupia remarked, was the various dresses of the passing multitude, concerning which he made many enquiries; and when he was told that in this place, where people of many different nations were assembled, every one wore the habit of his own country, he desired that he might conform to the custom, and appear in that of O-Tahitee. He had not been above a week on shore, before the baneful influence of the climate had operated powerfully on his shattered constitution. After the flow of spirits which the novelties of the place produced upon his first landing, he sunk on a sudden, and grew every day worse and worse; Tayeto too was seized with an inflammation on his lungs. A tent was pitched for him on the least baneful spot of this pestiferous island, where both the sea and land breezes blew directly upon him, and he expressed great satisfaction in his situation. Mr. Banks, although in a very broken state of health, attended on him with the utmost solicitude. In about ten days afterwards the poor Indian boy Tayeto died, and Tupia sunk at once with the loss of him, and survived him only a day or two, for he loved him with the tenderness of a parent. They had both

v Hawkesw. Vol. II. page 216. Vol. III. 715. & seq.

made great progress in the English language, in which they were greatly assisted by Mr. Green, the astronomer. When Tayeto was seized with the fatal disorder, as if certain of his approaching dissolution, he frequently said to those about him, *tyau mate oee*, "my friends, I am dying." He took any medicines that were offered to him; but Tupia gave himself up to grief, regretting, with extreme bitterness of heart, that he had left his own country.

He to his country turn'd with restless pain,
And dragg'd at each remove a length'n'd chain *.

When he heard of Tayeto's death he was quite inconsolable, frequently crying out Tayeto! Tayeto! They were both buried in the island of Eadam †. Such was the much to be regretted end of this intelligent and friendly Indian.

When M. de Bougainville was preparing to sail, *Ereti*, a chief, came on board to take an affectionate leave of his guests. He brought with him a young man whom he presented to the commander, giving him to understand that his name was *Aotourou*, and that he desired to accompany them on their voyage. He then presented him to each of the officers in particular, telling them that it was one of his friends whom he entrusted with those who were likewise his friends. After this farewell was over, *Ereti* returned to his canoe, in which was a young and handsome girl, whom *Aotourou* went to embrace. He gave her three pearls which he had in his ears, kissed her, but notwithstanding her tears, tore himself from her, and returned on board the ship.

The first European settlement that M. de Bougainville touched at after leaving O-Taheitee, was Boero, in the Moluccas. The surprize of *Aotourou* was extravagant at seeing men dressed in the European manner; houses, gardens, and various domestic animals, in great variety and abundance. Above all, he is said to have valued that hospi-

* Goldsmith's Traveller.

† Sidney Parkinson, 182.

tality that was here exercised, with an air of sincerity and acquaintance. As he saw no exchanges made, he apprehended the people gave every thing without receiving any return. He presently took occasion to let the Dutch understand, that in his country he was a chief, and that he had undertaken this voyage with his friends for his own pleasure. In visits, at table, and in walking, he endeavoured to imitate the manners of his new friends. As M. de Bougainville had not taken him with him on his first visit to the governor, he imagined that he was left behind on account of his knees being bent inwards, and with greater simplicity than good-sense he applied to some sailors to get upon them, imagining, by that means, they would be forced into a straight direction. He was very earnest to know if Paris was as fine as the Dutch factory where he then was.

At Batavia, the delight which he felt on his first arrival, from the sight of the objects that presented themselves, might operate, in some degree, as an antidote to the poison of the climate; but during the latter part of their stay here he fell sick, and continued ill a considerable time during the remainder of the voyage, but his readiness in taking physic was equal to a man born at Paris. When he ever spoke of Batavia afterwards, he always called it *enoué mate*, "the land that kills."

This Indian, during two years in which he resided in France, does not appear to have done much credit to his country; at the end of that time he could only utter a few words of the language: which indocile disposition M. de Bougainville excuses, with great ingenuity and apparent reason, by observing, that "he was, at least, thirty years of age; that his memory had never been exercised before in any kind of study, nor had his mind ever been employed at all. He was, as he observes, totally different from an Italian, an Englishman, or a German, who can, in a year's time,

speak a French jargon tolerably well; but these have a similar grammar; their moral, physical, political, and social ideas are the same, and all expressed by certain words in their language as they are in French; they have, therefore, nothing more than a translation to fix in their memories, which memories have been exercised from their very infancy. The O-Taheitian man, on the contrary, having only a small number of ideas, relative, on the one hand, to the most simple and limited society, and, on the other, to wants, which are reduced to the smallest number possible, he would have, first of all, as it were, to create a world of new ideas, in a mind as indolent as his body; and this previous work must be done before he can come so far as to adapt to them the words of an European language, by which they are expressed." But *Aotourou* seems to have kept very much below the standard, which his ingenious apologist pleads he was not required to surpass, for he really was not able, after two years instruction, to *translate* his O-Taheitian ideas, few and simple as they were, into French.

This Itinerant embarked at Rochelle in 1770, on board the *Briffon*, which was to carry him to the Isle of France, from whence, by order of the French ministry, he was to be sent by the intendant to his native country; and, for this purpose, M. de Bougainville informs us, that he gave fifteen hundred pounds sterling (a third part of his whole fortune) towards the equipment of the ship intended for this navigation. But notwithstanding these endeavours to restore the adventurous O-Taheitian to his country and connections, he had not reached them when captain Cook was there in 1774; and, Mr. Forster says, that he died of the small-pox.*

* Preface to the History of his Voyage in the Resolution, page xvi.

Whilst the Resolution and Adventure lay at *Huabine*, In September 1773, many young men of the island voluntarily offered to take their passage for England with captain Cook; he singled out one, who was between seventeen and eighteen years of age, named *O-Hedidee*; or, according to Mr. Forster, *Mahine* was his proper name, and the other an adopted one, which he had taken, according to the custom of those islands, from some one with whom he had contracted an intimate friendship: we shall, therefore, in this narrative, give him his proper name of *Mahine*. This youth was a native of *Bolabola*, and a near relation of *O-Poony*, the king of that island, and the conqueror of several adjacent ones. He is described as a handsome young man, with a sweetness and gentleness of manners that endeared him to every one on board the ship. The object which captain Cook then had in contemplation was, to determine, with unquestionable certainty, whether a southern continent did exist or not, and for that purpose he was waiting for the arrival of the summer solstice in that hemisphere. In accomplishing this purpose the captain took his route to New-Zeeland. At the first putting out to sea, *Mahine* felt himself much affected with the sea-sickness, occasioned by the motion of the ship, which he had not been accustomed to; in a little while, however, he was so far recovered as to feast on part of a dolphin, of about twenty-eight pounds weight, which happened to be caught: of this fish he chose to eat without having it dressed, declaring that it tasted much better raw: he was, therefore, provided with a bowl of sea-water, in which he dipped the morsels as in a sauce, and ate them with great relish, alternately biting into a ball of mahie, or sour bread-fruit paste, instead of bread: before he sat down to his meal he separated a little morsel of the fish, and a bit of the mahie, as an offering to *Eatua*, or the Divinity; pronouncing

a few words at the same time, which were thought to be a short prayer. He performed the same ceremony two days after, when he dined on a raw piece of shark. From these instances, it seems, that his countrymen have fixed principles of religion, and that a kind of ceremonial worship takes place among them. When they arrived at New-Zeeland, the wretched condition of the natives of that country led the Bolabolan youth to draw a comparison very favourable to his own tropical islands; but he frequently expressed his pity, whilst he enumerated a variety of articles of which the New-Zeelanders were ignorant, which contributed greatly to the enjoyment of his countrymen. He distributed the roots of yams to those who visited the ship, and always accompanied the captain when he went to plant or sow a piece of ground. He was not like *Tupia*, so much a master of their language as to converse freely with them, but he soon understood them much better than any one on board, from the great analogy of their dialect to his own. His sensibility was much excited at seeing them eat human flesh, as will be related presently. Having left this country, the summer being then advanced, the captain directed his course to the southward, and on the 12th of December came in sixty-two degrees of latitude. *Mahine* had expressed his surprize at several little snow and hail showers on the preceding days, such phænomena being utterly unknown in his country. The appearance of white stones, which melted in his hand, was altogether miraculous in his eyes; and though pains were taken to explain to him that cold was the cause of their formation, his ideas on that subject did not seem to be very clear. On this day a heavy fall of snow surprized him still more than ever; and after a long consideration of its singular qualities, he said he would call it the white rain, when he got back to his own country. Two days after, in

about sixty-five degrees of latitude, he was struck with astonishment at seeing a very large piece of floating ice, which obstructed entirely any further advances of the ship towards the south: this gave him great pleasure, as he took it for land. It was with difficulty that he could be persuaded to believe that it was only fresh water, until he was shewn some congealed in a cask on the deck. He still, however, declared, that he would call this "the white land," by way of distinguishing it from all the rest. He had collected, at New-Zeeland, a number of little slender twigs, which he carefully tied in a bundle, and made use of instead of a journal: for every island he had seen and visited after his departure from the Society-Islands, he had selected a little twig, so that his collection, by this time, amounted to about nine or ten, of which he remembered the names perfectly well, in the same order as he had seen them; and the white land, or *whennua teatea*, was the last. He enquired frequently how many other countries they should meet with in their way to England, and formed a separate bundle of them, which he studied with equal care as the first. The gentlemen on board took the opportunity of this dreary traverse to improve themselves in the knowledge of his language, and revised, deliberately, the whole vocabulary which they had compiled at the Society-Islands, by which means they acquired a fund of useful knowledge concerning those parts. In a week's time they crossed the antarctic circle, where the sun scarce sunk below the horizon. *Mahine* was struck with the greatest astonishment at this appearance, and would scarcely believe his senses; all the endeavours used to explain it to him miscarried, and he assured the gentlemen that he despaired of finding belief among his countrymen, when he should go back to recount the wonders of congealed rain, and of perpetual day. The approach of winter led captain Cook, once
more,

more, to seek for the salutary refreshments of O-Taheitee; *Mahine* was, at least, equally solicitous to see that island, which, though many of his relations and friends resided there, he had never visited. As the inhabitants of the Society-Islands allow this spot the first rank in affluence and power, and as this character was confirmed by his English friends, his curiosity was, of course, greatly excited; but he had still other motives which prompted him to wish himself there; he had collected a great variety of curiosities from the different places where he had touched on the voyage, which, he was convinced, would give him weight and consequence there: and he had acquired such a variety of new ideas, and seen so many distant and unknown countries, that he was persuaded he should attract their attention very strongly: the prospect of being caressed by every body; and being intimate with such extraordinary beings as these European navigators were held to be, his adoption of their manners, and making use of their arms for his diversion, exalted him, in his own ideas, to the highest degree of consequence: nor were his expectations of a friendly reception at all disappointed. The first time of his going on shore he recognized several of his relations, and particularly a sister, named *Teioa*, one of the prettiest women on the whole island, who was married to one of the better class of people, a tall, well-made man, named *Noona*. *Mahine* now laid aside his European dress, and put on an elegant new cloth vestment, which his friends had presented him with. This change in his apparel was observed to give him a degree of pleasure, which a natural predilection for native manners is apt to inspire in every breast. He had not been a fortnight at O-Taheitee before he married a daughter of *Touperree*, a chief of the district of *Matavai*; but unfortunately the ceremony, which was performed on this occasion, was not observed

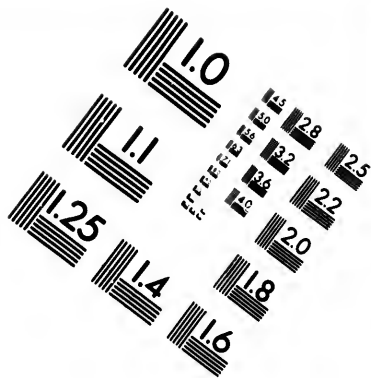
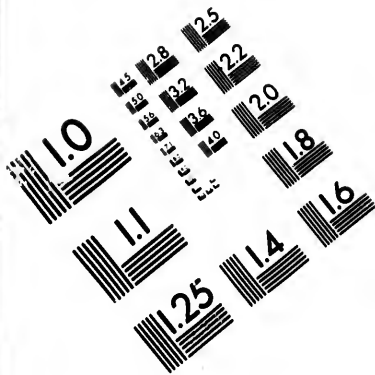
served by any of the ship's company, who could convey any kind of idea of it: a midshipman, indeed, who was present, reported, that a number of ceremonies were performed which were extremely curious, but could not relate any one of them, so that this interesting particular, respecting the manners of these people, remains entirely unknown. *Mahine* embarked with captain Cook for *Huahine*, leaving, it should seem, his new-married lady at O-Taheitee, for no further mention is made of her. He would willingly have proceeded for England, had he had the least hopes given him of ever returning to his native home; but, says captain Cook, "as I could not promise, or even suppose, that more English ships would be sent to these islands, our faithful companion, Oedidee, chose to remain in his native country; but he left us with a regret fully demonstrative of the esteem he bore us. When I was repeatedly questioned about returning, I sometimes gave such answers as left them hopes. Oedidee would instantly catch at this, take me on one side, and ask me over again. In short, I have not words to describe the anguish that appeared in this young man's breast when he went away. He looked up at the ship, burst into tears, and then sunk down into the canoe." Just as he was going out of the ship, he asked captain Cook to *tatou* some *parou* for him, in order to shew the commanders of any other ships which might stop there. The captain complied with his request, gave him a certificate of the time he had been on board, and recommended him to the notice of those who might touch there after him.

Omai, or, as he is improperly called, *Omiab*, is a native of *Ulietea*, or *Raietea*, one of the Society-Islands; he em-

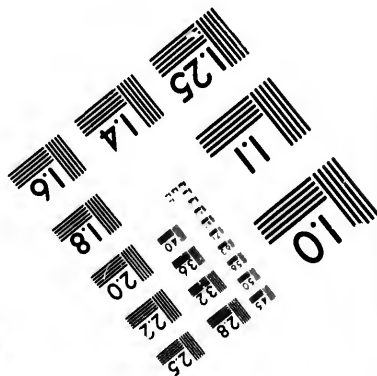
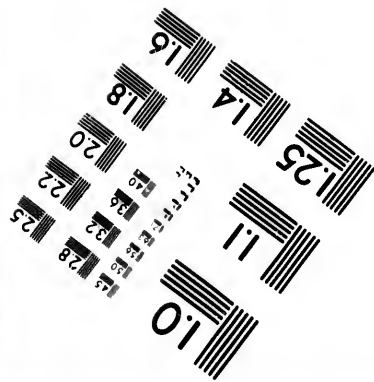
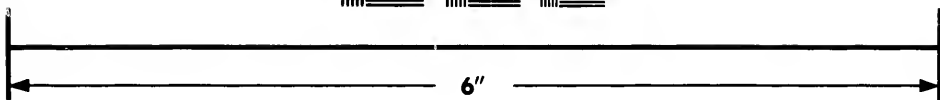
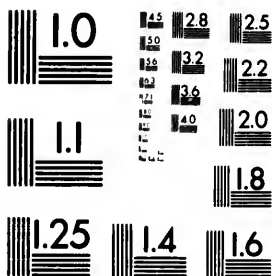
Y Cook, I. 374, 375

barked





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

20 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

14 28
16 32
18 36
20 40
22 44
24 48

10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40

departed at *Huabine* with captain Furneaux; on board the *Adventure*, in September 1773, and the two ships separating in a storm on the coast of New-Zeeland a few months afterwards, the voyage of the *Adventure* was brought to a much earlier conclusion than that of the *Resolution*, for she arrived at Spithead the 14th of July following. This youth is said to have had some property in his native soil, of which he was dispossessed by the people of *Bolabula*, but he was not one of the *arrests*, or gentry of that country, but of the middling class of people. He was eminent neither for figure, shape, nor complexion, his colour being of a deep hue, resembling a *sawtow*, or one of the common people; and both Mr. Forster and captain Cook agree in thinking him no proper sample of the inhabitants of these islands, in respect to personal beauty; however, they are both of opinion, that the qualities of his heart and head resembled those of his countrymen in general, and that no one of the natives would have given more general satisfaction by his behaviour whilst he remained in England. He is described as possessing a good understanding, quick parts, and honest principles; not an extraordinary genius like *Tupia*, but not at all deficient in intelligence, which appears from his knowledge of the game of chess, in which he made an amazing proficiency. His principal patrons, whilst in England, were, the earl of Sandwich, Mr. Banks, and doctor Solander. His noble patron introduced him to his majesty at Kew, and, during his stay in England, he was caressed by many of the principal nobility. He naturally imitated that easy and elegant politeness which is prevalent among the great, and which is one of the ornaments of civilized society. Indeed, he adopted the manners, the occupations, and amusements of his companions in general, and gave many proofs of a quick perception, and a lively fancy. He appears,

pears, however, to have been treated, whilst he resided here, rather as a fashionable exhibition than as a rational being. No attention seems to have been paid to the enriching his mind with useful knowledge, such as might have rendered him a valuable acquisition to his country on his return thither; no means were used to instruct him in agriculture, or any mechanical art, or useful manufacture; and, above all, to possess him with a moral sense; to teach him the exalted ideas of virtue, and the sublime principles of revealed religion. After a stay of two years in England, and having been inoculated for the small-pox, he embarked with captain Cook, on board the *Resolution*, on his return home, loaded with a profusion of presents. At parting with his friends here his tears flowed plentifully, and his whole behaviour bespoke him to be sincerely affected at the separation; but though he lived in the midst of amusements during his residence in England, his return to his native country was always in his thoughts; and though he was not impatient to go, he expressed a satisfaction as the time of his return approached.

C H A P. V.

Of the SOCIETY ISLANDS.

THESSE are a cluster of islands which received this general name from captain Cook in 1769. They are six in number, and lie very near to each other. The par-

• Cook, I. 170, 171. Forster's Preface, xv, xvi, xvii.

ticular names which they bear among the natives are *Uliotea*, or, according to Mr. Forster, *Raietea*, *Otaba*, *Bolabola*, *Huabine*, *Tubai*, and *Maurua*. They are situated between the longitude of 150^o deg. 57 min. and 152 deg. west; and from latitude 16^o deg. 10 min. to 16^o deg. 55 min. south, the nearest island being about forty leagues to the westward of *O-Tabeitee*.

“ Here,” says captain Cook, “ benevolent nature has spread her luxuriant sweets with a lavish hand, and the natives, copying the bounty of nature, are equally liberal; contributing plentifully and cheerfully to the wants of navigators.” And Mr. Forster describes the inhabitants of these fruitful regions, as ready at all times to perform kind offices to their esteemed guests; they would carry them in and out of the boats on their backs, to prevent the surf from wetting their feet; they often loaded themselves with the curiosities which had been purchased, and rarely refused to go into the water for any bird which had been shot. If the rain caught any of the ship’s company on their excursions into the country, or the heat of the sun and fatigue of the journey oppressed them, they were invited to repose in their dwellings, and feasted on their best provisions. Their friendly host stood at a distance, and never tasted of any thing till they entreated him; all the while some one of the family was employed in fanning them with a leaf, or the bough of a tree. Before they left the house, they were commonly adopted according to their different ages, in the quality of father, brother, or son: which circumstance took its rise from an opinion, that all the gentlemen of the ship were related. The chiefs of all the Society Islands are descended from the same family; the officers therefore, and all who dined or messed together, were by them considered as relations. Their hospitality was frequently quite disin-

terested, and led their visitors to form the most favourable conclusions concerning their conduct towards each other. In short, says Mr. Forster, "They are hospitable without seeming to know it, and leave to strangers who visit them the pleasing and grateful task of recording their virtues^b."

S E C T. I.

Of ULIETEA, or RAIETEA, called by Parkinson, YOO-LEA ETEA. Remarkable burying Place. Tokens of Conquest left on the Island. Company of Dancers, their Dresses, and the Entertainment they exhibited. A Feast served up according to the Fashion of the Country. A prodigiously corpulent Man. Affection shewn by the Chief to Captain Cook. Images supposed to be Objects of Worship. The Religion of the Inhabitants.

THIS island is about twenty-one leagues in circuit. Its productions are plantains, cocoa-nuts, yams, hogs, and fowls; the two latter of which are scarce. The soil on the top of one of the hills was found to be a kind of stone marle; on the sides were found some scattered flints, and a few small pieces of a cavernous or spongy stone lava, of a whitish colour, which seemed to contain some remains of iron, so that it may possibly be here lodged in the mountains in a great quantity^d. Nothing was seen on this island to distinguish either its inhabitants, or their manners, from the other neighbouring islands, except a great *Morai* or place of worship, which they called *Tapodeboatea*, which consisted of four walls only, about eight feet high, raised of coral stones, some extremely large; the whole enclosing an area of about twenty-five yards square, which was filled

^b Forster, II. 157, 158.^c Hawkesw. II. 255.^d Forster, I. 395.

up of smaller stones. Many planks were set up an end upon the top, and these were carryed their whole length. At a small distance from this inclosure was an altar, where a hog of about eighty pounds weight, very nicely roasted, was deposited as a sacrifice. Several *Exbarre no Eatuar*, or houses of God, were placed about here; this is a kind of chest or ark, the lid of which is nicely sewed on, and thatched very neatly with palm-nut leaves; each are fixed on two poles, and supported on little arches of wood very neatly carved. The use of the poles seemed to be to remove it from place to place. In one end of each was a square hole, in the middle of which was a ring touching the sides, and leaving the angles open, so as to form a round hole within a square one *. On this island was found the model of a canoe about three feet long, to which were tied eight human jaw bones. *Tupia* explained them to be the jaws of the natives of the island, which had been hung up by the men of *Bolabola*, who had made a conquest of the country, and left this trophy as a memorial of it †. The first Europeans who landed on this shore, were Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander; they were received by the natives in the most courteous manner, reports concerning them having been their harbingers from *O-Tahitee*. Every body seemed to fear and respect them, placing in them at the same time the utmost confidence; behaving, as if conscious, that their visitors possessed the power of doing them mischief without a disposition to make use of it ‡. Here the gentlemen of the ship met with a company of dancers, consisting of two women and six men; they had three drums with them. These they learn, were some of the most considerable people of the place, who took no gratuity for the entertainment they gave. The women had upon their heads a consider-

able
 * Hawkesw. II. 253, 256. † Hawkesw. II. 257. ‡ Idem 262.

able quantity of *tamsu*, or plaited hair, which was brought several times round the head, and adorned in many parts with the flowers of the cape-jessamine, which were stuck in with much taste, and made a head-dress truly elegant. Their necks, shoulders, and arms were naked, so were the breasts also as low as the parting of the arms; below that they were covered with black cloth, which sat close to the body; at the side of each breast next the arm, was placed a small plume of black feathers. Upon their hips rested a quantity of cloth, plaited very full, which reached up to the breast, and fell down below into long petticoats, which quite concealed their feet, and which they managed with as much dexterity as our opera dancers could have done: the plaits were brown and white alternately, the petticoats below were all white. In this dress they advanced sideways in a measured step, keeping excellent time to the drums, which beat briskly and loud; soon after they began to shake their hips, giving the folds of cloth that lay upon them a very quick motion, which was in some degree continued throughout the whole dance, though the body was thrown into various postures, sometimes standing, sometimes sitting, and sometimes resting on their knees and elbows, the fingers also being moved at the same time with a quickness scarcely to be imagined. Much of the dexterity of the dancers, however, and the entertainment of the spectators, consisted in the wantonness of their attitudes and gestures, which was indeed such as exceeds all description. One of these girls had in her ears three pearls; one of them was very large, but so foul that it was of little value; the other two were as big as a middling pea; these were clear, and of a good colour and shape, though spoiled by the drilling. Mr. Banks could not prevail on the owner to part with them at any price, although he proffered her the value of four hogs, and

whatever else she should choose. See an exact representation of these dancers in the plate. Their dances very much resemble the drama of our stage dances.

The strict notions which are entertained of private property in these islands, may be inferred from *Tupia* pointing out to captain Cook as they entered the bay, the possessions which he had held there, but of which he had been dispossessed by their Bolabolan conqueror; and the inhabitants confirmed this relation^l.

Captain Cook had no sooner landed here, than he received a considerable present from *O-Pooney*, the formidable king of *Bolabola*, who was then at *Otaba*, in return for which civility the gentlemen determined to pay him a visit, and to their great surprize found this conqueror of nations, and terror of all the islanders, a poor feeble, withered, and decrepit wretch, half blind with age, and to the last degree sluggish and stupid.

Oreo, or *Orea*, who had been appointed to the government of that part of the island where the Resolution touched in 1773, received captain Cook with great cordiality, and desired that they might exchange names, which is the strongest mark of affection they can show for a stranger^m. In 1774, when a second visit was made in this ship, the chief entertained the gentlemen with a play, which the natives called *Mididdij Marramy*; which signifies "the child is coming". It concluded with a representation of a woman in labour, acted by a set of great brawny fellows, one of whom brought forth a great strapping boy about six feet high, who ran about the stage, dragging after him a large

^l Hawkesw. II. 264, &c. ^m Hawkesw. II. 266.

^k Cook I. 173.

whisk of straw, which hung by a string from his middle. Captain Cook observed, that the moment they got hold of the fellow, they flattened or pressed his nose, from whence he concludes, that their new born infants are so treated, which accounts for all the natives in general having flat noses. The only actress at *Orea's* theatre, was his daughter Poyadua, a pretty brown girl, at whose shrine many offerings were made by her numerous votaries on these occasions. This chief likewise gave a public dinner to the captains Cook and Furneaux, several of the officers of both ships, and the passengers. On this occasion a great part of his spacious house was spread with large quantities of leaves, which served for a table cloth, round which the visitants seated themselves, together with the principal people of the island. Soon after, one of the servants, or *toutous*, brought a hog smoking on his shoulders, which was roasted whole, and wrapped in a large bundle of plantain leaves; this he threw upon the floor, round which the company was seated. Another smaller hog was tossed in the same manner, and both so hot as hardly to be touched: the table, or rather floor, was garnished round with hot bread fruit and plantains, with a quantity of cocoa-nuts for drink. Each man being ready with his knife in his hand, the hogs were presently cut to pieces, and the European part of the company agreed, that they tasted better than an English barbecue: the equal degree of heat, with which it stews under ground, had preserved and concentrated all its juices; the fat was not luscious and surfeiting, and the skin, instead of being hard as a stone, which is the case of roasted pork with us, was as tender as any other part. One of these hogs weighed between fifty and sixty pounds, and the other about half as much, yet all the parts were equally done. The

¹ Cook I. 366, 368.

chief, his son, and some others of his male friends, partook of this repast with their guests; the men attacked the provisions with great gout, but all the women were stationed behind, and were not admitted as sharers in the feast. These, mixing with the common people, applied to the gentlemen for portions from their table. Whatever was handed to the crowd, was eagerly devoured upon the spot by the men; but the women wrapped up theirs very carefully to eat when they should be alone. All the morsels that were handed to the petitioning multitude, were eagerly eyed by the Indians who sat at table; they seemed to consider such provisions as dainties of which the commonalty ought not to partake. After dinner, the bottles and glasses were brought in: the chief never failed to drink his glass of Madeira, whenever it came to his turn, without being at all affected by it. When the company had dined, the boats crew took the remainder. The same crowd of natives now paid their court to them: the sailors were complaisant only to the fair sex; and giving way to their natural disposition to sensuality, for every piece of pork required the performance of an indecent denudation. After the bottle had been some time enjoyed, the company rose up, on which several of the common people rushed in to pick up the crumbs that had fallen, and for which they searched the leaves very narrowly; from whence it may be inferred, that though there is plenty of pork in these islands, yet little falls to their share. Some of the gentlemen of the ships were present when these two pigs were killed and dressed; they observed the chief, who acted as butcher, to divide the entrails, lard, &c. into ten or twelve equal parts, and serve it out to different people. Several of the lower class of natives also constantly attended the ships, and assisted the butchers for the sake of the entrails of the hogs that were killed.

killed. These islanders, indeed, are in general exceedingly careful of every kind of provision, and waste nothing that can be eaten^m. They kill their hogs by suffocating them as at *O-Tabsitee*.

After this public dinner, to complete the entertainment of the day, *Orea* gave orders for another *herva*, and some of the gentlemen were admitted behind the scenes, to see the ladies dressing for the performance. Here they met with one of the prettiest women of the country; her colour resembled that of white wax a little sullied, without having the least appearance of sickness, which that hue commonly has: her fine black eyes and hair contrasted so well with her complexion, that she was admired by all present. She received at first a number of presents, which were so many acts of homage paid to the shrine of beauty; but these, instead of contenting her, served only to increase her solicitude for more: one of the gentlemen happened to have a little padlock in his hand, which she no sooner saw, than she coveted: for some time he refused to part with it, but at length consenting, locked it in her ear, assuring her it was a proper ornament for that part: for some time she liked the appendage, but its weight presently incumbering her, she desired to be relieved from her ponderous novelty; but the giver, as a punishment for her rapaciousness, threw away the key, letting her know, at the same time, that he had made her the present at her own earnest desire, and she must now be content to wear it: she was disconsolate at this information, and weeping bitterly, applied to every one present to open the padlock, but all in vain, no one was possessed of the means of doing it: she then applied to the chief, who, together with his wife, son and daughter, prayed for a release

^m Cook I. 175, 176. Forster I. 405, 406.

of the poor girl's ear: they offered cloth, perfume-wood, and hogs, but ineffectually, until after a considerable time a key was found to answer the purpose, which silenced the sufferer's lamentations, and restored tranquility to the company.

Their veneration for certain kinds of birds is evident from the following circumstance. Some of the gentlemen, on a shooting party, happened to kill several king-fishers; whilst on this excursion, and just as they had brought down one of those birds, they met *Orea* and his family walking with captain Cook; the chief took no notice of the bird, but his fair daughter lamented the death of her *eatooa*; her mother, and most of the women, seemed also grieved at its fate; and on stepping into the boat, *Orea* himself desired them, with a very serious air, not to kill the king-fishers and the herons, allowing them, at the same time, the liberty of killing any other sorts of birds.

In this island they cultivate great quantities of the root called *ava ava*, with which they make their intoxicating liquor. This is no other than the pepper plant. It seems, however, that drunkenness here is punished like all other excesses, with diseases; the old men who make a practice of hard drinking are lean, and covered with a scaly or scabby skin, have red eyes, and red blotches on all parts of their body: they acknowledge those evils to arise from intemperance, and perhaps those leprous disorders that some were seen to be afflicted with at *O-Tabeitee*, are produced by taking large potions of this aduſtive liquor.

^a Forster I. 409.

^b Forster I. 394.

^c Cook I. 187.

^d Forster I. 407.

Here was seen a young man who measured six feet four inches, and six-tenths; and his sister, younger than he, measured five feet ten inches and an half. A chief, named *Herea*, who was a native of *Bolabola*, came on board the *Resolution*; he had considerable possessions here; for *O-Poonee*, the king of *Bolabola*, having conquered this island, the warriors who had served under him had received large districts of land in the conquered countries, in reward for their services. This chief was the most corpulent man seen in any of the South-Sea islands: round his waist he measured no less than fifty-four inches, and one of his thighs was thirty-one inches and three quarters in girth; his hair was likewise remarkable, for it hung down in long black wavy tresses to the small of his back, and in such quantity that it increased the apparent bulk of his head considerably.

The natives parted from the ships with the liveliest expressions of grief; and, says Mr. Forster, "shedding floods of tears, reproached some of us with a want of sensibility." "Our civilized education," continues he, "in general, tends to stifle the emotions of the heart; for as we are too often taught to be ashamed of them, we unhappily conquer them by custom; on the contrary, the simple child of nature who inhabits these islands, gives free scope to all his feelings, and glories in his affection towards the fellow-creature."

Orou's last request to captain Cook was, that he would return; when he saw that he could not obtain a promise of that, he asked the name of his *morai*, or burying-place. It is the custom at these islands for all the great families to have burial-places of their own, where their remains are

¹ Cook I. 372.

² Vol. I. 417.

interred; these go with the estate to the next heir, as has been already related, at *O-Tahiti*: what greater proof could these people give of their affection to their English friends, than their wishing to remember them even beyond the period of their lives? They had been repeatedly told that they should see them no more; they then wanted to know where they were to mingle with their parent dust^t.

In the corner of a house on this island were seen four wooden images, each two feet long, standing on a shelf, having a piece of cloth round their middle, and a kind of turban on their heads, in which were stuck long cock's feathers: one that was in the house told them, that they were *Eatua no te toutou*, "Gods of the servants or slaves." But captain Cook, who relates this, doubts if the instance be sufficient ground for concluding, that they pay divine worship to such, and that the servants are not allowed to worship the same Gods with those of higher rank, as no such very extraordinary distinction was ever related by *Tupia*, from whom the fullest intelligence on these points was obtained, and as these were the first wooden Gods that had been seen in any of the islands, it is most probable that they were misinformed in this particular^u.

The inhabitants of *Huabine* and *Ulietea*, are said to worship the rainbow^v. The priest, or *heiva*, is clothed in a feathered garment, ornamented with round pieces of mother-of-pearl, and a very high cap on his head, made of cane or bamboo, the front of which is feather-work; the edges beset with quills stripped of the plumage: he has also a sort of breast-plate, of a semicircular shape, made of a kind of wicker-work, on which they weave their

^t Cook I. 374.^u Cook I. 371.^v Parkinson 70.

plaited twine in a variety of figures; over which they put feathers of a green pigeon in rows, and between the rows is a semicircular row of shark's teeth: the edge of the breast-plate is fringed with fine white dog's hair. See the figure in the plate.

By means of *Tootavai*, a learned *Raietean*, Mr. Forster received a general sketch of the religious tenets of this and the neighbouring islands; the substance of which is, that in every island the Supreme Being is distinguished by a different name; or rather, each island worships a distinct Divinity, who is considered as one of the higher rank; and he gives the names of thirteen different Gods, that are worshipped by as many different islands. They believe every man to have a separate Being within himself, named *Tee*, which acts in consequence of the impression of the senses, and combines ideas into thoughts, which they call *parou no te aboo*, which literally signifies "words in the belly." This mind they suppose to have an existence after the dissolution of the body, and that the man in that state feasts on bread-fruit and pork, which need no preparation from the fire.

Besides their greater Divinities, they have a number of inferior ones, some of whom they suppose to be inimical to mankind. The high-priest of the island is called *Tabowarabai*; to him the *Eatua*, or God, is supposed to descend, and hold converse with him, whilst he remains invisible to the people that surround him. Offerings are made to the Gods of hogs and poultry roasted, and of all kinds of eatables; but the inferior, and particularly the malevolent spirits, are only revered by a kind of hissing. Some of these spirits are said to come into the houses of the natives, and to kill them

at night; others are said to inhabit a certain deserted island called *Mannua*, where they are visible in the shape of strong tall men, with fiery eyes, and devour those who happen to approach their coast; which opinion, probably, gave rise to Oroo's story, as related in page 175.

The priests in these islands continue in office during their life, and the dignity is hereditary. The high-priest of each island is always an *aree*, who has the highest rank next to the king. They are consulted upon many important occasions; partake largely of the good things of the country, and, in short, have found means to make themselves necessary. Besides the priests there are also, in every district, one or two teachers, or *tata-o-rerro*, who are skilled in the *ogony* and *cosmogony*, and instruct the people in these things; they are, indeed, the repositories of almost all the science that belongs to the country, such as astronomy, the division of time, and the art of navigation. The art of healing, however, Mr. Forster thinks, is studied by another set of men; who, notwithstanding, have the name of *tabowa* given to them in common with the priests. Their principal remedies are drawn from plants, and their treatment of diseases is very simple *.

S E C T. II.

Of HUAHINE, and the Rest of the Society-Islands.

THE name given to this island signifies, in the language of the country, a wife^y. It lies north-west of *O-Ta-Kittee*, in latitude 16 deg. 43 min. south; longitude 150 deg. 52 min. west; it is seven leagues south-west of *Raietea*, and about seven or eight leagues in compass. Its surface is

* Forster I. 149. 157.

† Parkinson 69.

hilly

hilly and uneven, and it has a safe and commodious harbour. It was first discovered by captain Cook, 16th July, 1769^a. It is divided by a deep inlet into two peninsulas, connected by an isthmus, which is entirely overflowed at high water. Its hills are not so high as those at *O-Tabeitee*; they, however, have the same appearances from whence to form a conclusion that the country has, at some period or other, been the seat of a volcano: the summit of one of them had much the appearance of a crater, and a blackish spongy earth was seen on one of its sides, which seemed to be lava^b, and the rocks and clay every where appeared to have been more burnt than those at *O-Tabeitee*^c. The level part of the country abounds with bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees; the productions of this island are forwarder than those at *O-Tabeitee*. When the Resolution arrived here in 1773, it was very early in September, when all the bread-fruit trees had young fruit, the size of small apples, which the natives said would not be ripe in less than four months. Mr. Banks found here not more than eleven or twelve new plants, but he observed some insects, and a species of scorpion, which he had not seen before^c. The mountains here, as well as in all the Society-Islands, continually attract the vapours from the atmosphere, and many rivulets descend from the broken rocks into the plain, so that they are supplied with plenty of water, which contributes both to the comfort and the health of the natives^d. Their cloth-tree is planted very neatly, and cultivated with great care, having drains made through the beds of earth, to draw off the water, and the sides neatly built up with stones; and in the drains they plant the *arum*, which yields the yam they call *sato*^e. Their

^a Hawkesw. II. 254.^b Forster, I. 371.^c Hawkesw. II. 255.^c Hawkesw. II. 254.^d Forster, I. 474, 475.^e Parkinson, 69.

birds,

birds, in general, are of the same species as those at *O-Tabeitee*, besides which was seen here a blue white-bellied kingfisher, and a greyish heron, some of which were shot. A number of people among the crowd annexed an idea of holiness to these birds, and called them *Eatoos*, which is the name they affix to God: but in this sentiment the people were not unanimous, as, Mr. Forster says, at least an equal number pointed out such kind of birds for a mark, and none of them expressed any tokens of disapprobation after the birds were shot¹.

The natives of *Haabine* are not of such dark complexions as those at *O-Tabeitee*, and the women are in general as handsome, and nearly of the same colour as Europeans. They speak the same language, and wear the same kind of cloth, made of bark². Their conduct was bolder, and more unconcerned, than that of the *Tabetians*; and neither the explosion, nor effect of fowling-pieces, struck them with fear and astonishment, as it did the other islanders: "This difference," says Mr. Forster, "was certainly owing to the various treatment which the inhabitants of the different islands had met with from their European visitants"³. One of the natives who came on board the *Resolution* had a monstrous rupture, or *hernia*, which, however, did not seem to encumber him much, as he mounted the side of the ship with great agility⁴. The inhabitants mix the cocoa-nuts with yams, and make a food which they call *por*; having scraped both very fine, and mixed them together, they put the whole into a kind of wooden trough, with a number of hot stones, by which an oily kind of hasty pudding is produced, which, when fried, tastes very

¹ Vol. I. page 378. See page 166.

² Vol. I. 375.

³ Forster, *ib.*

⁴ Forster, I. 373.

pleasantly.

pleasantly. They are a stout, large-made people, some of the tallest are six feet three inches, and upwards, in height; they are extremely indolent, and have as little curiosity as fear. The dogs, in spite of their stupidity, are in great favour with all the women, "who could not have carressed them," says Mr. Forster, "with a more ridiculous affection, if they had been European ladies of fashion." Here was seen a middle-aged woman, whose breasts were full of milk, offering them to a little puppy who had been trained up to suck them: the sight disgusted those who saw it so much, that they could not forbear expressing their dislike of it; but the woman only smiled at them, and said, that she suffered little pigs to do the same: it appeared afterwards that this woman had lost her child^m. Their manner of shewing respect is like that practiced at *O-Tahiti*, by stripping to the waist; the hospitality of these islanders is not equally celebrated as that of their *O-Tahitian* neighbours, as the custom of reciprocal presents is almost entirely unknown among them.

Their boat-houses here are larger than in the other island; one of them measured fifty paces long, ten broad, and twenty-four feet high, forming a pointed arch somewhat like an old cathedral. Upon the posts which supported this shed, were rudely carved the heads of men, and several fanciful devices. When the *Endeavour* was leaving this island, captain Cook gave the king a small plate of pewter, on which was inscribed, "His Britannic Majesty's ship *Endeavour*, lieutenant Cook, Commander, 16th July, 1769, HUAHINE." He gave him also some medals, or counters;

^k Hawkesw. II. 254.

^l Vol. I. 378.

^m Forster, I. Ib.

ⁿ Forster, I. 381.

resembling

resembling the coin of England, struck in the year 1761, as testimonies of having first discovered the island.

They bartered very fairly for beads and nails, giving cocks of a beautiful plumage, but seldom brought hens to market. They were said to differ very widely in one thing from their neighbours, viz. that they are not addicted to steal; at least they generally entertain a notion of honour, and readily give up any individual found guilty of theft, to be punished for his crime. No less than three hundred hogs were procured for both ships at this island in 1773, besides fowls and fruit. As soon as the ship arrived, a boat put off for the shore; before any one landed out of her, the natives brought on board her five young plantain trees separately, which are their emblems of peace; three young pigs, with their heads ornamented with cocoa-nut fibres, accompanied the first three, and a dog the fourth; each plantain-bough had its particular name, and purpose but rather too mysterious to be understood. With the last the chief sent the inscription that had been left by captain Cook in the Endeavour, together with the other presents that had been put into a bag, and had been carefully kept therein. The natives then desired their visitors to decorate three young plantain trees with looking-glasses, nails, medals, beads, &c. which being done, they landed with them in their hands, and were conducted towards the chief through the multitude, who made a line for them; they were desired to sit down a few paces short of the chief; the plantains were then taken from them, and one by one laid before him, in the same manner as had been before done to the captain and his attendants. This chief, whose name was *Oree*, when first visited by captain Cook in 1769, proposed

° Hawkesw. II. 253.

P Hawkesw. II. 255.

to exchange names with him, which was readily assented to, and he was *Cooke*, for so he pronounced it, and captain Cook was *Oree* for the rest of the time they were together. In May 1774, captain Cook made this island a third visit, and when he was about to depart, the good old chief was the last man that went out of the ship. At parting, the captain told him, they should see each other no more, at which he wept, and said, "Let your sons come, we will treat them well." This old chief appeared to have become much more indolent on their last visit, and his intellects seemed to have been considerably impaired. His eyes were become red and inflamed, and his whole body was lean and scaly. It was not difficult to account for this change, as he was then much addicted to the intoxicating pepper draught, of which he drank great quantities prepared excessively strong. *Mabine* had the honour of drinking with him for several nights together, and received such a share of his nauseous beverage, that he commonly awoke the next morning with a violent head-ach. This old chief dined with captain Cook on board the ship, and drank about a bottle of Madeira to his own share after dinner, without appearing in the least intoxicated. He was, on that occasion, extremely facetious, and conversed chiefly of the countries which they had visited, of which he had received an account from his countryman *Mabine*. After being satisfied in many particulars, he said, that though they had seen a great deal, he would tell them of an island which they had not met with in their voyages. "It lies," said he, "but a few days sail from hence, but it is inhabited by a monstrous race of giants, as tall as the main-mast, and as thick about the middle as the drum-head of the capston: they are very good-natured people, but if they are ever incensed against any body, they take him up, and throw him as far into the sea

as I would throw a stone. If you should happen to come there with your ship, they would perhaps wade up to it and carry it ashore on their backs." He added several other ludicrous circumstances, and concluded with telling them the name of the island, *Mirro-mirro*, in order to give greater weight to his assertion. It appeared evidently, that his whole story was a fine piece of irony, directed against those parts of their narrative which he did not believe, and of which he could have no conception¹. But it may possibly be founded on a superstitious notion prevalent here².

Some of the gentlemen were present at a dramatic entertainment on this island: the piece represented a girl running away from her parents, and seemed to be levelled at the female passenger whom they had brought from *O-Ta-beitee*³, who happened to be present at the representation. It had such an impression upon the girl, that the gentlemen could scarce persuade her to see the piece out, or to refrain from tears whilst it was acting. It concluded with the reception she was supposed to meet with from her friends at her return, which was made out to be not a very favourable one. These people introduce extempore pieces on occasion, and it is most probable that this was meant as a satire upon the girl, and to discourage others from acting in the same manner⁴.

OTAHA has nothing to distinguish it from the other islands. It is not populous. The natives received the boat that landed on this coast in the most courteous manner, and were particularly attentive to pay Mr. Banks and doctor Solander, who went in her, the same compliments that they paid to their kings, uncovering their shoulders, and wrapping their garments round their breasts.

¹ Forster II. 118. 139, 140.
⁴ Cook I. 356.

² See page 169, 170.

³ See page 144.

This island lies within about two miles of *Ulietea*; both islands are inclosed in one reef of coral rocks; so that there is no passage for shipping between them.

BOLABOLA lies north-west and by west from *Otaba*, distance about four leagues; it is surrounded by a reef of rocks and several small islands, in compass together about eight leagues. It is made up of one high forked peak of land, with seven low islands round it.

TUBAI. This island produces nothing but cocoa-nuts, and is said to be inhabited only by three families. The coast abounds with fish, which occasions the shore to be frequently visited by the natives of the neighbouring islands.

MAURUA, a small island entirely surrounded with a reef of rocks, and without any harbour for shipping. It is inhabited, and its productions are the same as are common to all the neighbouring islands; a high round hill rises in the middle of it, which may be seen at the distance of ten leagues.

C H A P. VI.

Of the FRIENDLY ISLANDS, called by Tasman, MIDDLEBURG, AMSTERDAM, ROTTERDAM, and PYLESTART, including also many others which were seen but not visited by Captain Cook.

THESSE islands, which amount to more than twenty, together with a number of sand banks and breakers, compose a group containing about three degrees of latitude,

^t Hawkesworth II. 270. ^u Parkinson 71. ^v Hawkesworth II. 260.

^w Hawkesworth II. 261.

and two of longitude. They received this general name on account of the firm alliance and friendship which seemed to subsist among the inhabitants, and from their courteous behaviour to strangers.

S E C T. I.

Of MIDDLEBERG.

THIS island was first discovered by Tasman, a Dutch navigator, in January 1742-3: it is called by the natives *Ea-Oo-wohe*: it is about sixteen miles from north to south, and in the widest part about eight miles from east to west. The skirts of this island are chiefly laid out in plantations, the south-west and north-west sides especially. The interior parts are but little cultivated, though very capable of it, but this neglect adds greatly to the beauty of the island, for here are agreeably dispersed groves of cocoa-nuts and other trees, lawns covered with thick grass, here and there plantations and paths leading to every part of the island, in such beautiful disorder, as greatly to enliven the prospect*. The hills are low; the air is delightful; but unfortunately, water is the only blessing denied to this charming spot†. Yams, with other roots, bananas and bread-fruit, are the principal articles of food, but the latter appeared to be scarce. Here is the pepper-tree, or *ava-ava*, with which they make an intoxicating liquor, in the same disgusting manner as is practised in the Society Islands‡. Here are several odoriferous trees and shrubs, particularly a species of the lemon tribe; and the botanical gentlemen met with various new species of plants. Here is the *casu-*

* Cook I. 271.

† Forster I. 423, 441, 442.

‡ See page 41.

aria or club-wood, which, as in the Society Islands, so here, points out the repositories of their dead; also the shade-dock and some other trees. Here are a few hogs and fowls^a.

Here are no towns or villages; most of the houses are built in plantations, which are laid out in different parts, with no other order than what convenience requires. They are neatly constructed, but are less roomy and convenient than those in the Society Isles: the materials are the same here as there, and some little variation in the framing is all the difference in their construction. The floors are a little raised, and covered with thick strong mats. The same sort of matting serves to enclose them on the windward side, the others being open. They have little areas before most of them, which are planted round with trees or ornamental shrubs, whose fragrance perfumes the air. Their household furniture consists of a few wooden platters, cocoa-nut shells, and pillows made of wood, and shaped like four-footed stools or forms: their common cloathing, with the addition of a mat, serves them for bedding^b.

The natives are of a clear mahogany or chestnut brown, with black hair, in short frizzled curls, which seems to be burnt at the tips; their beards are cut or shaven. The general stature of the men is equal to our middle size, from five feet three to five feet ten inches; the proportions of the body are very fine, and the *contours* of the limbs extremely elegant, though something more muscular than at O-Ta-heitee, which may be owing to a greater and more constant exertion of strength in their agriculture and domestic economy. Their features are extremely mild and pleasing, and

^a Cook I. 193, 194. Forster I. 430, 432, 443.

^b Cook I. 214.

differ from the *O-Tahitian* faces in being more oblong than round, the nose sharper, and the lips rather thinner. The women are, in general, a few inches shorter than the men, but not so small as the lower class of women at the Society-Islands; their body is so exquisitely proportioned to the waist, and their hands and arms are to the full as delicate, but like them they have such large feet and legs, as do not harmonize with the rest: their features, though irregular, are agreeable. That difference of colour and corpulence by which the various ranks in society are distinguished at *O-Tahitee*, is not to be met with in this island. The practice of puncturing the skin, and blacking it, which is called *tattooing*, is in full force among the men here, for their belly and loins are very strongly marked in configurations, more compounded than those at *O-Tahitee*. The tenderest parts of the body were not free from these punctures, the application of which besides being very painful, must be extremely dangerous on glandulous extremities.

Et picta pandit spectacula corda^c.

The men, in general, go almost naked, having only a small piece of cloth round the loins, but some wrap it in great abundance round them from their waist: this cloth is manufactured much like that at *O-Tahitee*, but overspread with a strong glue, which makes it stiff, and fit to resist the wet^d. The women are likewise covered from the waist downwards: they often have loose necklaces, consisting of several strings of small shells, seeds, teeth of fishes, and in the middle of all, the round *operculum*, or cover of a shell as large as a crown piece. The men frequently wear a string round their necks, from which a mother-of-pearl shell hangs down on the breast; both the ears of the women were perforated with

^c Her. Sat. lib. II. Sat. 2. lin. 26.

^d Forster I. 424. 433.

FRIENDLY ISLANDS. 171

two holes, and a cylinder cut out of tortoise-shell, or bone, was stuck through both the holes. The most remarkable circumstance observed of this people was, that most of them wanted the little finger on one, and sometimes on both hands: the difference of sex or age did not exempt them from this amputation, for even among the few children that were seen running about naked, the greater part had already suffered such loss^e. This circumstance was observed by Tasman^f. Another singularity which was observed to be very general among these people was, a round spot on each cheek-bone, which appeared to have been burnt or blistered. On some it seemed to have been recently made, on others it was covered with scurf, and many had only a slight mark of its former existence: how, or for what purpose it was made, could not be learnt. The women here, in general, were reserved, and turned, with disgust, from the immodest behaviour of ungovernable seamen: there were not, however, wanting, some who appeared to be of easy virtue, and invited their lovers with lascivious gestures^g. The language spoken here is soft, and not unpleasing, and whatever they said was spoken in a kind of singing tone. *O-Mai* and *Mahine*, who were both passengers on board the ship, at first declared that the language was totally new, and unintelligible to them; however, the affinity of several words being pointed out, they soon caught the peculiar modification of this dialect, and conversed much better with the natives than any on board the ships could have done, after a long intercourse^h. They have the neatest ornaments imaginable, consisting of a number of little flat sticks, about five inches long, of a yellow wood like box, firmly and elegantly connected together at the bottom, by a tissue of the fibres of

^e Forster I. 435.

^f Dalrymple II. 76.

^g Forster I. 444.

^h Forster I. 445, 444.

cocoa-nut, some of which were of their natural colour, and others died black; the same fibres were likewise used in the making of baskets, the taste of which was highly elegant, and varied into different forms and patterns. Besides the little stools which serve as pillows for the head, they have bowls in which they place their meat, and spatulas in which they mix up their bread-fruit paste. Their clubs are of a great variety of shapes, and many of them so ponderous as scarce to be managed with one hand. The most common form was quadrangular, so as to make a rhomboid at the broad end, and gradually tapering into a round handle at the other. Far the greater part were curved all over in many chequered patterns, which seemed to have required a long space of time, and incredible patience, to work up; as a sharp stone, or a piece of coral, are the only tools made use of: the whole surface of the plain clubs was as highly polished as if an European workman had made them with the best instruments. Besides clubs, they have spears of the same wood, which were sometimes plain sharp-pointed sticks, and sometimes barbed with a sting-ray's tail. They have likewise bows and arrows of a peculiar construction: the bow, which is six feet long, is about the thickness of a little finger, and when slack forms a slight curve; its convex part is channelled with a single deep groove, in which the bow-string is lodged. The arrow is made of reed, near six feet long, and pointed with hard wood: when the bow is to be bent, instead of drawing it so as to increase the natural curvature, they draw it the contrary way, make it perfectly straight, and then form the curve on the other side¹. Most of their canoes have out-riggers, made of poles, and their workmanship is very admirable; two of these canoes are joined together with a surprizing exactness, and the whole

¹ Forster I. 437, 438.

surface receives a very curious polish. Their paddles have short broad blades, something like those at *O-Tabeitee*, but more neatly wrought, and of better wood ^k.

They keep their dead above ground, after the manner of the Society Islands; as a corpse was seen deposited on a low hut.

Captain Cook came to an anchor on the west-north-west side of this island; two canoes, with two or three men in each, came alongside of the ship, without any appearance of fear; one of the natives came on board the *Resolution* without hesitation; he presented a root of the pepper-tree, or intoxicating plant; and touched the noses of the officers with his own, in token of friendship, and then sat down on the deck, without speaking a word. The captain presented him with a nail, which, on receiving, he held over his head, and pronounced the word *fagafetai*, (or *fagafatie*, for the different historians write it differently.) This was most probably meant as an expression of his thankfulness. The next day canoes in great numbers came about the ships; the natives threw great bales of cloth into them, without asking for any thing in return. In short, they seemed to be more desirous to give than receive, for many who had thus thrown in whole bales of cloth, retired without so much as waiting for any present. Among those who came on board the *Resolution*, was a chief named *Tioony*, whom captain Cook presented with a hatchet, spike nails, and several other articles, with which he was highly pleased. On landing, this chief conducted the gentlemen to his house, which was most delightfully situated about three hundred yards from the sea, at the head of a fine lawn, and under the shade

^k Forster, 425.

of some shaddock trees; the inhabitants seemed of a more active and industrious disposition than those of the other islands; and instead of following their visitors in great crowds, left them entirely to themselves, unless importuned to accompany them. Wherever they went they were received with caresses by old and young, men and women; who hugged them very heartily, and frequently kissed their hands, laying them on their breasts with the most expressive looks of affection that can be imagined. The discharge of guns, and their effect, neither excited their admiration nor their fear, which plainly proves, that the civility they shewed arose from a natural suavity of temper, not from a motive of conciliating the favour of their guests because they knew them to be able to destroy them. These people were also proof against any temptation to theft, except from the sight of nails; on these they set so high a value, that they would endeavour to possess them at any rate^l. A great number of both sexes were continually swimming about the ship perfectly naked, holding up rings of tortoise-shell, fish-hooks of mother-of-pearl, and such like for sale. When some of the gentlemen went on shore in a boat, the people thronged about them with every expression of friendship. These islanders had never before seen Europeans among them; and could only have heard of Tasman, who visited the adjacent island of Amsterdam more than a century before, by imperfect tradition; nothing was therefore more conspicuous in their whole deportment, than an open generous disposition, free from any mean distrust, and the natural effusion of the heart^m. The natives very freely offered their backs to carry every one from the boat to the shoreⁿ.

^l Forster I. 437, 432, 443.
ⁿ Forster I. 426.

^m Forster I. 427. Cook I. 192.

At the house of *Tioony*, just mentioned, they were welcomed with a song sung by two or three women, which, though exceeding simple, had a very pleasing effect, and was highly musical when compared to the Tahitian songs. They beat time to these songs by snapping the second finger and thumb, and holding the three remaining fingers upright. Their voices were very sweet and mellow, and they sung in parts; when these had done, they were relieved by others, who sung the same tune, and at last they joined together in chorus.

Notwithstanding the engaging manners of the natives, refreshments could not be obtained here in any great quantity, which occasioned the ships to stay but a short time. On leaving the island captain Cook presented the chief with various articles; amongst the rest an assortment of garden-seeds was given him. The chief received the intimation of their departure with great tranquility, and accompanied their boat, in his canoe, till they arrived at the ships ^o.

Here were seen several men and women afflicted with leprous diseases, in some of whom the disorder had risen to a high degree of virulence; one man in particular had his back and shoulders covered with a large cancerous ulcer, which was perfectly livid within, and of a bright yellow all round the edges. A woman was likewise unfortunate enough to have her face destroyed by it in the most shocking manner; there was only a hole left in the place of her nose; her cheek was swelled up, and continually oozing out a purulent matter; and her eyes seemed ready to fall out of her head, being bloody and sore: though these were some of the most miserable objects that could possibly be seen, yet they seemed to

be quite unconcerned about their misfortunes, and traded as briskly as any of the rest.

S E C T. II.

Of AMSTERDAM, called by the Natives TONGOTABU.

THE greatest extent of this island, from east to west, is about twenty-one miles, and from north to south about thirteen. It is broad at the east-end, and runs taper towards the west, where it turns, and runs to a point due north. It is about six leagues to the west of Middleburgh. The shore is surrounded by a coral rock, and its most elevated parts are not above six or eight yards above the level of the sea. Latitude 21° deg. 11 min. south; longitude 175° west. It is wholly laid out in plantations, in which are cultivated some of the richest productions of nature.

Here are bread-fruit, cocoa-nut trees, plantains, bananas, shaddock, yams, and some other roots; sugar-canes, and a fruit like a nectarine, called by the natives *figbega*. On landing, the inhabitants conducted the gentlemen into a road which led to the country; it was about sixteen feet broad, and as level as a bowling-green: from this great road several smaller ones branched out, every one of which was enclosed on both sides with neat fences made of reeds, and shaded from the scorching sun by fruit-trees; so that the company thought themselves at once transported into the most fertile plains of Europe. There did not appear an inch of waste ground; the roads occupied no more space than was absolutely necessary; the fences did not take up above four inches each, and even these were not wholly lost, for in many

grew some useful trees or plants; it was every where the same, change of place altered not the scene; nature, assisted by a little art, no where appeared in more splendor than on this island^q. The season of spring then revived the face of all nature, adorning every plain with blossoms, and inspiring with joyful songs the feathered tribe, contributed to render every object pleasing. Water is not so plentiful here as at the Society-Islands, but the chief pointed out a pool of fresh water unasked, to supply the ships with that necessary article^r. It seems probable that all the land of *Tangotabu* is private property, and that the common people are servants, or slaves, to the gentry, and have no property in the land. It frequently happened that parties of eight or ten people would bring to the landing-place fruit, and other things, to exchange; and one person, sometimes a man, and at other times a woman, would superintend the sale of the whole, whose consent was first asked before any traffic took place, and whatever was given in exchange they received, which plainly shewed them to be the owners of the goods^s. Casuarinas, pandangs, and wild sago-palms, appear here with their various tints of green, and barringtonias as big as the loftiest oaks. The bread-fruit does not, however, thrive here with the same luxuriance as at the Society-Islands, the coral rock, which composes the basis of this spot, being much more thinly covered with mould. Several new plants were found on this little island, among the rest a new species of jesuits bark. The only domestic animals are fowls and hogs, the former of which are as large as any in Europe, and their flesh equally good, if not better; the latter are of the same sort as at the other islands in this sea. There were no dogs seen, nor any rats, but a small lizard was found. The land birds are pigeons, turtle-doves, paroquets, parrots,

^q Cook, I. 201.^r Idem, 203.^s Cook, I. 225.

owls, bald-coats with a blue plumage, a variety of small birds, with large bats in abundance; some of the latter that were shot measured from three to four feet between the expanded wings^t. On the low islands, which lay to the north-east of a bay, called by Tasman *Maria's Bay*, were seen a prodigious number of water-snakes with flat tails, and perfectly harmless^u.

Both men and women are of the common size of Europeans, and their colour is that of a lightish copper; they are well shaped, have regular features, are active, brisk, and lively. They have fine eyes, and in general good teeth, even to an advanced age. The women are the merriest creatures imaginable, and incessant talkers. In general they appear to be modest, although there was no want of those of a different stamp. Among the natives who swam about the ships very vociferously, were a considerable number of women, who wantoned in the water like amphibious creatures, and were easily persuaded to come on board perfectly naked, but none of them ventured to stay there after sunset, but returned to the shore to pass the night, like the greater part of the inhabitants, under the shade of the wild wood which lined the coast. There they lighted great fires, and were heard conversing almost the whole night^v. A young girl, whose long jetty hair hung down in graceful ringlets on her neck, had features more regular than common; her eyes sparkled with vivacity, and her whole frame was admirably proportioned. This girl played with five gourds of the size of small apples, perfectly globular; she threw them up into the air one after another continually, and never failed to catch them all with great dexterity,

^t Cook, I. 235. Forster, I. 450.

^u Forster, I. 478.

^v Forster, I. 457, 458.

though

though she continued this performance at least for a quarter of an hour ^w. The hair of both sexes, in general, is black, but especially that of the women; both sexes wear it short, except a single lock on the top of the head, and a small quantity on each side. The men cut or shave their beards quite close, which operation they perform with two shells. The hair of many was observed to be burnt at the ends, and strewed with a white powder, which was found, on examining it, to be lime, made of shell or coral, which had corroded or burnt the hair; some made use of a blue powder, and others, both men and women, of an orange-coloured powder made of tumeric ^x. Mr. Forster assigns, as a reason for these people cutting their hair short, the great scarcity of water, on which account they are obliged to have recourse to expedients, in order to preserve a certain degree of cleanliness, so essential both to enjoyment and health. Two exceptions were seen to this general custom; one was a man who appeared among the crowd, and who had long hair twisted into several round bunches, which hung wildly about his ears; and the young girl already spoken of, the daughter of a man supposed to be the chief priest, and who appeared to possess great authority ^y.

The dress of both sexes consists of a piece of cloth or matting wrapped round the waist, and hanging down below the knees. From the waist upwards they are generally naked, and it seems to be a custom to anoint these parts every morning. The practice of *tattooing*, or puncturing the skin, likewise prevails. The men are *tattooed* from the middle of the thigh to above the hips: the women have it only on their arms and fingers, and on those parts but very slightly. Their ornaments are amulets, necklaces and

^w Forster, I. 476.

^w Forster, I. 473.

^x Forster, I. 463.

^y Idem, 475, 468, 479.

bracelets,

though

bracelets, the bone, shells, and beads of mother-of-pearl, tortoise-shell, &c. which are worn by men as well as women. The women also wear on their fingers neat rings made of tortoise-shell, and pieces in their ears about the size of a small quill: but here ornaments are not commonly worn though all have their ears pierced. They have also a curious apron made of the outside feathers of the cocoa-nut shell, and composed of a number of small pieces sowed together in such a manner as to form stars, half moons, little squares, &c. it is studded with beads and shells, and covered with red feathers so as to have a pleasing effect. They make the same kind of cloth, and of the same materials, as at *O-Tabeitee*, though they have not such a variety, nor do they make any so fine; but as they have a method of glazing it, it is more durable, and will resist rain for some time, which the other cloth would not. Their colours are black, brown, yellow, purple, and red; all made from vegetables. They make various sorts of matting, some of a very fine texture, which is generally used for cloathing, and the thick and stronger sort serves to sleep upon, and to make sails for their canoes, &c. Among other useful utensils, they have various sorts of baskets, some made of the same materials as their mats, and others of the twisted fibres of cocoa-nuts. These are not only durable but beautiful, being generally composed of different colours, and studded with beads made of shells or bones. They have many little nick-nacks among them, which shew that they neither want taste to design, nor skill to execute whatever they take in hand. Their fishing implements are much the same as in the other islands; here was purchased a fish-net made like our casting-nets, knit of very firm though slender threads².

² Forster, I. 453.

Notwithstanding their very friendly disposition, these people have very formidable weapons, as has been already related at Middleburgh, and which they here exactly resemble; some of their spears have many barbs, and must be very dangerous weapons when they take effect^a. A large flat shell, or breast-plate, was purchased, made of a roundish bone, white and polished like ivory, about eighteen inches in diameter, which appeared to have belonged to an animal of the whale tribe^b.

The women frequently entertained their guests with songs in an agreeable manner; they always accompanied the music by snapping their fingers so as to keep time: only two musical instruments were seen, one a large flute of a piece of bamboo-reed, nearly the thickness of a German flute, which they sounded with the nostrils. These they commonly ornamented with various little figures burnt in, and pierced four or five holes in it. The method of ornamenting wood by burning figures into it, was frequently observed in their bowls and various other utensils. The other instrument of music in use here, is composed of ten or eleven small slender reeds of equal length, about three inches long, bound together, side by side, by the fibres of cocoa-nut core, and resembles what is described to be the Doric pipe of the ancients; the open ends of the reeds into which they blow with their mouths are of equal height, or in a line. It had commonly not above four or five different notes, and no one was met with which included a whole octave. They have also a drum made out of one log of wood, hollowed, between five and six feet long, and about thirty inches in girth; it has a slit in it from one end to the

^a Cook, I. 221.

^b Forster, I. 455.

other, about three inches wide, by means of which it is hollowed. They beat on the side of this log with two drumsticks, and produce a hollow sound not quite so musical as that of an empty cask ^c.

They bake their meat in ovens like the other south sea islanders ^d. Nothing could be a fuller evidence of the ingenuity of these people, than the construction and make of their canoes, which in point of neatness and workmanship exceed every thing of the kind in this sea. They are built of several pieces sewed together, with bandages, in so neat a manner, that on the outside it is difficult to see the joints. All the fastenings are on the inside, and pass through kants or ridges, which are wrought on the edges and ends of the several boards which compose the vessel. For that purpose they are of two kinds, double and single; the single ones are from twenty to thirty feet long, and about twenty or twenty-two inches broad in the middle. The stern terminates in a point, and the head something like the point of a wedge; at each end is a kind of deck about one third of the whole length, and open in the middle. In some the middle of the deck is decorated with a row of white shells, stuck on like pegs. These single canoes have all outriggers, and are sometimes navigated with sails, but more generally with paddles; the blades of which are short, and broadest in the middle. The two vessels which compose the double canoes, are each about sixty or seventy feet long, and four or five broad in the middle, and each end terminates nearly in a point, so that the body, or hull, differs a little from the single canoe in construction, but is put together exactly in the same manner; these having a rising in the middle, round the open part, in the form of a long

^c Cook, I. 219, 220. Forster, I. 455, 456. ^d Forster, I. 463.

trough,

trough, which is made of boards closely fitted together, and well secured to the body of the vessel. Two such vessels are fastened parallel to each other, about six or seven feet asunder, by long cross beams secured by bandages to the upper part of the risings abovementioned. Over these beams, and others which are supported by stanchions, fixed on the bodies of the canoes, is laid a boarded platform. All the parts which compose the double canoe are made as strong and light as the nature of the work will admit, and may be immersed in water to the very platform, without being in danger of filling; nor is it possible, under any circumstance whatever, for them to sink, so long as they hold together. Thus they are not only made vessels of burden, but fit for distant navigation; they are rigged with one mast, which steps upon the platform, and can easily be raised or taken down; and are sailed with a latteen sail, or triangular one, extended by a long yard, which is a little bent or crooked. The sail is made of mats; the rope they make use of is laid exactly like ours, and some of it is four or five inch. On the platform is built a little shed, or hut, which screens the crew from the sun and weather, and serves for other purposes. They also carry a moveable fire hearth, which is a square but shallow trough of wood filled with stones. The way into the hold of the canoe is from off the platform, down a sort of uncovered hatchway, in which they stand to bail out the water^c.

The same custom of putting every thing on their heads prevails here as at Middleburg. This manner of paying a compliment is taught them from their very infancy, for when any thing was given to little children, the mother lifted up the child's hand to its head: they also used this custom in

^c Cook, I. 215, 216, 217.

their exchanges with the English: whatever was given them for their goods was constantly applied to the head, in the same manner as if it had been a present. Sometimes they would look at their goods offered, which, if they did not approve, they would return; but whenever they applied them to the head, the bargain was struck. When captain Cook made a present to a chief of any thing curious, it was frequently handed from one to another, and every one into whose hands it came put it to his head. Very often the women would take hold of captain Cook's hand, kiss it, and lift it to their heads, from whence it should seem that this custom, which is called *sagafatic*, has various significations as it is applied, all however complimentary^f. The amputating the little finger, as well as the custom above described, has been taken notice of already, in the account of the neighbouring island of Middleburg: here also the greater number of men and women have lost one or both of their little fingers: it is neither peculiar to rank, age, or sex, for except some young children, few were found with both their hands perfect. Mr. Forster is of opinion that it is practised on children upon the death of their parents^g; and the information he received from a native who shewed him a burying-place strengthens that opinion, as will be related presently: notwithstanding which Mr. Wales met with a man whose hands were both perfect, and who was of such an advanced age, that it was hardly possible his parents could be living^h. The burning of the cheek-bone likewise prevails here, as well as at the neighbouring island.

^h In the language of these islands, as has been already observed, there is great affinity to that of the Society-Islands; the greatest part of the necessaries of life, which

^f Cook, I. 222, 223.

^g Vol. I. 451.

^h Cook, I. 222.

are common to both groups; the parts of the human body; in short, the most obvious and universal ideas are expressed at both places nearly by the same words. The inhabitants of the Friendly-Isles have adopted the letters *F. K. and S.* so that their language is more replete with consonants, and their dialect, of course, not so sonorous. This harshness, however, is compensated by the frequent use of the liquid letters *L. M. N.* and the softer vowels *E. and I*¹. Here were seen many houses of a peculiar construction, which seemed to be at once the repositories for the dead, and places set apart for the worship of the Deity. They are built on a mount raised about sixteen or eighteen feet above the common level ground, in an oblong form, inclosed by a wall, or parapet of stone, about three feet in height. From this wall the mount rises with a gentle slope, and is covered with a green turf; on the top of it stands the house, of the same shape as the mount, about twenty feet in length, and about fifteen or sixteen broad. The lawn on which this is made is surrounded on all sides with shady bushes and trees; in the front are two stone steps leading to the top of the wall, from this the ascent to the house is easy, and round it is a fine gravel walk; the house itself was built like their common dwelling-houses, with posts and rafters, and covered with palm-thatch; the eaves came down within about three feet of the ground, which space was filled up with strong matting, made of palm-leaves as a wall. The floor is laid with fine gravel, except in the middle, where there is an oblong square of blue pebbles, raised above six inches higher than the floor. In one of these cemeteries, a native shewed Mr. Forster that a man lay buried, and pointed to the place where his little finger had formerly been cut away, at the same time plainly signifying, that when their *maduas*, or

¹ Forster, I. 477, 478.

parents, died, they mutilated their hands^k. At one corner of this house stood an image rudely carved in wood, about two feet in length, and in another a similar one. These buildings are called *Afiatoucas*; one reason for supposing them to be places of worship, as well as repositories for the dead, is, that the man who appeared to be a kind of high-priest, directed set speeches, which were supposed to be prayers, to these buildings; and the green sod, which covers the areas, or open places, before these buildings, have the appearance of being frequently trodden, so as to prevent the growth of the grass; but the images deposited within them are not supposed to be idols, as the natives treated them without any appearance of respect, and even set up one of them as a mark for some of the gentlemen to shoot at.

As far as the religious notions of these people could be judged of from what was seen during the short continuance of the ships here, and imperfectly as the language of the country was understood, they seemed to practise no idolatry; neither did they seem to have any particular veneration for birds, but to worship a supreme invisible Being^m. The priest, who led the gentlemen to the place of worship, was not long acquainted with them before they had proof of his being a potent drinker of the intoxicating pepper-water, which was served in little square cups made of banana-leaves, curiously figured. Some of the gentlemen tasted it; it had a nauseous, insipid flavour, which was afterwards followed by a strong pungency, and its colour was somewhat milky. The holy man took such large and frequent draughts of this

^k Forster, I. 451.

^l Cook, I. 220, 224. Forster, I. 451, 452, 455.

^m Forster, I. 455.

dainty beverage every evening, as to become quite intoxicated".

The reception which the two ships met with from these islanders, was no less confidential and friendly than that given them in the neighbouring island of Middleburg. They came to an anchor in Van Diemen's Road, 3d October, 1773, so named by Tasman, who also anchored there; soon after, the ships were crowded with people, some in canoes, and others swimming. In order to establish an useful barter captain Cook found it necessary to prohibit the purchase of all kinds of curiosities, and to confine the articles to be procured from the natives to provisions only; in consequence of which regulation all the cloth, matting, &c. was obliged to be re-landed on shore. The next morning the Indians returned with abundance of bananas, cocoa-nuts, fowls and pigs, which they exchanged for small nails and pieces of cloth; even old rags of any sort would procure a pig or a fowl. After a sufficient stock of refreshments were procured by these means, the restriction was taken off, and every one was left at liberty to trade as they thought proper. It was astonishing to see with what eagerness every one of the sailors caught at whatever he saw; the rage for buying curiosities was carried to such an excess as to become the ridicule of the natives, who offered pieces of sticks and stones to exchange; one waggish boy took a piece of human excrement on the end of a stick, and held it out to every one he met,

Their knowledge of the utility of iron was no more than to teach them to prefer nails to beads, and such trifles:

ⁿ Forster, I. 468.

some, but very few, would exchange a pig for a large nail or a hatchet. Old jackets, shirts, cloth, and even rags, were in more esteem than the best edge-tool that could be given them; notwithstanding which captain Cook calculates, that the whole amount of iron ware left at this island was not less than five hundred weight, chiefly in great and small nails^o. These islanders were in possession of some nails which were supposed to have been brought hither by Tasman one hundred and thirty years before. One of these nails was purchased; it is very small, and almost consumed with rust, but had been carefully preserved by being fixed in a wooden handle, probably to serve the purpose of a googe, or borer. From the stamp of antiquity which it bore, it is now deposited in the British Museum. Some small earthen pots were likewise bought, which were perfectly black with soot on the outside; these were at first thought to be memorials of Tasman's visit, but afterwards they were thought more likely to be manufactured by the natives themselves^p. The sailors bought great numbers of their cocks, in order to enjoy the barbarous amusement of setting them to fight: from the time they had left *Huabine* they had daily followed this cruel occupation of tormenting such fowls as they had procured there, by trimming their wings, and incensing them against each other; and some fought with the desperate fury of game cocks; but those purchased at *Tongo Tabboo* were not to be excited to the same fierceness; therefore, to punish them for their inoffensive disposition, the sailors were obliged to eat them^q. *Mabine* traded here with great eagerness for ornaments made of bright red feathers, which he assured the gentlemen of the ships had an extraordinary value at *Tabeitee* and the Society-Islands, and the event confirmed his assurance, as has been already

^o Cook, I. 197, 204, 217.^p Forster, I. 471.^q Idem 459.

lated,

lated. Notwithstanding the harmless disposition of these people, there were among them many who had as hearty a propensity to theft as any islanders in this sea; but though several muskets were fired at the offenders, without the direction or even knowledge of the commanders, yet it does not appear that any one was killed, or that the confidence and good-will of the natives was, on that account, suspended for a moment.

Their common method of saluting strangers is by touching or meeting noses; and the sign of peace which they displayed to the ships was a white flag when they first drew near the shore; but the people who came first on board brought with them, like their neighbours at Middleburg, some of the pepper-plant, and sent it before them into the ships. At the first arrival of the ships, a man of some note came on board the Resolution, and with great readiness descended into the cabin. His name, according to captain Cook, was *Attago*, but Mr. Forster calls him *Attabba*; he was a well-made man, with a handsome, open countenance; he received several presents, but what he prized the most was iron, and red European broad cloth. He soon singled out captain Cook from all the other gentlemen, making him a present of some cloth, and other things which he had about him; and, as a stronger testimony of friendship, exchanged names with himself. On their landing *Attago* pointed out many of the natives, who were afterwards found to be of superior rank to himself. The captains brought this man and another on board with them to dinner; the chief, who came with *Attago*, seemed one of those of superior rank to him, as the latter, who used to sit at table with the company be-

^f Page 138.

^g Cook, I. 220.

^h Idem I. 398.

fore, now retreated a few steps, sat down on the floor, and could not be prevailed on to eat in his sight. This respected chief was a blear-eyed elderly man. It should seem that this island is governed by a king, but how far his regal prerogatives extend are not known. *Attago* introduced the captains to the royal presence. As soon as the king appeared, this chief sat down under a tree, and desired the gentlemen to do the same. The king seated himself on a rising ground, about twelve or fifteen yards from them; having sat some time in this manner, both the captains got up, went forward and saluted his majesty, and sat down by him. They then presented him with a white shirt, which they put on his back, a few yards of red cloth, a brass kettle, a saw, two large spike nails, three looking-glasses, a dozen of medals, and some strings of beads. All this time he sat with a sullen, stupid gravity; he even did not seem to know what they were about; his arms appeared immovable at his sides; he did not so much as raise them when they put on the shirt; he scarcely made the least answer to any thing said to him, they therefore got up and took leave; but captain Cook stood at some distance to observe his actions. Soon after, he perceived him enter into conversation with *Attago*, and an old woman, whom the captain took to be his mother. The conversation was unintelligible to him; however, it made the king laugh in spite of his assumed gravity, for it is not likely that the solemn formality which he shewed was his natural disposition, as these islanders, like all others in this sea, have a great share of levity, and this prince was in the prime of life: at length he rose up and retired, with his mother and two or three attendants^u. The name of this regal statue was said to be *Ko-Hagbee-too-Fallango*. Early the next morning *Attago* came on board to breakfast with captain

^u Cook, J. 203.

Cook; as he was going out of the cabin he happened to see a *Tabitian* dog running about the deck. At this sight he could not conceal his joy, but clapping his hands on his breast, repeated the word *goorree* near twenty times. This word signifies a dog at *New-Zeeland*, as *oorree* does at *O-Ta-hitee*. The company were not a little surprized to hear him name an animal so readily, when there was none of the species in the country; they therefore presented him with a dog and a bitch, with which he went on shore in an ecstasy of joy.

PYLSTART ISLAND was first seen by Tasman, who gave it that name, which signifies arrow-tail. Its latitude is 22 deg. 26 min. south, and longitude 170 deg. 59 min. west. It is about two or three miles in circumference; high, steep, and barren.

S E C T. III.

Of ROTTERDAM, and the adjacent Islands.

THE island of Rotterdam lies, latitude 20 deg. 15 min. south; longitude 174 deg. 31 min. west. It was first discovered by Tasman, and from him received its name. It is of a triangular form, each side about three and a half or four miles; and has a salt-water lake in the middle; and all the springs of water that were found here were brackish; though the natives brought some very sweet and good in cocoa-nut shells, but from whence they had it was not known. The productions of the earth here, as well as the persons and dispositions of the natives, are much the same as at Amsterdam; the land is less cultivated; and the people seem much poorer in cloathing, matting, ornaments, and such like. Their manner of puncturing the body, their dress, the custom of clipping the beard, and powdering the

v Forster, I. 459, 460.

w Dalrymple, II. 75. Forster, I. 481.

hair;

hair; their arms, utensils and canoes; their language and manners, are exactly the same. In general they were extremely courteous to all whom they met from the ship, bowing their heads, and saying, *lelei woa*, "good friend," or some such word expressive of their friendly disposition. They readily undertook to conduct such as applied to them into the recesses of their country, climbed the highest trees to procure them flowers, and took to the water like spaniels after birds that were shot: they pointed out the finest plants, and gave them their proper names; and whenever any intimation was given that specimens of a certain kind of plant were wanted, they would go to any distance to procure them: they readily furnished every one with cocoa-nuts and shaddocks, and carried great loads with the utmost cheerfulness; for all which services they considered a nail, a bead, or even a small rag of cloth, as an ample return ^v.

An elderly woman, from the first arrival of the Resolution, was very sociable with captain Cook; he had no sooner landed than she presented a young girl to him, intimating that she was at his service. The damsel required, as a preliminary article, a spike nail, or a shirt; neither of which her gallant had to give her; which he intimated, and supposed, from such a declaration of his poverty, the proposal would have been withdrawn; but herein he was deceived, for the old dame signified that he might retire with the last upon credit. On this offer being declined, she began first to remonstrate, and then to abuse him; and though her meaning could be but badly understood by her words, her actions were expressive enough: she sneered in his face, as much as to say, what sort of a man are you, thus to refuse the embraces of so fine a young woman! The girl, it seems, was not wanting in beauty. These upbraidings soon sent the commander on board: when he was stepping into his

boat they wanted him to take the young lady along with him; but this was likewise declined, as strict orders had been given to suffer no woman, on any pretence whatever, to enter the ship ^x.

These people managed their canoes with the greatest agility, and swam with surprizing ease. Their common trading canoes were neatly made, and polished like those that have been already described, in speaking of Amsterdam. They always consist of two fastened to a transverse platform of planks, in the midst of which they erect a hut, where they place their goods, their arms, and utensils, and where they pass great part of their time; they have also holes, which give admittance into the body of each canoe: their masts are stout poles, which can be struck at pleasure; and their sails are very large and triangular, but not very proper to sail before the wind: all their cordage is excellent; and they have also contrived a very good ground tackle, consisting of a strong rope with large stones at the end, by means of which they come to an anchor ^y.

On the arrival of the ship great numbers of the natives came off in canoes, who enquired for captain Cook by name, so that the fame of these voyagers had already reached this spot. Fruits and roots, especially shaddocks and yams, were brought down in great plenty; a few fowls, and one or two small pigs, were all the animal food procured here. Whilst things were going on in this friendly manner, Mr. Patton, the surgeon, happened, rather incautiously, to wander alone to a remote part of the island, and as the tide was ebbing fast out of the cove, the boat was obliged to put off before his return: when he arrived at the beach, he agreed with an Indian, in a canoe, to convey him to the ship; but just as he was stepping in, another Indian watched his oppor-

^x Cook, II. 10.

^y Forster, II. 185.

tunity, and snatched away his fowling-piece, with which he made off with all speed. Hostilities being thus commenced, and the poor gentleman deprived of his defensive weapon, the natives proceeded to further violences, infomuch that he began to dread the most serious consequences: in this emergency he had presence of mind enough to take a tooth-pick case out of his pocket, and by presenting it to the plunderers in a threatening manner, led them to apprehend it to be some instrument of destruction, on which they retreated. The meridian sun now scorched him with its heat; he had walked the whole day, was spent with fatigue, and almost despaired of saving his life, when a handsome young woman, remarkable for her flowing curls which hung down on her bosom, took pity on his extremity, and stepped forward, with the greatest humanity and compassion expressed in her eye; innocence and goodness were so strongly marked in her countenance, that it was impossible to distrust her. She approached, and offered him a piece of shaddock, which was eagerly and thankfully accepted; she gradually supplied him with more, until he had consumed the whole fruit; and whilst, by her interposition, the assailants were awed into forbearance, a boat put off from the ship, at sight of which the whole crowd dispersed; only his generous benefactress, and an old man who appeared to be her father, remained sitting near him, with an unconcern which a noble and virtuous conduct inspires. She enquired the name of her friend; he told her that which the *Tabetians* had given him, *Pateenee*, and she immediately adopted it, changing it into *Patsenee*. On stepping into the boat he gave her and her father some presents, which he borrowed from the crew, and with which they retired highly gratified*. The outrages of some few individuals did not stop here; a musket was snatched away from one of the lieutenants, and after that

* Forster, II. 178.

some of the cooper's tools: these repeated depredations determined captain Cook to insist on the stolen goods being restored; he, therefore, caused some canoes to be seized, and some guns to be fired from the ship, as signals to the shooting and botanizing parties to repair to their quarters immediately: an Indian who was in one of the canoes that were seized, received several wounds in the thigh and legs with some small shot. This resolute conduct on the part of the commander procured a restitution of every article that had been purloined. The surgeon dressed the poor fellow's wounds that had been shot, and bled him; the shot had done little more than penetrate the skin; in the operation some poultice was wanting; the surgeon asked for ripe plantains, but the natives brought sugar-cane, which having chewed to a pulp, they gave it him to apply to the wound: this being of a more balsamic nature than the other, proves that these people have some knowledge of simples. As soon as the man's wounds were dressed the captain made him a present, which his master, or at least the man who owned the canoe, took from him, and, most probably, retained for himself^a. Whilst the great guns were fired from the ship, several canoes were about her, which all retired on the violent concussion which this discharge occasioned, one excepted, in which was a single Indian who was bailing water out of her, whilst she lay along-side directly under the guns: when the first was fired he just looked up, and then continued his work with perfect unconcern; nor had the second gun any other effect upon him; he did not stir till the water was all out of his canoe, then he paddled leisurely off. This man had frequently been observed to take fruit and roots out of other canoes, and sell them to the ship; if the owners did not willingly part with them, he took the things by force, from whence he obtained the name of custom-house officer: one time, after he had been collecting tribute, he happened to

^a Cook, II. 14.

be lying along-side of a sailing canoe; one of the people in her seeing him look another way, and his attention otherwise engaged, took the opportunity of stealing something out of his canoe, they then put off, and set their sail; but the man perceiving the trick that had been played him, darted after them, and soon getting on board their canoe, beat him who had taken his property, and not only brought back his own, but many other articles which he took from them. This man had likewise been observed making collections on the shore at the trading-place, on which account captain Cook took him for a person of consequence, and was going to make him a present; but some of the natives prevented him, saying, he was no *areebee* (chief): he had his hair always powdered with some kind of white dust^b. The captain thinks this man was the husband of the woman who had acted the procurefs so zealously on his account^c.

No king, or leading chief, was distinguished among these people, and their form of government is entirely unknown. A young dog and a bitch were left here, as they had no such animals among them, and were very fond of those which they saw. The people seem to be more afflicted with the leprosy, or some scrofulous disorder here than at any of the other islands. Captain Cook saw a man much in the same state of putrefaction with the woman Mr. Forster saw at Middleburg^d.

AMATTAFOA. A thick smoak was seen to arise from this island, which is visible at Rotterdam, and in the night a fire was seen to issue from it. The natives informed them that these appearances were constant, from whence it was concluded that there was a volcano thereon. Near to this island was a high peak called *Oghoo*. They lie eleven or twelve leagues from Rotterdam, or Anamocka, in the direction of

^b Cook, II. 15.^c Page 202.^d See page 135.

north-north-west. They are both inhabited, but neither appear to be fertile^c.

C H A P. VII.

Of the NEW HEBRIDES : Including the Tierra del Esperitu Santo of Quiros.

THE northern islands of this Archipelago were first discovered by that great navigator Quiros in 1606, and, not without reason, considered as a part of the southern continent, which at that time, and till very lately, was supposed to exist. They were next visited by M. de Bougainville in 1768, who besides landing on the Island of Lepers, did no more than discover that the land was not connected, but composed of islands, which he called *The Great Cyclades*. Captain Cook, besides ascertaining the extent and situation of these islands, added the knowledge of several in this group which were before unknown; he explored the whole cluster, and thinking himself thereby entitled to affix to them a general appellation, he named them *The New Hebrides*. They are situated between the latitudes of 14 deg. 29 min. and 20 deg. 4 min. south; and between 166 deg. 41 min. and 170 deg. 21 min. east longitude, and extend one hundred and twenty-five leagues in the direction of north-north-west, and south-south-east. The most northern part of this Archipelago, was called by M. de Bougainville *The Peak of the Etoile*; the whole cluster consists of the following islands; some of which have received names from the different European navigators; others retain the names which they bear among the natives, viz. *Tierra del Esperitu Santo*; *Mallicollo*; *St. Bartholomew*; *Isle of Lepers*; *Aurora*;

^c Cook, II. 12. Forster, II. 192.

Whitfuntide;

*Whitsuntide; Ambrym; Immer; Apoe; Three Hills; Sand-
wich; Montagu; Hinchinbrook; Shepherd; Eorramanga;
Irrenan; Annatom; and Tanna.*

On the peak of the Etoile were seen columns of smoak, which rolled up with great violence from the summit of an inland mountain, and gave strong proof of the existence of a volcano on that island.

TIERRA DEL ESPERITU SANTO is the most western and largest of all the Hebrides, being twenty-two leagues long, in the direction of north-north-west and south-south-east, twelve in breadth, and six in circuit. The land, especially the west-side, is exceedingly high and mountainous, and in many places the hills rise directly from the cliffs and beaches, every other part is covered with wood, or laid out in plantations^e. Here is a very large and safe bay; the two points, which forms its entrance, lie at ten leagues distance from each other. An uncommonly luxuriant vegetation was every where to be seen about this bay; the sides of the hills were chequered with plantations, and every valley watered by a stream. Here Quiros is supposed to have anchored, and to have given the name of *Vera Cruz* to the port in which his ships lay: this he describes to be so capacious as to be able to contain a thousand ships^f; but no such port was seen by the Resolution^g.

The country seemed populous. Two canoes, with triangular sails, and four or five men in each, came off towards the ship; the men were stoutly made, of a very dark colour, and had woolly hair; they were naked; some of them had a bunch of feathers on the top of their head, and others wore

^e Cook, II. 96, 97.

^f Dalrymple, I. 169.

^g Forster, II. 373.

a white

a white shell tied on the forehead; on their arms they wore bracelets of shell-work, like those which will be described at Mallicollo; and round their middle they wore a narrow belt, from whence a long slip of matted work, five inches broad, descended to the knees before, and reached as low behind: they had some spears with two or three prongs, which appeared to be intended for fish-gigs, and were possessed of no other arms. On the first day of arrival not all the signs of friendship which could be made them from the ship could induce them to come near enough to maintain any intercourse; but the next morning they ventured so close as to receive a present of nails, medals, Tahitian cloth, and red baize, of which articles of traffic the nails were most coveted. They fastened a branch of the pepper-plant to the same rope by which the nails had been lowered to them from the ship, and this emblem of friendship was the only return which they made for what had been given them. Many endeavours were used to converse with them, but their language was quite unintelligible, until Mr. Forster repeated the numerals in the dialect of the Friendly-Isles: as soon as he began to count, they interrupted him, and counted very exactly till ten. Having obtained this clue, they proceeded to enquire into the name that the country bore, but could not obtain the general one, only received information concerning particular parts. The languages of the neighbouring islands of *Mallicollo* and *Tanna* seemed quite unknown to them, unless the manner in which the words were pronounced rendered them unintelligible. The diffidence with which these people approached the ship, may very well be accounted for, from the traditional knowledge which doubtless subsists among them of the visit made by Quiros; for on his coming to an anchor, and sending a boat from the ship, a chief, or, as he is called in the narrative,

P

the

the king, attended by some Indians, came to the strand, and endeavoured to procure their departure by presents of fruit, but the Spaniards leaping on the shore made signs of peace. The Indian king, still willing to preserve a decorum, and maintain a proper distance, drew a line on the ground with a point of his bow, signifying, that none should pass that boundary. The commander of the party which had landed, thinking a compliance with so reasonable and proper a restriction would favour of cowardice, instantly passed the prescribed limits; the natives, jealous of their rights, which they saw spurned at by a set of pestilent intruders, discharged their arrows at the offenders; but neither the justice of their cause, or their personal bravery, could avail aught against the engines of destruction which were opposed to them; their arrows flew innocuous, and, in return, a discharge of fire-arms laid their king, and many of his followers, breathless on the beach^b.

According to the report of Quiros, who continued here thirty-six days, this country possesses cows and buffaloes; and great abundance of pearls were pretended to be found near this and the adjacent islands; but as nothing has been seen to confirm these accounts by the modern navigators, M. de Bougainville asks, "Has this Spanish navigator seen things in a wrong light, or has he wilfully disguised his discoveries?"ⁱ

Mr. Forster regrets, very feelingly, that they did not land on this island, as the country appeared to be one of the finest in the world, and its vegetable productions, he does not doubt, would have afforded the botanist an ample harvest of new plants, as, next to New-Zeeland, it was the largest

^b Dalrymple, I. 138.

ⁱ Bougainv. 301.

land they had then seen, and had never been examined by naturalists^k.

A shark was caught here, in which was found an insect of the *monoculus* tribe upon its back, which much resembled the species in the gills of salmon^l.

MALLICOLLO is the most considerable island next to *Esperitu Santo*; it is eighteen leagues long, from south-east to north-west; its greatest breadth, which is at the south-east end, is eight leagues; the north-west end is two-thirds its breadth, and narrower in the middle one-third. This contraction is occasioned by a wide and deep bay on the south-west side. It appears to be very fertile, and well inhabited; the land on the sea-coast is rather low, and lies with a greater slope from the hills which are in the middle of the island; latitude 16 deg. 28 min. south; 167 deg. 56 min. east. On enquiring of the natives the name of this island, they received in answer that it was *Mallicollo*, which has the closest resemblance possible to *Manicollo*, the name which Quiros received for it one hundred and sixty-eight years before. He did not indeed visit the island, but had his intelligence from the natives.

The south coast, which was most attentively examined by captain Cook, is luxuriantly clothed with wood, and other productions of nature; from the sea-shore to the very summits of the hills to the north-west, the country is less woody, but more agreeably intersected by lawns, some of which appeared to be cultivated^m. One of the gentlemen picked up an orange, which the natives called *ahbi-mora*;

^k Forster, II. 373.
Forster, II. 223.

^l Idem, 374.

^m Cook, II. 38.

this was the first orange met with in this sea, and was the only one that was seen here; being decayed, nothing can certainly be known whether it was fit to be eaten ⁿ. The vegetable productions of this country seemed to be in great variety; cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, bananas, sugar-canes, yams, addoes and turmeric; but captain Cook thinks that the fruits here are not so good as at the Society and Friendly-Isles, which general opinion he founds on the proof he had of the cocoa-nut trees, and the appearance of the plantain and bread-fruit. Hogs, and common poultry, are their domestic animals; and as the frequent squeaking of pigs was heard in the woods, it is concluded that the former are in considerable numbers here. A brace of Tahitian puppies was given them, with a view to stock the country with that species of animal; these they received with strong signs of satisfaction, and called them *brooas*, (hogs), from whence they were certainly quite not unknown to them; no other quadruped was seen. The woods appeared to be inhabited by many species of birds ^o. Here was caught a shark, which measured nine feet in length, on which the ship's company feasted with great relish: this shark, when cut open, was found to have the boney point of an arrow sticking in its head, having been shot quite through the skull. The wound was healed so perfectly, that not the smallest vestige of it appeared on the outside; a piece of the wood still remained sticking to the boney point, as well as a few fibres with which it had been tied on, but both the wood and the fibres were so rotted as to crumble into dust at the touch ^p. Two large reddish fish of the sea-bream kind were likewise caught, on which most of the officers, and some of the petty officers, dined the next day. The night following every one who

ⁿ Cook, II. 32.

^o Forster, II. 220, 226. Cook, II. 32, 36.

^p Forster, II. 274.

had

ha
an
an
pa
po
a g
the
rea
fist
wh
boa
Spa
alw
Ea
veg
flan
poi
offic
thei
thei

T
ill-p
ferer
of a
face.
blac
woo
crisp
serve
whic

Cook

had eaten of them was seized with violent pains in the head and bones, attended with a scorching heat all over the skin, and numbness in the joints; even such hogs and dogs as had partaken of these fish, gave strong symptoms of being poisoned: one hog, who had eaten of the garbage, swelled to a great size, and died at night: several dogs were affected in the same manner; they groaned most piteously, had violent reachings, and could hardly drag their limbs along: these fish were supposed to have been of the same sort with those which Quiros mentions to have produced similar effects on board his ship, and which he calls *pargos* ⁹, which is the Spanish name for the sea-bream. Perhaps these fish are not always poisonous, but like many species in the West and East-Indies, may acquire that quality by feeding on poisonous vegetables; which conclusion is supported by the circumstance of the intestines having been found to be more poisonous than the rest: the effects of this poison on the officers continued for near a fortnight, during which time their pains returned every night, their teeth were loose, and their gums and palate excoriated ^r,

The natives of Mallicollo are described as the most ugly, ill-proportioned people imaginable, and in every respect different from the other islanders in the South-Sea; they are of a very dark colour, and diminutive size; long heads, flat faces, and monkey countenances; their hair, in general, black or brown, short and curly, but not quite so soft and woolly as that of a negro. Their beards are very strong, crisp, and bushy, and generally black and short; but what serves greatly to increase their natural deformity is, a custom which they have of wearing a belt, or cord, round their

⁹ Dalrymple, I. 145.

^r Forster, II. 224, 237, 244, 243.

Cook, II, 39, 40.

waist; this rope is as thick as a man's finger, and is tied so tight round their belly, that it would be fatal to a person unaccustomed from infancy to such an unnatural ligature, for it cuts such a deep notch across the naval, that the belly seems in a manner divided, one part being above, and the other below the rope. The men go quite naked, except a piece of cloth, or leaf, used as a wrapper. Most other nations invent some kind of covering from motives of shame, but here a roll of cloth, continually fastened to the belt, rather displays than conceals, and is the opposite of modesty. Besides having the flat broad nose, and projecting cheek-bones of a negro, and a very short forehead, many encreased their natural ugliness, by painting their faces and breasts with a black colour. Some few had a small cap on the head made of matted-work. They wear bracelets of black and white shells, which press the upper arm so closely, that they must have been put on when the wearer was very young: this tends, as well as the belt, to reduce the Mallicollesse to that slender shape which characterises them. The depression of their foreheads is supposed to be artificial, as the heads of infants may be squeezed into any kind of form.

The first natives that were seen carried clubs in their hands, and waded into the water, carrying green boughs, the universal sign of peace. In a day's time they ventured to come within a few yards of the ship's boat, which was sent out, when they dipped their hands into the sea, and gathering some water in their palms, poured it on their heads. The officers in the boat, in compliance with their example, did the same, with which the Indians appeared to be much pleased. They repeated the word *tomarr*, or *tomarro*, continually, which seemed to be an expression among them equivalent to *tayo* among the Society-Islands. The
greater

greater part were now armed with bows and arrows, and a few with spears. At length they ventured near the ship, and received a few presents of Tahitian cloth, which they eagerly accepted, and handed up their arrows in exchange, some of which were pointed with wood, and some with bone, and daubed with a black gummy stuff which was supposed to be poisoned; but its effect was tried on a dog, without producing any dangerous symptoms. They continued about the ship, talking with great vociferation, but at the same time in such a good-humoured manner as was very entertaining. At looking stedfastly at one of them, he began to chatter with great fluency, and "grinned horribly a ghastly smile." Some continued about the ship till midnight; finding, however, at length, they were but little noticed, for the captain wanted to get rid of them, they returned on shore, where the sound of singing and beating their drums was heard all night. Mr. Forster supposes there may be fifty thousand inhabitants on this extensive island, which contains more than six hundred square miles. "We ought," says he, "to figure to ourselves this country as one extensive forest; they have only began to clear and plant a few insulated spots which are lost in it, like small islands in the Pacific Ocean. Perhaps, if we could ever penetrate through the darkness which involves the history of this nation, we might find that they have arrived in the South-Sea much later than the natives of the Friendly and Society-Islands: so much at least is certain, that the latter appear to be a race totally distinct from the former; their form, their language, and their manners, strongly mark this difference. The natives, on some parts of New-Guinea and Papua, seem to correspond, in many particulars, with what has been observed of the Mallicollese^s. They differ likewise very

^s Forster, II. 227.

widely from the light-coloured inhabitants of the South-Sea, by keeping their bodies entirely free of punctures. Whatever these people saw they coveted, but they never repined at a refusal. The looking-glasses which were given them were highly esteemed, and they took great pleasure in viewing themselves; so that these ugly people seemed to have more conceit than the beautiful nation at O-Taheitee and the Society-Islands. Early the next morning the natives came off to the ship in their canoes, and four or five of them went on board without any arms. They soon became familiar, and, with the greatest ease, climbed up the shrouds to the mast-head; when they came down the captain took them into his cabin, and gave them medals, ribbons, nails, and pieces of red baize. They appeared the most intelligent of any nation that had been seen in the South-Sea; they readily understood the meaning conveyed by signs and gestures, and in a few minutes taught the gentlemen of the ship several words in their language, which appeared to be wholly distinct from that general language of which so many dialects are spoken at the Society-Islands, the Marquesas, Friendly-Isles, Easter-Island, and New-Zeeland. Their language was not difficult to pronounce, but contained more consonants than any of them ^u. Mr. Forster, and some of the gentlemen from the ship, went on shore, and conversed with the natives, who with great good-will sat down on the stump of a tree to teach them their language. They were surprized at the readiness of their guests to remember, and seemed to spend some time in pondering how it was possible to preserve the sound by such means as pencils and paper. They were not only assiduous in teaching, but had curiosity

[†] Forster, II. 231.

^u Forster, II. 204, 227, &c. Cook, II. 34.

enough.

enough to learn the language of the strangers, which they pronounced with such accuracy as led their instructors to admire their extensive faculties and quick apprehension. Observing their organs of speech to be so flexible, they tried the most difficult sounds in the European languages; had recourse to the compound Russian stich, all of which they pronounced at the first hearing, without the least difficulty. They presently learnt the English numerals, which they repeated rapidly on their fingers; so that what they wanted in personal beauty was amply compensated to them in acuteness of understanding^v. They express their admiration by hissing like a goose^w,

Their music is not remarkable either for harmony or variety, but seemed to be of a more lively turn than that at the Friendly-Islands^x. Their behaviour to their visitants was, in general, harmless, but cautious; they gave them no invitations to stay among them, for they seemed not to relish the proximity of such powerful people, being probably accustomed to acts of violence and outrage from their neighbours. "In some of their countenances," says Mr. Forster, "we thought we could trace a mischievous, ill-natured disposition; but we might mistake jealousy for hatred^y."

Very few women were seen, but those few were no less ugly than the men: they were of small stature, and their heads, faces, and shoulders, were painted red. Those who were grown up, and probably married, had short pieces of a kind of cloth, or rather matting, round their waists, reaching

^v Forster II. 214.

^w Cook II. 36.

^x Forster II. 223

^y Vol. II. 234.

nearly to their knees; the rest had only a string round the middle, with a wisp of straw; and the younger ones, from infancy to the age of ten years, went stark naked, like the boys of the same age. The women were not observed to have any finery in their ears, or round their necks and arms, it being fashionable in this island for the men only to adorn themselves, and wherever this custom prevails the other sex is commonly oppressed, despised, and in a state of servility. Here the women were seen with bundles on their backs, which contained their children; the men seemed to have no kind of regard for them; none of them came off to the ship, and they generally kept at a distance when any party landed from the boat. They perforate the cartilage of the nose between the nostrils, and thrust therein a piece of white stone about an inch and an half long, which is bent like the curvature of a bow^w. The houses here are like those of the other isles, rather low, and covered with palm-thatch. Some were enclosed, or walled round with boards, and the entrance to these was by a square hole at one end^x.

Their weapons are bows and arrows, and a club about two feet and a half in length, made of the casuarina wood, commonly knobbed at one end, and well polished. This weapon they hang on their right shoulder, from a thick rope made of a kind of grass. It appeared to be preserved for close engagements, after having emptied the quiver. On the left wrist they wear a circular wooden plate, neatly covered, and joined with straw, about five inches in diameter, upon which they break the violence of the recoiling bow-string, and preserve their arm unhurt^y. Their arrows are made

^w Forster, II. 219, 221. Cook, II. 33, 35.

^x Cook, II. 32.

^y Forster, II. 215.

of a sort of reed, and are sometimes armed with a long sharp point made of the red wood, and sometimes with a very hard wood made of bone; and these points are all covered with a substance, which was supposed to be poisoned; indeed the people themselves confirmed these suppositions by making signs to the gentlemen of the ship not to touch the point, and giving them to understand that if they were pricked by them they would die; they are very careful of them themselves, and keep them always wrapt up in a quiver: some of these arrows are armed with two or three points each, with small prickles on the edge to prevent the arrow being drawn out of the wound^a: repeated and effectual trials of the virulence of this poison were made upon dogs, but they gave no signs of being hurt by it.

Their food seems to be principally vegetables, since they apply themselves to husbandry. As hogs and fowls are bred here, the natives, doubtless, feast sometimes on pork and poultry, and as they have canoes it may be supposed that they draw a part of their subsistence from the ocean^a. The greatest number of canoes that were seen along-side the ship at one time did not exceed eighty, or, according to Mr. Forster, fourteen^b, and no more than four or five people in each: they were small, not exceeding two feet in length, of indifferent workmanship, and without ornament, but provided with an outrigger.

After some slight indications of a hostile intention on the part of the natives, which they had shewn in their canoes whilst about the ship, captain Cook, with a party of marines in two boats, landed in the face of four or five hundred

^a Cook, II. 36. ^a Forster, II. 231. Cook, II. 34. ^b Vol. II. 220.

Indians who were assembled on the shore. Though they were all armed with bows and arrows, clubs and spears, they made not the least opposition; on the contrary, seeing the captain advance alone, unarmed, with only a green branch in his hand, one of them, who seemed to be a chief, giving his bow and arrows to another, met him in the water, bearing also a green branch. When they met, the branches were exchanged, and the chief led the captain by the hand up to the crowd, to whom he immediately distributed presents; in the mean time the marines were landed, and drawn up upon the beach. The captain then made signs that he wanted wood, and they by signs gave him permission to cut down the trees. A small pig was presently brought, and presented to the captain, who in return gave the bearer a piece of cloth. It was expected, from this instance, that an exchange of provisions for various articles of merchandize would take place, but these expectations proved fallacious; no more pigs were procured, and only about half a dozen cocoa-nuts, and a small quantity of fresh water. As these islanders were possessed of hogs as well as fowls, their backwardness to part with either might be owing to the little estimation in which they held such articles as were tendered in barter; for they set no value on any nails, or any other kind of iron tools, and held all the gew-gaws of finery equally cheap. They would now and then exchange an arrow for a piece of cloth, but very seldom would part with a bow. After sending what wood had been cut on board, the party all embarked, and the natives dispersed. When the ship was about to leave this island, captain Cook gives the following relation. "When the natives saw us under sail they came off in canoes, making exchanges with

more
 proo
 had
 drop
 had
 vant
 have
 and
 in p
 reach
 soon
 fever
 with
 and
 again
 and
 made
 actua

S
 and
 latitu

A
 M. c
 tant
 ship
 sent
 beau
 twe

more confidence than before, and giving such extraordinary proofs of their honesty as surprized us. As the ship at first had fresh way through the water, several of the canoes dropped astern after they had received goods, and before they had time to deliver theirs in return: instead of taking advantage of this as our friends at the Society-Islands would have done, they used their utmost efforts to get up with us, and deliver what they had already been paid for; one man in particular followed us a considerable time, and did not reach us till it was calm, and the thing was forgotten; as soon as he came along-side he held up the article, which several on board were ready to buy, but he refused to part with it till he saw the person to whom he had before sold it, and to him he gave it; the person not knowing the man again, offered him something in return, which he refused, and shewing him what had been given before, at length made him sensible of the nice sense of honour which had actuated this Indian^d.

ST. BARTHOLOMEW is six or seven leagues in circuit, and makes the north-east point of Bougainville's passage; latitude 15 deg. 23 min.

AURORA. Mr. Forster supposes the *Peak of the Etoile* of M. de Bougainville's to be situated on this island. Inhabitants were seen here, and canoes, but none came off to the ship. A fine beach, and most luxuriant vegetation, presented themselves; the whole country was woody, and a beautiful cascade poured through a forest; the island is about twelve leagues long, but not above five miles broad in any

^d Cook, II. 53.

part, lying nearly north and south; the middle is 15 deg. 6 min. south latitude, and 168 deg. 24 min. east longitude^c. A channel divided this island from

WHIT-SUNDAY ISLE, which lies about four miles to the south, runs in the same direction, and is of the same length; having more sloping exposures than Aurora, it appears to be better inhabited, and to contain more plantations.

ISLE OF LEPERS, so called by M. de Bougainville, from the number of people afflicted with the leprosy that were seen upon it. It lies between Esperitu Santo and Aurora, eight leagues from the former, and three from the latter, in latitude 15 deg. 22 min. south, and nearly under the same meridian as the south-east end of Mallicollo; it is of an egg-like figure, very high, and eighteen or twenty leagues in circuit; many beautiful cascades of water were seen pouring down from the hills^e. Here the palms grow on the hills, where they had never been seen on any other islands^h. These islanders are of two colours, black and mulattoes; their lips are thick, their hair woolly, and sometimes of a yellowish cast; they are short, ugly, and ill-proportioned, and most of them infected with the leprosy. The women are no less disgusting than the men; they go almost naked; they have bandages to carry their children on their backs, on the cloth of which these bandages are made, are very pretty drawings of a fine crimson colour.

None of the men have beards. They pierce their nose in order to fix some ornament to it; they likewise wear on

^c Forster, II. 200. Cook, II. 26.

^f Forster, II. 202.

^g Cook, II. 97.

^h Forster, II. 200.

their

their arm, in form of a bracelet, the tooth of a babyrousa, or a substance like ivory; on the neck they have pieces of tortoise-shell. Their arms are bows and arrows, clubs of iron-wood, and stones, which they use without slings; the arrows are reeds, armed with a long and very sharp point made of bone; some of these points are square, and armed on the edges with thick prickles, in such a manner as to prevent the arrows being drawn out of a wound; they have likewise sabres of iron-wood. Their language was unintelligible to *Oatourou* the native of *O-Tahitee*^l. The natives appeared to be very friendly to M. de Bougainville when he touched here in 1768, until all the men were embarked, when they sent a flight of arrows after them, which assault, although it was attended with no bad consequences, was revenged by discharging a volley of musketry, which killed several of the natives^k. It is not therefore to be wondered at, that in 1774, when captain Cook appeared off their coast, the natives should be shy of any intercourse with strangers, when the hasty resentment of such had stained their shores with blood: indeed two or three natives put off in a canoe, but no tokens of friendship could induce them to come near the ship^l.

AMERYM. This island is about seventeen leagues in circuit, and two leagues and an half from the south-end of Whitsuntide. Its shores are rather low, but the land rises with an unequal ascent to an high mountain in the middle of the island, from whence great quantities of smoke issued, which gave occasion to suppose, that a volcano was seated there^m.

^l Bougainv. 298.

^k Ib. 300.

^l Cook, II. 26.

^m Cook, II. 98.

APREE is not less than twenty leagues in circuit; its longest direction is about eight leagues north-west and south-east; it is of considerable height, and hath a hilly surface diversified with woods and lawns ⁿ.

SANDWICH is twenty-five leagues in circuit, its greatest extent is ten leagues to the south-west of Mallicollo; several small islands lay dispersed about here, to which captain Cook gave the names of Shepherd's Islands, Three Hills, Two Hills, the Monument, Montagu, and Hinchinbrook ^o.

IRROMANGA, or ERROMANGO, lies eighteen leagues from Sandwich Island, and is twenty-four or twenty-five leagues in circuit; the middle of it lies in eighteen deg. fifty-four min. south latitude, and one hundred sixty-nine deg. nineteen min. east longitude. These islanders seem to be of a different race from those of Mallicollo, and speak a different language. They are of the middle size, have a good shape, and tolerable features; their colour is very dark and they paint their faces, some with black and others with red pigment; their hair is very curly and crisp, and somewhat woolly. But few women were seen, and those were ugly; they wore a petticoat made of the leaves of some plant. The men, like those of Mallicollo, were in a manner naked, having only the belt about the waist, and the piece of cloth or leaf used for a wrapper. No canoes were seen in any part of the island. They live in houses covered with thatch, and their plantations are laid out by line, and fenced round ^p.

Captain Cook went on shore here with two boats; he presented some of the natives with medals and cloth, and re-

ⁿ Cook, II. 99.

^o Ib. 100.

^p Ib. 49.

ceived every token of amity in return : he made signs that he wanted water ; one man ran to a house at a small distance, and presently returned with a little in a bamboo ; he next asked for something to eat, and was as readily presented with a yam and some cocoa-nuts : all this time the whole group were armed with clubs, spears, darts, and bows and arrows, which excited some suspicion, and led captain Cook to cut short his visit, telling the chief by signs, that he should soon return. Seeing their guests about to depart, they endeavoured to haul that boat ashore which had the captain on board her, whilst others snatched the oars out of the people's hands ; at the head of this party was the chief : such as could not come at the boat, stood behind with darts, stones, bows and arrows in their hands, ready to support those that were most forward. Signs and threats having no effect on these people, personal safety became the only consideration, but in this emergency captain Cook was unwilling to fire among the crowd, but resolved to make the chief alone fall a victim to his own treachery ; but his musket, at that critical moment, missed fire, which could not fail of giving these people a very mean opinion of the weapons that were opposed to them ; they began, therefore, by showing how much more effectual theirs were, by throwing stones and darts, and shooting arrows ; on which a general discharge of fire-arms could be no longer avoided : it threw them into confusion, but a second was hardly sufficient to drive them off the beach. Four lay, to all appearance, dead on the shore, but two of them afterwards crawled into the bushes : not half of the muskets would go off, which saved the lives of many of these mistaken poor wretches : one of the men in the boat was wounded in the cheek with a dart, the point of which was as thick as a finger, and yet it entered above two inches : an arrow struck the master on

the breast, but as its force was spent, it hardly penetrated the skin. Their arrows were pointed with hard wood. The report of the muskets on shore alarmed those in the ship, and another boat was immediately sent off, and a swivel shot fired to the part where a number of the natives were assembled, and a great gun fired towards the hills, which struck the natives with a panic, and they all hastened to skreen themselves in the bushes. With this unhappy skirmish all intercourse with the natives ended.

TANNA lies six leagues on the south-side of Erromango; it is about eight leagues long, and three or four broad; 19 deg. 30 min. south; 169 deg. 38 min. east, and about twenty-four leagues in circuit. Its name signifies *earth* in the Malay language. The soil, in some parts, is a rich black mould; in other parts it seemed to be composed of decayed vegetables, and the ashes of a volcano, which was seen about eleven miles to the west of the ship, burning with great fury. The country is, in general, so covered with trees, shrubs, and plants, as to choak up the bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts. The houses and inhabitants are thinly scattered. Several ponds of stagnant water were seen, in which the natives had planted great quantities of eddoes. During the sixteen days that captain Cook continued here, the volcano vomited up, at different times, vast quantities of fire and smoak, accompanied with an explosion about once in five minutes: some of these explosions resembled violent claps of thunder, and a rumbling noise continued for about half a minute: the whole air was filled with smokey particles and ashes, which occasioned much pain when they fell into the eye; at one time great stones were seen thrown up

^q Cook, II. 45, 46, 47, 48.

^r Forster, II. 253, 254.

^s Forster, II. 355.

^t Idem, 267.

high in the air, some of which were at least as large as the hull of a ship's long-boat: its fires presented a most pleasing and magnificent sight: the smoak which rolled up, from time to time, in thick and heavy volumes, was coloured with all the various hues of yellow, orange, crimson, and purple, which died away into a reddish grey and brown: as often as a new explosion happened, the whole country, with its shaggy forests, were tinged with the same orange and purple, according to its distance, or particular exposure to the volcanic light. It sometimes continued quite silent for five or six days together. It was remarked, that the explosions of the volcano re-commenced after showers of rain, so that it should seem that rain excites them by promoting or increasing the formation of various mineral substances in the mountain. The black ashes with which the whole country was strewed, were found to be long, needle-like, semitransparent shreds, which contribute greatly to that prodigious luxuriance of vegetation which is remarkable on this island; many plants here attaining twice the height which they reach in other countries; their leaves are broader, their flowers larger, and more richly scented. Mr. Forster ascended a hill about six miles distant from this volcano; a sulphurous smell betrayed a steam rising out of the ground: there was a little mound of whitish earth which looked as if it was calcareous on the side of the path, almost hid by the branches of several sorts of wild fig-trees, that throve luxuriously on this spot. From this mound was seen a vapour, or steam, rising continually: the earth was so hot that they could hardly bear to stand upon it, and they found it impregnated with native sulphur. When they stirred in the white earth they found the steam coming up faster, and on tasting it observed a styptic, or astringent quality, like that of alum in it. They proceeded from thence considerably

higher; the surface then became barren, and two other places were found that emitted steam, but not in such quantities as the first, nor so strongly scented: at every explosion of the volcano the steam was observed to rise more copiously than before, from whence a subterranean connection may be inferred. An experiment was made to find the degree of heat contained in this steam; the thermometer was entirely buried in the white earth from whence the vapour issued; after it had remained one minute it rose to 210 deg. which is nearly the heat of boiling water, and remained stationary there for five minutes, which was the whole time it was left in the hole; as soon as it was taken out, it fell instantly to 95 deg. and gradually descended to 80 deg. where it had stood previous to the immersion. The perpendicular height of the first solfatara, above the level of the sea, is about eighty yards^u. Some small shell-fish were thrown into the spring, and they were boiled in two or three minutes; a piece of silver, after laying in the water above half an hour, came out perfectly bright and untarnished.

Several new plants were collected here, and a variety of odoriferous shrubs, and some others which were cultivated only for their elegant appearance. The plantations on this island consist, for the most part, of yams, bananas, eddoes, and sugar-canes, all which being very low, permit the eye to take in a great extent of country. No less than forty different species of plants are cultivated here, some of which are unknown at the Society and Friendly-Islands. The bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and plantains, are not so good here as at *O-Tahitee*, but sugar-canes and yams are not only in greater plenty, but of superior quality, and much larger;

^u Forster, II. 343.

one yam which was procured here weighed fifty-six pounds, and the whole perfectly good. Here are great numbers of fig-trees, which the natives cultivate for the sake of the fruit and the leaves; they are of two or three different kinds, and one sort in particular bears figs of the common size, which are woolly, like peaches, on the outside, and have a beautiful crimson pulp, like pomegranates; they are sweetish and juicy, but rather insipid. Mr. Forster, in his botanical excursions on this island, shot a pigeon, in the craw of which was a wild nutmeg, and on shewing it to the natives, one of them produced three other nutmegs, which were wrapped in their mace, but they could not, or did not, point out the tree on which they grew ^v. One of the kind of pigeons which feeds on the nutmeg was presented alive to her majesty by Mr. Forster. Here was shot a species of wild-duck hitherto unknown to naturalists ^w. Some small birds were seen here with a very beautiful plumage, and of a kind which had not been seen before; but, in general, birds are not more numerous here than at *O-Tahitee*. Of the fish on this coast but little was known; but as the natives were seen to have no methods of catching them but by striking them, it is probable that they draw but little of their subsistence from the water. Upwards of three hundred pounds weight of mullet, and other fish, were caught by three hauls with the seine ^x

A young native, named *Wha-a-gou*, was shewn every part of the ship, but nothing fixed his attention a moment, or caused in him the least surprize. He had no knowledge of goats, dogs, or cats, calling them all hogs, (*booga*). Captain Cook made him a present of a dog and a bitch, as he

^v Forster, II. 337.

^w Idem, II. 335.

^x Cook, II. 56.

shewed a liking to that kind of animal ^v. They appear to have plenty of hogs, but very few domestic fowls ^z. Some few rats of the same kind as is common on the other islands in the Pacific Ocean, were seen running about here; they particularly frequent the fields of sugar-cane, in which they make great depredations; the natives, therefore, dig several holes all round these plantations, in which they catch these animals ^a.

The natives of this island are of the middle size, and their persons stronger and better proportioned than those of the Mallicolse; their colour is a dark chestnut brown, with a very swarthy mixture; like the natives of Mallicollo they go naked, having only a string round the belly, which did not, however, cut their body in so shocking a manner as that at the other island. Their hair is generally black or brown, growing to a tolerable length, and very crisp and curly; they separate it into small locks, which they woold or cue round with the rind of a slender plant, down to an inch of the ends, and as the hair grows the woold is continued; each of these cues, or locks, is somewhat thicker than common whipchord, and they look like a parcel of small strings hanging down the crown of their heads; their beards, which are strong and bushy, are generally short. The women do not wear their hair so, but cropped; nor do the boys till they approach manhood. They make use of a cylindrical piece of alabaster, two inches long, which they wear in the cartilaginous part between the nostrils, as a nose-jewel, in the same manner as is practised at Mallicollo. Not one single corpulent man was seen here; all are active and full of spirit. Their features are large, the nose broad, but the eyes full, and, in general, agreeable. Several had a swelling in

^v Cook, II. 59.

^z Idem, 77.

^a Forster, II. 374.

the upper eye-lids, which was thought to be occasioned by sitting in the smoak, for they were seen to huddle round fires towards the evening, then feeling the air too cool for their naked bodies. By this tumour their sight was so obstructed, that they were obliged to lean their heads backwards till their eye was in a horizontal line with the object which they wished to view ^b. These people make incisions chiefly on the upper arm and belly, which are in the stead of punctures; they cut the flesh with a bamboo, or sharp shell, and apply a particular plant, which forms an elevated scar on the surface of the skin after it is healed. These scars are formed to represent flowers, and other fancied figures, which are deemed a great beauty by the natives ^c. Most of them have an open, manly, and good-natured air, though some were seen as in other nations, whose countenances seemed to betray malevolence ^d. Though like all the tropical nations they are active and nimble, and seem to excel in the use of arms, yet they are not fond of labour; they never would put a hand to assist in any work that the ship's company was carrying on, which the Indians of the other islands used to delight in. Here they throw all the laborious drudgery on the women, many of whom were seen carrying a child at their backs, and a bundle under their arm, and a fellow strutting before them with only a club or a spear; and little troops of women passed to and fro along the beach, laden with fruit and roots, escorted by a party of men armed. What reason they had for thus going armed could not be discovered. "I cannot say," says captain Cook, "that the women are beauties, but I think them handsome enough for the men, and too handsome for the use that is made of them. They make themselves blacker than they are, by painting their bodies with a pigment of the colour of black lead; they

^b Forster, II. 326.^c *Ib.* 278.^d *Ib.* 274.

likewise use another sort which is red; and a third sort brown: all these, but especially the first, they lay on with a liberal hand, not only on the face, but over the neck, shoulders, and breast.*

Their ears are hung full of tortoise-shell rings, and necklaces of shells fall on their bosom. Some of the elderly women had caps made of a green plantain leaf, or of matted work, but this head-dress was rather uncommon†. But the number of ornaments considerably increased with age, the oldest and ugliest being loaded with necklaces, ear-rings, nose-jewels, and bracelets‡. The women here are expert cooks, they roast and broil the yams and bananas, they stew the green leaves of a kind of fig, they bake puddings made of a paste of bananas and eddoes, containing a mixture of cocoa-nut kernel and leaves.

The domestic life of the people of *Tanna* is not wholly destitute of amusements; they appear to be of a more serious turn than the people of the Friendly and Society-Isles, but their music is in greater perfection than any in the South-Sea. Mr. Forster happening to hum a tune, many of the natives entreated him very earnestly to sing to them: to please them the company gave them a great variety of different airs, German and English songs, which pleased them very much; but doctor Sparrman's Swedish tunes gained universal applause. In return the gentlemen asked the natives to sing, which they did very harmoniously. Though the tune was very simple, it ran through a much more considerable compass of notes than it employed at *Tabeitee* or *Tongo-Tabboo*,

* Cook, II. 39.

† Forster, II. 230.

‡ Idem II. 324.

and

and h
fofter
to be
the to
began
the fan
people
or jest
sea.
confiss
with t
and c
not pe
amuse
so fam
guests
to unc
gestur
first h
on the
fright
partic
desiro
ever,
taken

Th
Engla
some v
and al
were
beside

and had a serious turn, which distinguished it from the softer effeminate music of those islands: the words seemed to be metrically arranged, and flowed, very currently, from the tongue. When the first had finished his song, another began; his tune was different as to the composition, but had the same serious style which marked the general turn of the people; and indeed they were never seen to laugh so heartily, or jest so facetiously, as the more polished nations in this sea. They likewise produced a musical instrument, which consisted of eight reeds, like the syrinx of *Tongo-Tabboo*, with this difference, that the reeds regularly decreased in size, and comprehended an octave, though the single reeds were not perfectly in tune^h. After the gentlemen had frequently amused the Indians with singing to them, the latter became so familiar at last as to point out some young girls to their guests, whom, from an excess of hospitality not uncommon to uncivilized nations, they offered to their friends with gestures not in the least equivocal. The women, at the first hint of the civility which the men intended to confer on the strangers, ran off to a great distance, seemingly much frightened, and shocked at their indelicacy. The Indians, particularly the younger part of the company, were very desirous that the gentlemen should pursue the girls; however, they seemed very well pleased that their hint was not takenⁱ.

Their houses are like the roof of a thatched house in England, taken off the walls, and placed on the ground; some were open at both ends, others partly closed with reeds, and all were covered with palm-thatch. A few of them were thirty or forty feet long, and fourteen or sixteen broad, besides which they have other mean hovels, which were sup-

^h Forster, II. 318, 319.

ⁱ Idem 345, 346.

posed to be meant only to sleep in. It seems probable, from what captain Cook saw, that these people dispose of their dead in a similar manner to that practised at *O-Tahitee*. They wear the hair of their deceased relations round their necks ^k.

The weapons in use here with which they take the most pains, in point of neatness, come far short of some others that were seen in other islands. They are clubs, spears, or darts, bows and arrows, and stones; the clubs are of three or four kinds, and from three to five feet long; they seem to place most dependence on the darts, which are pointed with three bearded edges; in throwing them they make use of a becket, that is a piece of stiff plaited cord, about six inches long, with an eye in one end, and a knot at the other; the eye is fixed on the fore-finger of the right hand, and the other end is hitched round the dart, where it is nearly on an equipoise; they hold the dart between the thumb and the remaining fingers, which serve only to give it direction, the velocity being communicated by the becket and fore-finger. The former flies off from the dart the instant its velocity becomes greater than that of the hand; but it remains on the finger ready to be used again. With darts they kill both birds and fish, and are sure of hitting a mark within the compass of the crown of a hat at the distance of eight or ten yards, but at double that distance it is chance if they hit a mark the size of a man's body, though they will throw the weapon sixty or seventy yards. The arrows are made of reeds pointed with hard wood; some are bearded, and some are not, and those for shooting birds have two, three, and sometimes four points; the stones they use are, in general, the branches of coral rocks, from eight to fourteen inches

^k Cook, II, 68.

long, and from an inch to an inch and a half in diameter. Those who used stones kept them generally in their belts^l.

Their canoes resemble those at the Friendly-Islands in form, but in workmanship are much inferior; all of them have out-riggers, and some may contain twenty people. Their sails are low triangular mats, of which the broadest part is uppermost, and the sharp angle below. A long piece of timber hollowed out in the middle forms the bottom of the canoe, and upon this one or two planks are fixed, forming the two sides by means of ropes of the cocoa-nut fibres. Their oars are ill-shaped, and very clumsily made^m.

Besides the common language of the island, and besides a dialect of the Friendly-Islands, some words were collected of a third language, which was chiefly current among the inhabitants of its western hills. The numerals of all the three languages were obtained, which appeared to be totally distinct. In the common language of *Tanna* two or three words were met with which had a clear affinity with the language of *Mallicollo*, and about the same number corresponded with some words of the Malay, but, in general, they are wholly unlike each other, and have no affinity to any known tongue. There is a strong kind of aspiration, and a guttural sound, in many words at *Tanna*, which are, however, very sonorous, and full of vowels, and therefore easily pronounced. Some of the natives whom Mr. Forster met with on an excursion, related to him a little incident that had happened, in the language of the Friendly-Isles; when he expressed some surprize at hearing him speak in that dialect, the Indian repeated the same meaning in the language of *Tanna*, which was totally different, adding, at the same time, that

^l Cook, II. 81, 82.

^m Forster, II. 354.

the former language was spoken at the island of *Ironan*, which lies seven or eight leagues to the eastward of *Tanna*. At another time, the elder Mr. Forster and captain Cook happened, on comparing their vocabularies, to discover that each had collected a different word to signify the sky; they applied to the native to know which of the two expressions was right: he immediately held out one hand, and applied it to one of the words; then moving the other hand under it, he pronounced the second word, intimating, that the upper was properly the sky, and the lower the clouds that moved under itⁿ.

They seem to have no other liquor than water and the cocoa-nut juice; they either roast or broil their victuals, for they have no vessels in which water can be boiled.

The natives signified, in a manner which neither to captain Cook nor Mr. Forster seemed to admit of the least doubt, that they eat human flesh^p, and that circumcision was practised among them. They began the subject of eating human flesh of their own accord, by asking the gentlemen if they did^q.

They appeared to have chiefs among them, but these appear to have very little authority over the rest of the people, and one old chief was said to be king of the island; his name was *Geogy*, and they gave him the title of *areekee*; he was very old, but had a merry, open countenance^r.

Of their religion nothing was observed, only every morning at day-break was heard a slow solemn song or dirge,

ⁿ Forster, II. 361, 293, 294, 287, 288.

^o Cook, II. 83.

^p Cook, II. 60. Forster, II. 300.

^q Cook, II. 60.

^r Cook, II. 83, 70.

fung on the eastern side of the harbour, which lasted more than a quarter of an hour; as this was supposed to be a religious act, the curiosity of the gentlemen was greatly excited to inform themselves something further concerning it; but when they attempted to pass that way, fifteen or twenty of the natives crowded about them, and intreated them with the greatest earnestness to return; as these importunities were not much attended to the natives, at last made signs, that if they persisted in their purpose they would be killed and eaten. At length they yielded to their solicitations, and turned towards a hut which was about fifty yards from them, where the ground began to rise; on which several of the Indians took up arms out of the hut, apparently meaning to force them to return back: as they did not wish to offend these people in their own country, they checked their curiosity, and were content to leave this point undetermined^s. In the general behaviour of these people, however, nothing was seen that bore any resemblance to a religious act, nor any thing that could be construed into superstition.

The first time the boat went on shore from the ship, the natives were drawn up in great numbers on the beach, armed with clubs, darts, spears, slings and stones. They held their weapons in constant readiness for an attack, which led captain Cook to re-embark as speedily as possible, to prevent any disagreeable consequences. In order to frighten them without hurting them, the captain ordered a musket to be fired over their heads, but the alarm it gave them was only momentary; in an instant they recovered themselves, and began to display their weapons. One fellow showed his backside in a manner that plainly conveyed his meaning; but on a few great guns being fired from the ship, the whole

^s Forster, II. 300, 301.

army dispersed, leaving the beach free for a second debarkation. Captain Cook marked out boundaries on the shore with a line. The natives then came gradually forward, some unarmed: an old man named *Paowang*, shewed a very friendly disposition, and promoted the intercourse between the captain and the natives. Such was the honesty of this old man, that he brought an ax that had been left by the ship's company in the woods upon the beach; they were extremely jealous of any one going up the country, or even along the shore of the harbour; which disposition greatly obstructed the naturalists in their attempts to explore this spot. As the carrying of bundles is the office of the women in this country, the natives imagined that those from the ship who carried loads were females. A man who carried Mr. Forster's plant bag, was followed by some of the natives, who by their conversation, which was over-heard by captain Cook, considered him as a woman, until by some means they discovered their mistake, on which they cried out, *erromange! erromange!* it is a man! it is a man! A tiller to the rudder being wanted, the captain sent the carpenter on shore to look at a tree for the purpose, and with him an officer with a party of men to cut it down, provided he could obtain leave of the natives. He understood that nobody had any objection, and accordingly set the people to work; but as the tree was large, the felling it was a work of time, and before it was down, word was brought that *Paowang* was not pleased; upon which orders were sent from the captain to desist, who soon after went on shore himself, and sending for *Paowang*, made him a present of a dog and a piece of cloth, and then explained to him the purpose for which the tree was wanted. All the natives present discovered great satisfaction at the means that were

used to obtain their grant of the tree, and with one voice gave their consent to its being felled ^u.

At first many of the natives were afraid to touch the presents that were made them, and they seemed to have no notion of exchanging one thing for another; very few refreshments were obtained on this island; some fruit or roots were daily procured from the natives, though but little in proportion to the demands of the ship's company. The natives had not any knowledge of iron, consequently nails and iron tools, beads, &c. which were so current at the eastern islands, were of no consideration here, and cloth was useless in a country where the inhabitants went naked ^v. Tortoise-shell was the only commodity which they were desirous to obtain, but as no demand was expected for such an article, there were only a few small pieces in the ship which had been purchased at *Tongo-tabboo*, and those who were in possession of them, could procure whatever the island afforded; but notwithstanding the loathsomeness of salt provisions, which had been now upwards of two years on board the ship, the sailors could not be brought to have a single provident thought for the future, but exchanged their tortoise-shell for bows and arrows instead of providing a stock of yams ^w. A party from the ship passing through a shrubbery, observed a native at work cutting sticks; seeing him rid very slowly with his hatchet, which was only a bit of shell in lieu of a blade, they sat about helping him with an iron hatchet, and in a few minutes cut a much greater heap than he had done the whole day. Several Indians who were witnesses to this dispatch, expressed the greatest astonishment at the extreme utility of this tool, and some were very desirous to possess it, by offering their bows

^u Cook, II. 70.

^v Cook, II. 76.

^w Forster, II. 212.

and

and arrows for it; this was considered as a favourable opportunity to procure hogs, but they were deaf to every proposal of that kind, and never exchanged a single hog; and only one pig was obtained, which was given captain Cook by *Paowang* ^x. As there is great reason to suppose that the inhabitants of *Tanna* are harrassed by frequent wars, the distrust which they expressed on the first debarkation from the ship is not surprizing; but as soon as they were thoroughly convinced of the harmless intentions of their new acquaintances, they were actuated by other impressions, which nothing but the necessity of self-preservation could have silenced so long. They did not indeed trade, because their affluence was not equal to that of the other islanders, but they were as assiduous in offering their services as the *Tahitians*, and from less interested motives. If any of the botanical gentlemen had procured a plant, of which he was desirous of having other specimens, he had only to signify his wish to some native, and immediately he would haste to the spot where it was to be found, and bring it with the most engaging alacrity. The civility of the natives was very conspicuous, if they met any of the gentlemen of the ship in a narrow path, they always stepped aside into the bushes and grass, in order to make way for them: if they happened to know their names they pronounced them with a smile, which could be extremely well understood as a salutation: if they had not seen them before, they commonly enquired their names, in order to know them again ^y. They have the same engaging and affectionate manner of expressing their friendship by a mutual exchange of names, as is common in the more eastern islands of this sea ^z.

^x Forster, II. 337.

^z *Idea* 285.

^y Forster, II. 320, 374, 342.

IMMER lies four leagues from *Tanna*; this is the most eastern island of all the Hebrides; it appeared to be about five leagues in circuit, of a considerable height, and flattish top^a.

ANNATOM, is the southernmost island, situated in latitude 20 deg. 3 min. south; long. 170 deg. 4 min. east; and twelve leagues from *Tanna*.

C H A P. VII.

Of NEW CALEDONIA, and its neighbouring Islands, and NORFOLK ISLAND, more to the Southward.

THIS island received its name from captain Cook, after the endeavours used to procure from the natives the Indian name of the whole island proved ineffectual; probably it is too large for them to know it by one general name; for, New Zealand and New Holland excepted, it is the largest island that has been discovered in the south Pacific Ocean; for it extends from 19 deg. 37 min. to 22 deg. 30 min. south latitude; and from 163 deg. 37 min. to 167 deg. 14 min. east longitude. It is about eighty-seven leagues long in the direction of north-west and south-east, but its breadth is not considerable, nor any where exceeds ten leagues. It is not more than twelve degrees distant from *New Holland*^b.

^a Cook II. 100.

^b Forster II. 424. Cook II. 143.

Nature has been less bountiful to this island than to any other tropical country known in these seas. It is a spot diversified by hills and vallies of various extent, both for height and depth. From these hills issue great numbers of rivulets, which greatly contribute to fertilize the plains. The flat land which lies along its north-east shore, when viewed from the hills, appeared to great advantage. The winding streams which ran through it; the plantations of little straggling villages; the variety in the woods, and the shoals on the coast, so variegated the scene, that the whole might afford a picture for romance. Indeed if it were not for those fertile spots on the plains, and some few on the sides of the mountains, the whole country might be called a dreary waste: the mountains and other high parts are for the most part, incapable of cultivation; consisting chiefly of rocks, many of which are full of mundick; the little soil that is upon them is scorched and burnt up with the sun; it is nevertheless coated with coarse-grass, and other plants, and here and there trees and shrubs. The country in general bears great resemblance to those parts of *New South Wales* that are under the same parallel of latitude; several of its natural productions are the same, and the woods are without underwood as in that country. The whole coast seems to be surrounded by reefs or shoals which render the access to it very dangerous; but at the same time guard the coasts against the attacks of the wind and sea, cause it to abound with fish, and secure an easy and safe navigation along it for canoes. Every part of the coast seems to be inhabited; the plantations in the plains are laid out with great judgment, and cultivated with much labour; some of them were lying fallow; some seemed to be lately laid down, and others of longer date, parts of which they were again beginning to dig up; but first of all they set fire to the grass, &c. which
had

had over-run the surface. Recruiting the land by letting it lie some years untouched, is observed by all nations in this sea, but none seem to have any notion of manuring it^c. On the beach was found a large irregular mass of rock, not less than a cube of ten feet, which consists of a close grained stone speckled full of granets somewhat bigger than pins-heads, from whence it seemed probable, that some rich and useful mineral may be deposited in this island. It distinguished itself from all those that had been hitherto visited in the south sea, in being entirely destitute of volcanic productions. The contrast between *Nova Caledonia* and the *New Hebrides*, was very striking, from having just visited those rich and fertile islands, where the vegetable kingdom glories in its greatest perfection. Several plants of new species were, however, found here, and a few young bread-fruit trees, not then sufficiently grown to bear fruit, but they seemed to have come up without culture: plantains and sugar-canes are here in small quantities, and the cocoa-nut trees are small and but thinly planted. A new species of passion-flower was likewise met with, which was never before known to grow wild any where but in America. Several *caputi* trees were found in flower, which had a loose bark, which in many places burst off from the wood, and concealed within it beetles, ants, spiders, lizards, and scorpions^d. The bark of this tree is said to be used in the East Indies for caulking of ships; the wood is very hard, the leaves are long and narrow like our willows; they are of a pale dead colour, and a fine aromatic. Musquetos are numerous here^e. A great variety of birds were seen of different classes, which were for the most part entirely new; particularly a beautiful species of parrot unknown to zoolo-

^c Cook II. 143, 111, 112.^d Forster II. 394.^e Cook II. 124, 1221

gifts^f. A species of fish was procured here, entirely new : a small part of the liver of this fish was eaten at supper by captain Cook and the two Mr. Forsters : in a few hours after they had retired to rest, they were awaked by very alarming symptoms, being all seized with an extreme giddiness ; their hands and feet were numbed so as scarcely to be able to crawl, and a violent languor and oppression took possession of them. Emetics were administered with some success, but the remedy that procured them most relief was sudorifics. Some dogs who had eaten the remainder of the liver, were seized with the same symptoms as those at Mallicollo^g ; and a little pig who had eaten the intrails died soon after, having swelled to an unusual size. The effects of this poison on the gentlemen, were not entirely removed for upwards of six weeks^h. Abundance of turtle were seen here. The natives had not the least notion of goats, hogs, dogs or cats, and had not even a name for any one of themⁱ.

These Indians are very stout, tall, and in general well proportioned ; their features mild ; their beards and hair black and strongly frizzled, so as to be almost woolly in some individuals : their general colour is swarthy or a dark chestnut brown, nearly the same with that of the people of *Tanna*. A few were seen who measured six feet four inches ; they are remarkably courteous and friendly, and not at all addicted to pilfering ; in which quality of honesty they stand alone. Some wear their hair long, and tie it up to the crown of their head ; others suffer only a large lock to grow on each side, which they tie up in clubs ; many others, as well as all the women, wear it cropt short^k. They make use of a kind of comb made of sticks of hard wood, from

^f Forster II. 415.
405, 406.

^g See page 213.

^h Forster II. 403,

ⁱ Cook II, 106.

^k Forster II, 382. Cook II. 118.

seven to nine or ten inches long, and about the thickness of knitting-needles: a number of these, seldom exceeding twenty, but generally fewer, are fastened together at one end, parallel to and near one-tenth of an inch from each other; the other ends, which are a little pointed, will spread out or open like the sticks of a fan. These combs they always wear in their hair on one side of their head; some had a kind of concave cylindrical stiff black cap, which appeared to be a great ornament among them, and was supposed to be only worn by chiefs and warriors. A large sheet of strong paper, whenever they got one in exchange, was generally applied to this use. The men go naked, only tying a string round the middle, and another round the neck. A little piece of a brown cloth made of the bark of a fig-tree, which is sometimes tucked up to the belt, and sometimes pendulous, scarcely deserves the name of a covering: it seems, indeed, not to be intended for a veil, any more than the contrivance of the Mallicollese, and in the eyes of Europeans, would rather be reckoned obscene than decent. Every inhabitant of this island, therefore, like the natives of Tanna and Mallicollo, is an ambulant figure of the Roman garden-god. The piece of cloth which is thus made conspicuous, is sometimes of such a length, that the extremity is fastened to the string round the neck; to this string they likewise hang small round beads of a pale green nephritic stone, which is of the same species with that of Tanna, and nearly related to that of New Zealand¹. Coarse garments were seen among them made of a sort of matting; but they seemed never to wear them, except when in their canoes and unemployed^m.

¹ Forster II. 383, 384.

^m Cook II. 119.

The women of *New-Caledonia* are hardly so much esteemed by the men as those of *Tanna*, for they commonly kept at a distance, and seemed fearful to offend them by a look or gesture; they were the only persons of the family who had any employment, and several of them brought bundles of sticks and fuel on their backs; their insensible husbands seldom deigned to look upon them, and continued in a kind of phlegmatic indolence, whilst the women sometimes indulged that social cheerfulness which is the distinguishing ornament of the sex: those who had children carried their infants on their backs in a kind of satchel: the women were seen to dig up the earth in order to plant it; they are, in general, of a dark chestnut, or sometimes mahogany brown; their stature middle-sized, some being rather tall, and their whole form rather stout, and somewhat clumsy. Their dress is the most disfiguring that can be imagined, and gives them a thick, squat shape; it is a short petticoat, or fringe, consisting of filaments, or little cords, about eight inches long, which are fastened to a very long string, which they have tied several times round their waist: the filaments, or little ropes, therefore, lay above each other in several layers, forming a kind of thick thatch all round the body, which does not near cover the thigh: these filaments were sometimes dyed black, but frequently those on the outside only were of that colour, while the rest had a dirty grey colour. They wore shells, ear-rings, and bits of nephritic stones like the men; and some had three black lines longitudinally from the under lip to the chin, which had been punctured by the same methods practised at the Friendly and Society-Islands. Their features were coarse, but expressed great good-nature: the forehead, in general, was high, the nose broad, and flat at the root; the eyes rather small, their cheek-bones were very prominent, and the
cheeks

cheeks commonly plump". Some women whom Mr. Forster saw boiling some grass and green leaves in a pot, made signs to him, immediately on his appearance, to leave them, and moved their fingers several times under their throat, which he supposed implied, that if they were observed to be thus alone with a stranger, they should be choaked or killed; but whether their meaning was understood rightly or not cannot be certainly known. Other women were seen who expressed no dread of the jealousy of the men; they came among the crowd, and sometimes amused themselves in encouraging the proposals of the seamen; they commonly beckoned them to come among the bushes, but as soon as the sailors followed, they gave them the slip, and ran with such agility that they could not be overtaken, and then laughed very heartily as often as they had put their little arts in practice. There was not a single instance, during the ship's stay in the island, of the women permitting any indecent familiarity from an European: they took pleasure in practising the arts of a jilting coquet, but never became absolute wantons. The general ornaments of both sexes are ear-rings of tortoise-shell, necklaces, or amulets, made both of shells and stones, and bracelets made of large shells, which they wear above the elbow^p.

The houses, or huts here, are circular, something like a bee-hive, and full as close and warm; the entrance is by a small door, or long square hole, just big enough to admit a man bent double: the side walls are about four feet and a half high, but the roof is lofty, and peaked to a point at the top, above which is a post or stick of wood, which is generally ornamented either with carving or shells, or both:

^p Forster II. 409, 414, 422, 387, 388.
 R Cook II. 129.

o Forster II. 401, 402.

the framing is of small spars, reeds, &c. and both sides and roof are thick, and close covered with thatch made of coarse long grass: in the inside of the house are set up posts, to which cross spars are fastened, and platforms made for the convenience of laying any thing on. Some houses have two floors, one above another; the floor is laid with dried grass, and here and there mats are spread for the principal people to sleep or sit on. These houses exactly resemble those represented in Le Maire's and Schouten's voyage, which they saw in *Cocos* and *Horn Islands*⁹. In most of these houses there were no fire-places, and as there was no passage for the smoak but through the door, the whole house was intolerably smoaky, and so hot as to be insupportable to those unaccustomed to them: probably the smoak is meant to drive out the musquettos which swarm here^r. They commonly erect two or three of these huts near each other, under a cluster of lofty fig-trees, whose foliage is impervious to the rays of the sun. These trees have this remarkable quality, that they shoot forth roots from the upper part of the stem perfectly round, as if they had been made by a turner, into the ground, ten, fifteen, and twenty feet from the tree, and form a most exact straight line, being extremely elastic, and as tense as a bow-string prepared for action; the bark of these trees seems to be the substance of which they prepare those little bits of cloth so remarkable in their dress^s. This tree is well known in several parts of the East-Indies, particularly on the Western Peninsula^t. Milton describes our first parents as making use of its leaf as soon as they became conscious of shame; and the description which he gives of its growth suits as well with those seen in New-Caledonia, as if it had been written from a sight of them.

⁹ Dalrymple II. plate,

^r Cook II. 121, 122.

^s Forster II. 393.

^t See page 41.

The fig-tree ; not that kind for fruit renown'd ;
 But such as at this day to Indians known
 In Malabar or Decan, spreads her arms
 Branching so broad and long, that in the ground
 The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow
 About the mother tree, a pillar'd shade
 High over-arch'd, and echoing walks between *.

The canoes in use here are very heavy, clumsy vessels ; they are made out of two large trees hollowed out, having a raised gunnel about two inches high, and closed at each end with a kind of bulk head of the same height, so that the whole is like a long square trough about three feet shorter than the body of the canoe ; that is, a foot and an half at each end : two canoes thus fitted are secured to each other about three feet asunder, by means of cross spars, which project about a foot over each side ; over which is laid a deck, or heavy platform, made of plank, and small round spears, on which they have a fire-hearth, and generally a fire burning ; they are navigated by one or two latteen sails, extended to a small latteen yard, the end of which is fixed in a notch, or hole in the deck †.

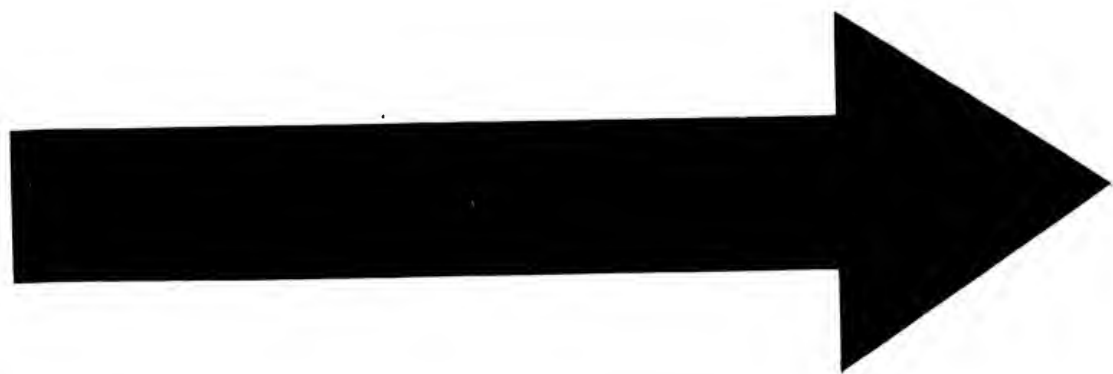
Their working tools are made of the same materials, and nearly in the same manner as at the other islands. They have no great variety of household utensils ; their principal one is an earthen jar, one of which at least each family is possessed of, and in which they bake their roots, and probably their fish ‡.

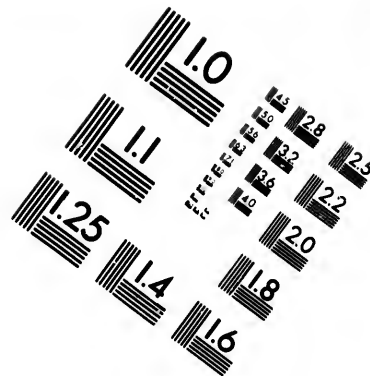
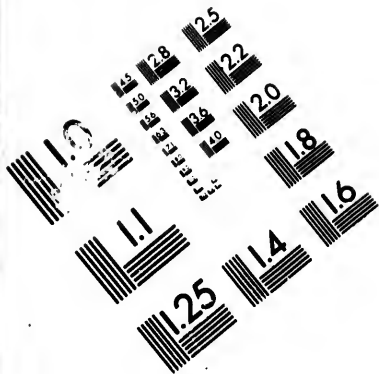
Notwithstanding the inoffensive disposition of these people, they are well provided with offensive weapons, such

* Paradise Lost, book ix, lines 3101 & seq.

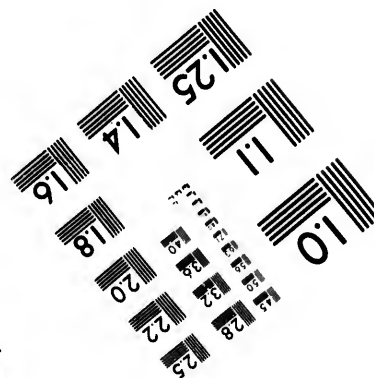
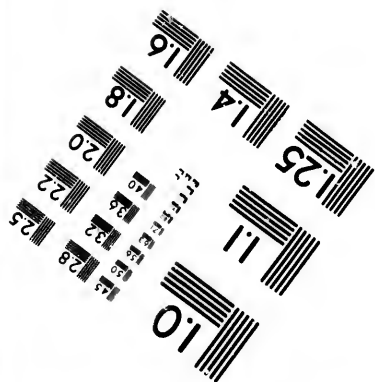
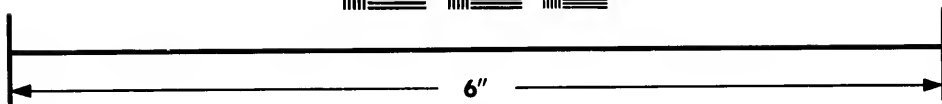
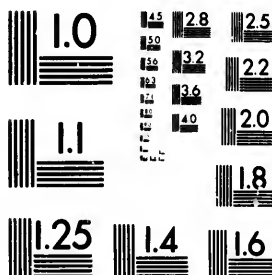
† Cook II. 125.

‡ Cook II. 121, 122.





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503



as clubs, spears, darts, and slings for throwing stones. Their clubs are about two feet and an half long, and variously formed; some like a scythe, others like a pick-axe; some have a head like a hawk, and others have round heads; but all are neatly made; many of their darts and spears are no less neat, and ornamented with carvings; the slings are as simple as possible, but they take some pains to form the stones that they use into a proper shape, which is something like an egg, supposing both ends to be like the small one. They drive the dart by the assistance of such short cords, knobbed at one end, and looped at the other, as are used at *Tanna*, and which seamen call beekets: those at New-Caledonia were of superior workmanship, and contained a quantity of red wool taken from the *vampyre*, or great Indian bat; bows and arrows are wholly unknown among them*.

Their language bears no affinity with any other of the various dialects spoken in the South-Sea, the word *arekee*, and one or two more alone excepted; this is the more extraordinary, as different dialects of one language were spoken not only in the easterly islands but at New-Zeeland†.

A musical instrument was procured here, which is a kind of whistle; it was a little polished piece of brown wood, about two inches long, shaped like a bell, though apparently solid, with a rope fixed at the small end; two holes were made in it near the base, and another near the insertion of the rope, all which communicated with each other, and by blowing in the uppermost, a shrill sound like whistling was produced; no other instrument was seen among them that had the least relation to music‡.

* Cook II. 123, 121. Forster II. 385. † Forster II. 381.

‡ Forster II. 398.

Many Indians in New-Caledonia were seen with prodigiously thick legs and arms, which seemed to be affected with a kind of leprosy; the swelling was found to be extremely hard, but the skin was not alike harsh and scaly in all the sick persons; the preternatural expansion of the leg and arm did not appear to be a great inconvenience to those that suffered it, and they seemed to say that they felt pain very rarely in it; but in some the disorder began to form blotches, which were marks of a great degree of virulence^a.

Here they deposit their dead in the ground, which seems to be a more judicious manner of disposing of them than that at *Tabitee*, where they expose them above ground till all the flesh is perfectly putrefied; if the mortality was more considerable in that island than it is supposed to be, such a custom might have the most pernicious consequences, and produce a dreadful epidemical distemper: such a disease as the small-pox, for example, if introduced, would go near to depopulate the whole country. The grave of a chief, who had been slain in battle, here resembled a large mole-hill, and was decorated with spears, darts, paddles, &c. all stuck upright in the ground round about it. Nothing is more remarkable in the history of mankind, than the general concurrence of all nations to erect a monument on the spot where their dead are buried.

For ev'n these bones from insult to protect,
Some frail memorial still erected nigh,
With uncouth piles and artless symbols deck'd,
Implores the passing tribute of a sigh^b.

Lieutenant Pickersgill was shewed a chief whom they named *Tea-booma*, and styled their *areekee*, or king; but no-

^a Forster II. 383. 414.

^b Gray's Elegy varied.

thing further is known of their government, and not so much of their religion.

When captain Cook first landed here he was accompanied by a native, who appeared to be a man of some consequence, and who had come on board the ship before she came to an anchor. The natives assembled in great numbers on the beach, led merely by curiosity, for many had not so much as a stick in their hands. The party, on landing, were received with great courtesy, and with the surprize natural for people to express at seeing men and things so new and wonderful. The captain made presents to all those whom his companion pointed out, but on his going to give a few beads and medals to some women who stood behind the crowd, the chief held his hand, and would not suffer him to do it. As they proceeded up a creek Mr. Forster shot a duck that flew near them, which was the first use which these people saw made of fire-arms. The friendly native begged to have it, and when he landed he told his countrymen in what manner it was killed. From this excursion they learnt that they were to expect nothing from these people but the privilege of visiting their country undisturbed, for they had little else than good-nature to bestow, and "in this," says captain Cook, "they exceeded all the nations we had yet met with; and although it did not satisfy the demands of nature, it at once pleased and left our minds at ease." A hatchet was not quite so valuable as a large spike nail; small nails were of little or no value, and beads, looking-glasses, &c. they did not admire. Many of the natives came on board the ship with perfect confidence, and one of them exchanged a yam for a piece of red cloth; they admired every thing that had a red colour, particularly red cloth or baize, but did not choose to give any thing in exchange.

Captain

Captain Cook sent the king *Tea-booma* a dog and a bitch, both young, but nearly full grown, which may be the means of stocking the country with that species of animals; and to *Hebai*, the friendly chief before spoken of, he gave a sow and boar pig, in order to provide, if possible, a stock of domestic animals, for a nation whose inoffensive character seemed highly deserving of such a present. To enhance their value with the Indians, and thereby induce them to be more careful of their stock of hogs, the captain explained to them how many young ones the female would have at one time, and how soon this would multiply to some hundreds. No one of the natives attempted to take the least trifle by stealth, but all behaved with the strictest honesty. Some of them spoke of a great land to the northward, which they called *Mingba*, the inhabitants of which were their enemies, and very warlike. They likewise pointed out a sepulchral mount, or tumulus, where one of their chiefs lay buried, who had been killed fighting in defence of his country, by a native of *Mingba*. The appearance of a large beef bone, which an officer began to pick towards the conclusion of the supper, interrupted this conversation; the natives talked very loud and earnestly to each other, looked with great surprize, and some marks of disgust at the stranger, and at last went away all together, expressing, by signs, that they supposed it to be the limb of a man. The officer endeavoured to free himself and his ship-mates from this suspicion, but two insurmountable impediments lay in his way, viz. the want of language, and that the natives had never seen a quadruped in their lives. At another time a native, who was in a boat with captain Cook and Mr. Wales, acquainted them, by very significant gestures, that they had enemies who feasted upon human flesh, which doubtless had contributed to make them impute the same practice

practice to their new friends^c. This island, the largest discovered in the South-Sea between the tropics, remains entirely unexplored on its south-side; its minerals and vegetables still remain untouched, animals it should seem to have none, from the ignorance which the natives to the northward discovered of such as they saw. Captain Cook caused the following inscription to be cut in a remarkable large and shady tree on the beach, close to a rivulet: "His Britannic Majesty's Ship Resolution, September 1774."

ISLE OF PINES lies to the south-west of New-Caledonia; is about a mile in circumference, and in latitude 22 deg. 40 min. south; longitude 167 deg. 40 min. east.

BOTANY ISLAND is about two miles in circuit, entirely flat and sandy, six leagues distant from the south-end of New-Caledonia. Captain Cook gave this little isle its name from its containing, in so small a space, a *flora* of near thirty species, among which were several new ones; its soil is very sandy on the shores, but in the interior parts is mixed with vegetable earth, from the trees and plants which continually decay on it without being cleared away by human industry^d.

NORFOLK ISLAND, so called by captain Cook, who discovered it October 10, 1774. It lies in latitude 29 deg. 21 min. south; longitude 168 deg. 16 min. east. It is a small island, wholly covered with cypress trees, resembling those on Botany Island; there were soundings at a great distance in about twenty fathom; and eight leagues from

^c Forster, II. 418, 429.

^d Forster, II. 438, 439.

the south-east end bottom was found at thirty and forty fathom. The rocks of this island consist of a common yellowish clayey stone, which was found at New Zealand, and small bits of porous reddish lava, which seemed to be decaying, and indicated that this island had been a volcano. It is about three miles long, very steep, and uninhabited, and is supposed never to have had a human footstep upon it till that time. The vegetables here thrive with great luxuriance, in a rich stratum of black mould, accumulated during ages past from decayed trees and plants. The productions of New Zealand are here united to those of New Caledonia and the Hebrides, for the cypress of the one, and the cabbage palm of the other, flourish here in great perfection: the former yielded timber for the carpenter, and the latter afforded a most welcome and palatable refreshment. The central shoot, or heart, of this fruit, more resembles an almond than a cabbage in taste. Here were parrots, parroquets, and pigeons, and a number of small birds peculiar to this spot, some of which were very beautiful. The fish that were here caught, together with the birds and vegetables, enabled the whole ship's company to fare sumptuously for a day or two. Here is likewise the flax-plant of New-Zeeland, and rather more luxuriant than any where in that country. Mr. Forster thinks if this island was of greater extent, it would be unexceptionable for an European settlement.

* Forster, II. 444, 445, 446. Cook, II, 143.

C H A P. VIII.

Of the small scattered Islands that have been discovered between the Equator and the Southern Tropic, and from 150 deg. of Longitude West, to 160 deg. of Longitude East; particularly EIMEO, or Captain Wallis's DUKE OF YORK'S ISLAND, O-HETEROA, HOWE, HERVEY, PALMERSTON, SAVAGE, BOSCAWEN, KEPPEL, ISLANDS OF DANGER, BYRON'S DUKE OF YORK, QUEEN CHARLOTTE'S ISLES, and BYRON'S ISLAND.

HAVING now described the several clusters of islands which have been lately discovered or explored in the southern part of the great Pacific Ocean, before we proceed to the more extensive and important countries of New Zealand and New Holland, we shall just enumerate the small islands that are now known to lie dispersed within 50 deg. of longitude, and 23 deg. of latitude.

EIMEO, or York Island, is about twenty leagues distant from O-Taheitee, west-north-west. It was first discovered by captain Wallis in July 1767.

O-HETEROA, 22 deg. 27 min. south; 150 deg. 47 min. west, is thirteen miles in circuit. It does not shoot out into high peaks like the other islands, but is more even and uniform, divided into small hillocks ^f. It is neither populous

^f Parkinson, 79.

nor fertile in proportion to the other islands that lie under the same parallel of latitude. It furnishes neither a harbour nor anchorage for shipping, and the disposition of the people is hostile to such as visit them. On the western side of the island is a bay, the bottom of which is foul and rocky, but the water is so clear, that the bottom can be seen at the depth of twenty-five fathom, or one hundred and fifty feet. The natives are armed with lances near twenty feet long, made of a very hard wood polished, and sharpened at one end. Some of them wear caps made of the tall feathers of the tropic bird, and have their bodies covered with the stripes of different coloured cloth, yellow, red, and brown: this dress was very different from any worn in the other islands, though the materials of their cloth are the same. Most of it appeared to have been died yellow, and covered on the outside with a composition like varnish, of which there were two colours, either red, or of a dark lead colour, and over this ground were stripes painted very regularly; these stripes were either black or white, according to the ground on which they were laid. Their habit is a short jacket of cloth, which reaches about as low as their knees; of one piece, and no otherwise made than by having a hole in the middle of it, stitched round with long stitches, in which it differs from the dress of all the other islands: through this hole the head is put, the whole is bound round the body by a piece of yellow cloth, or sash, which passing round the neck behind, is crossed upon the breast, and collected round the waist like a belt, which passes over another belt of red cloth, so that they made a very gay and warlike appearance. This cloth is of a better colour, and more neatly painted, than any made use of in any other of the islands. They bestow great pains in ornamenting their ca-

^s Hawkeſworth II. 277.

noes; embellishing them with carved work, and lines of white feathers hanging down from head to stern^b.

HOWE ISLAND, discovered by captain Wallis, called by the inhabitants of the Society Islands *Mopeha*, lies 16 deg. 46 min. south; and 154 deg. 8 min. west.

HERVEY ISLAND, discovered by captain Cook, September 23, 1773, who gave it that name in honour of the earl of Bristol; it is a low island, latitude 19 deg. 8 min. south, longitude 158 deg. 54 min. west.

PALMERSTON ISLAND, longitude 163 deg. 10 min. west, latitude 18 deg. 4 min. south.

SAVAGE ISLAND, 19 deg. 1 min. south, 169 deg. 37 min. west. On captain Cook's landing here, June 1774, the natives attacked his party with great fury; every possible intimation of good will was given them, but without any effect; a dart or spear was thrown by one of the natives, which grazed captain Cook's shoulder: a party which had been posted on a rock to secure a retreat in case of an attack, saw it absolutely necessary to fire on the natives, to rescue their commander, and those who were with him, from destruction. This prevented others coming down from the heights, and abated the ardour of those who were engaged; whether any of the Indians were hurt could not be perceived. This disposition of the natives, as well as the island furnishing no port, determined captain Cook to leave it. The conduct and aspect of these islanders, who came down with the fury of wild bears, led him to name this spot *Savage Island*. It is about seven leagues in circuit, of a round form, and

^b Hawkesworth II. 272.

good height, and has deep water close to its shores. Its interior parts are supposed to be barren, as no soil was to be seen towards the coasts; the rocks alone supplying the trees with humidity. Both the persons of these islanders, and their canoes, agree very well with the description given by M. de Bougainville of those he saw off the Isle of Navigators^l.

BOSCAWEN'S ISLAND, 15 deg. 50 min. south; 175 deg. west, was first visited by Le Mair and Schouten in 1616, who called it *Cocos Island*. Captain Wallis saw it in August 1767, and gave it the name of Boscawen. It is nearly circular, and three miles over^k. The former navigators relate, that the inhabitants had the flesh of their ears slit, and hanging almost to their shoulders, and blue blackish spots on their bodies, as if burnt with gun-powder^l.

KEPPEL'S ISLAND, 15 deg. 55 min. 175 deg. 3 min. west; is three miles and a half long, and two broad, seen by captain Wallis in the Dolphin. Le Mair saw it in 1716, and named it *Island of Traytors*; the boats from the Dolphin found a good landing-place, the natives appeared peaceably inclined, were clothed with a kind of matting, and the first joint of their little fingers had been taken off. No hogs were seen; two fowls, some cocoa-nuts, plantains, and bananas, were all the refreshments procured^m.

ISLANDS OF DANGER. Three islands were so called by commodore Byron, having rocks and broken ground between them, and being so low that a ship may be close in with them before they are seen. Their situation is diffe-

^l Bougainville, 281. Cook, II. 5, 6, 7.

^k Hawkesw. I. 49.

^l Dalrymple, II. 22. ^m Hawkesw. I. 493.

rently laid down by commodore Byron and captain Cook; the former placing them in longitude 12 deg. 33 min. south; latitude 167 deg. 47 min. west; and the latter in 10 deg. 51 min. 163 deg. 43 min. The south-eastermost of these islands is about three leagues in length between the extreme points, from both which a reef runs out, upon which the sea breaks to a tremendous height; upon the north-west and west sides innumerable rocks and shoals stretch near two leagues into the sea, and are extremely dangerous. The islands have a fertile and beautiful appearance, and swarm with people. The great danger to which the ships were exposed prevented the commodore from going ashore, and making any further discoveries concerning these secluded spotsⁿ.

DUKE OF YORK'S ISLAND lies in latitude 8 deg. 41 min. south; longitude 173 deg. 3 min. west. It is near thirty miles in circumference, uninhabited; a dreadful sea breaks upon almost every part of the coast, and no soundings could be found. It was first discovered by commodore Byron, June 21, 1765, and according to all probability never received a human footstep before that time. The boats landed with great difficulty, and procured about two hundred cocoa-nuts, which, circumstanced as the crews were, was an inestimable treasure. Thousands of sea-fowl were seen sitting upon their nests, which were built in high trees; these birds were so tame that they suffered themselves to be knocked down without leaving their nests: the ground was covered with land-crabs, but no other animal was seen^o.

ⁿ Hawkefw. I. 109.

^o Hawkefw. I. 110.

TURTLE ISLAND, so called by captain Cook, who first visited it, on account of the great number of turtles that were seen here. It lies in latitude 19 deg. 48 min. south; longitude 178 deg. 2 min. west.

QUEEN CHARLOTTE'S ISLANDS. These islands were first discovered by captain Carteret in the Swallow in 1767. Seven islands were counted, and more were supposed to be dispersed within the cluster. Here is fine fresh water, but no esculent vegetables. The natives are black, with woolly heads, and stark naked. The party which captain Wallis sent on shore to procure supplies of provisions, by treating the natives with a supercilious haughtiness, drew upon themselves their resentment, which brought on a skirmish, in which the master of the ship and three seamen were wounded by arrows that were discharged, and afterwards died, whilst the Dolphin lay here. In order to intimidate the natives from attempting to cut off the people on shore, who were filling water, grape shot was repeatedly fired from the ship's guns into the woods where they had concealed themselves: but after the poor harrassed natives had suffered greatly by these means, they became so effectually intimidated that they abandoned that part of the island, and left the waterers to pursue their employment undisturbed. But though every humane breast must be pained to read of the destruction of a number of inoffensive people, yet the commander of the expedition must be exculpated from the charge of being at all accessory to the carnage: the insult which at first provoked the natives was given contrary to his express orders, and the situation in which he then was, compelled him to procure water at any rate, so that this disagreeable method of doing it was forced upon him. The inhabitants of these islands are described as extremely nimble and vigorous, and

almost as well qualified to live in the water as upon land, for they were in and out of their canoes almost every minute; latitude 11 deg. longitude 164 deg. east^p. These islands are supposed to be the Santa Cruz of Mendana, who died there in 1595^q.

BYRON'S ISLAND lies in latitude 1 deg. 18 min. south; 170 deg. 50 min. east longitude. It was first discovered by commodore Byron, July 3, 1765, but he could not go on shore, or procure any refreshments, there being no part favourable for a ship to anchor. This island is supposed to be about four leagues in length. It was very populous, for as soon as the ship came in sight, the natives, to the number of above a thousand, assembled on the beach, and more than sixty canoes, or proas, put off from the shore, and made towards it, and ranged themselves in a circle round it; after having gazed for some time, one of the Indians suddenly jumped out of his proa, swam to the ship, and ran up the side like a cat. As soon as he had stepped over the gunwale he sat down upon it, and burst into a violent fit of laughter, then started up and ran all over the ship, attempting to steal whatever he could lay his hands on, but without success, for being stark naked it was impossible to secrete his booty. The seamen put him on a jacket and trowsers, which produced great merriment, for he had all the gestures of a monkey newly dressed. Bread was given him, which he ate with a voracious appetite; and after having played a thousand antick tricks, he leaped overboard clad in his new apparel, and swam back to his proa. These people are tall, well-proportioned, and clean-limbed; their skin is a bright

^p Hawkesw. I. 570.

^q Dalrymple, I. 77.

copper colour; their features good, and their countenances exhibited a mixture of intrepidity and cheerfulness that is very striking; they have long black hair; some had long beards, some only whiskers, and others, nothing more than a small tuft at the point of the chin. They were all stark naked except their ornaments; which consisted of shells very prettily disposed and strung together; these they wear round their necks, wrists, and waists. All their ears were bored, but they had no ornaments in them; but it should seem that they do wear very heavy ones, for their ears hung down almost to their shoulders, and some there were whose ears were quite split through. One of these men, who appeared to be a person of some consequence, had a string of human teeth tied about his waist, which was probably a trophy of his military prowess, for he would not part with it in exchange for any thing that could be offered him. Some were unarmed, but others had a formidable weapon; it was a kind of spear, very broad at the end, and stuck full of sharks teeth, which are as sharp as a lancet, at the sides for about three feet of its length. The commodore shewed them some cocoa-nuts, and made signs that he wanted more; but instead of giving any intimation that they could supply him, they endeavoured to take away those they saw.

† Hawkefw. I. 111.

C H A P. IX.

Of NEW ZEELAND.

S E C T. I.

Of the first Discovery of New Zealand; its Situation, Extent, Climate, Soil, Mountains, and Face of the Country.

THIS country was first visited by Abel Jansen Tasman, a Dutch navigator, who sailed from Batavia, and arrived on its eastern side, 24th November, 1642. He traversed the north-eastern coast, from latitude 34 deg. to 43 deg. and entered the strait which divides the two islands, and which is now called Cook's strait, but being attacked by the natives soon after he came to an anchor, three of his men were killed on the spot, and a fourth was mortally wounded; he therefore did not go on shore, but gave the name of *Murderer's Bay* to the road in which he anchored; and affixed the general name of New-Zeeland to the whole country, which has generally been supposed to be part of a southern continent^s; but it is now found to consist of two large islands, divided from each other by a passage which is about four or five leagues broad. Captain Cook visited it in 1769 and 1770, and made the circuit of both islands; and three times repaired here in 1773 and 1774. These islands are situated between the latitudes of 34 deg. 22 min. and 47 deg. 25 min. south, and

^s Dalrymple, II. 69.

between

between the longitude of 166 deg. and 180 deg. east. The northermost of these islands is called by the natives *Eabeinomauwe*, and the southermost *Tovy*, or *Tovai-Poenammoo*. The southern part of *Eabeinomauwe* is of considerable width; from the thirty-eighth degree of latitude it runs out to the north-west in a narrow neck of land for near an hundred leagues, and terminates in Cape Maria Van Dieman, and North Cape. From North Cape to its most southern point, called by captain Cook Cape Pallisser, it extends from 34 deg. 20 min. to 41 deg. 36 min. of south latitude. The greatest width of *Tovai-Poenammoo* is from Dusky Bay to the south-west, to Cape Saunders on the east-side, which comprehends 4 deg. and 20 min. of longitude; in its narrowest part it is something more than one degree. *Tovai-Poenammoo* is, for the most part a mountainous, and, to all appearance, a barren country, very thinly inhabited. *Eabeinomauwe* has a much better appearance; it is indeed not only hilly but mountainous, yet even the hills and mountains are covered with wood, and every valley has a rivulet of water. The soil of these vallies, and in the plains, of which there are many that are not overgrown with wood, is in general light but fertile, insomuch that every kind of European grain, plants, and fruit, would flourish here in the utmost luxuriance. The winters are supposed to be milder here than in England, from the vegetables that were found growing; and captain Cook describes the summer to be not hotter than with us, though more equally warm; and he adds, that if this country should be settled by people from Europe, they would, with a little industry, be very soon supplied not only with the necessaries, but the luxuries of life, in great abundance^u. A ridge of mountains is supposed to extend from north to south, nearly the whole

^t Hawkesw. III. 435, 436.

^u Hawkesw. II. 437.

length of *Tovai-Poenamoo*. Towards the southward a narrow ridge of hills rises directly from the sea, which is covered with wood; close behind these hills are mountains extending in another ridge of a stupendous height, consisting of rocks that are totally barren, and naked, except where they are covered with snow, which is to be seen in large patches upon many parts of them, "the gathered winter of a thousand years." From the quantities of iron-sand which is brought down by every little stream of fresh water, there is undoubtedly iron ore at a small distance up the country, notwithstanding the inhabitants are utter strangers to the use of iron, as well as to its value^v. A large piece of pumice-stone was picked up on *Eabeinomauwe*, by which it appears evidently that there either is, or has been, a volcano on that island. A shock of an earthquake was felt at *Tovai-Poenamoo*, on the 11th of May 1773, by the Adventure's people, but no damage was done to any thing on shore: those who were on board the ship did not perceive any thing of it. "This circumstance," says Mr. Forster, "may serve to evince the probability of volcanos on New-Zeeland, as these two great phænomena on our globe seem to be closely connected together^w." Captain Cook made the east coast of New-Zeeland, in latitude 38 deg. 42 min. on the 6th October 1769, just to the northward of a large bay,^u to which he gave the name of *Hawke's Bay*. This indefatigable navigator employed six months all but five days, in fully exploring the coasts of both islands, in which circuit he gave names to several bays, rivers, and other parts of the coast. The first place where he anchored he called *Poverty Bay*, because he found there nothing necessary for a ship except wood; this bay is in form of an horse-shoe, and is called by the natives *Taoneroa*. Here was seen

^v Hawkesw. II. 292.^w Forster, I. 199.

a very extraordinary natural curiosity; it is a rock perforated through its whole substance, so as to form a rude but stupendous arch, or cavern, opening directly to the sea; its aperture was seventy-five feet long, twenty-seven broad, and forty-five high, commanding a view of the bay, and the hills on the other side, which were seen through it, and as it opened at once upon the view, it produced an effect far superior to any of the contrivances of art*. From hence captain Cook proceeded to the southward, almost to the forty-first degree of latitude, when he reversed his course, calling the cape which then presented itself *Cape Turnagain*. In this course he proceeded to the north-eastern point of land, and the broadest part of the whole island, which he called *Cape East*. The next port in which he anchored received from him the name of *Mercury Bay*, on account of having made an observation of the transit of Mercury over the sun; it lies in latitude 36 deg. 57 min. About this bay are several islands which consist of rocks, some of which are as small in compass as the Monument in London, but rise to a much greater height, and some are inhabited. The river which empties itself at the head of this bay was called the *River Thames*, on account of the resemblance which it bears to our river of that name. The banks of this river captain Cook represents as the most eligible place in these islands for settling a colony. More to the north-west is the *Bay of Islands*, so named from the great number of islands that line its shores, and form several harbours equally safe and commodious; there is room and depth for any number of shipping. At *Point Poccock*, on the west side of the Bay of Islands, were seen several villages both upon islands and the main.

* Hawkesw. II. 318.

North Cape is the most northern extremity of land on *Eabinamauwe*; from its situation it received its name from captain Cook. It lies in longitude 173 deg. 5 min. east, and latitude 34 deg. 22 min. south. Land was discovered by Tafman to the westward of this cape, and called by him *Cape Maria Van Diemen*. In latitude 35 deg. off this cape, and in the midst of summer, (January 1770) captain Cook, in the Endeavour, met with a gale of wind, which for its strength and continuance, he says, was such as he had scarce ever been in before; and he was three weeks in getting ten leagues to the westward, and five weeks in making fifty. "During the gale," says he, "we were happily at a considerable distance from land, otherwise it is highly probable that we should never have returned to relate our adventures." This cape is the eastermost point of a peninsula, which runs out north-west, and north-west by north, seventeen and eighteen leagues, and of which *Cape Maria Van Diemen* is the westermost point, lying in latitude 34 deg. 30 min. south; longitude 173 deg. 42 min. east. The land here is every where a barren shore, consisting of banks of white sand^y. Having doubled this cape he proceeded along the western shore, to which he has given the name of *The Desert Coast*; proceeding onward to the south, the coast was found to bend westwardly, and a remarkably high peak was seen towering above the clouds, and covered with perennial snow. Its appearance is remarkably majestic, and in comparison of it the neighbouring hills look like dwarfs: it stands upon, or rather its base flattens into, an extensive plain on all sides; and its summit tapering gradually, terminates in a small point; its height is supposed to be not much inferior to the peak of Teneriffe, from the space which the snow occupies on it^z. Captain Cook gave it the name

^y Hawkeſw. II.^z Forſter, II. 448.

of *Mount Egmont* : it lies near the sea, and is surrounded by a flat country of a pleasant appearance, being clothed with verdure and wood, and the shore under it forms a large cape, which received the name of *Cape Egmont* ; latitude 39 deg. 30 min^a. Then entering the straits which divide the northern from the southern island, and which received the name of *Cook's Straits*, he proceeded to the southern peninsula of *Eaheinomauwee*, called by the natives *Terre Wittee*, the point of which land captain Cook named *Cape Palliser* ; 41 deg. 34 min. south ; 176 deg. 2 min. east : he then proceeded so far north, after having cleared the straits, as to come within sight of *Cape Turnagain*, which proved unquestionably the extent of this country. Between capes *Terre Wittee* and *Palliser* is a very deep bay, the shores of which have every where a very gentle slope. This spot is described as particularly convenient for an European settlement ; there is a great stretch of land for cultivation, and easily defensible, plenty of wood, and almost certain indications of a great river, and the country does not seem to be populous.

The southern island, or *Tovai-Poenammoo*, underwent a like accurate survey. On the eastern coast, between the latitudes of 43 deg. and 44 min. he discovered a small island, to which he gave the name of *Banks's Island* ; it lies about four leagues from the coast, it is of a circular figure, and about twenty-four leagues in compass. The land has a broken irregular surface ; it may be seen at the distance of twelve or fifteen leagues ; it appeared to be rather barren, but has a few inhabitants. *Cape Saunders* lies in 45 deg. 35 min. south ; 171 deg. 56 min. east. Proceeding to the southward

^a Hawkesw. II. 382, 383, 384.

he found the extremity of the land almost separated from the rest of the island, it being joined by a long and narrow isthmus. *The Traps* are a ledge of rocks which lie six leagues south-east of the most southerly point of land. The south-east of this island is rendered very dangerous navigating, from the ridges of rocks which rise for many leagues out of the sea. Almost on the western extremity he found a commodious bay, where he anchored and gave it the name of *Dusky Bay*. This bay, and the south-west cape adjoining to it, are remarkable for being the only level spot for a considerable distance. It extends two leagues to the northward, is then lofty and covered with wood; the land behind it rises into high mountains, which are barren and rocky, latitude 45 deg. 46 min. The entrance of the bay is very safe, and many harbours and coves are scattered in different parts of it, where good anchorage may be found ^b. The soil is a deep black mould, composed of decayed vegetables, and so loose as to sink at every step that is trod on it. It is indeed reasonable to suppose, that in the southern parts of New Zealand, the forests have never been touched by human industry, but have remained in their rude unimproved state of nature since their first existence. Not only the climbing plants and shrubs obstructed their passage, but likewise numbers of rotten trees lay in their way, felled by winds and old age. A new generation of young trees of parasitic plants, ferns and morasses, sprouted out of the rich mould to which this old timber was reduced by length of time, and a deceitful bark sometimes still covered the interior rotten substance, whereon if any one attempted to step, they sunk in to the waist ^c. The trees gradually diminished in height and circumference, and dwindled to shrubs as they receded from the shore, contrary to what is observed in other parts of the

^b Forster, I. 188.^c Forster, I. 127.

world where the inland countries have finer forests and better timber than the sea shores. About a league from the place where the ship lay, was seen a fine cascade falling into the sea, over a steep rock clothed with thick bushes and trees. The water was perfectly calm, polished and transparent; the landscape was distinctly reflected in it, and the various romantic shapes of the steep mountains, contrasted in different masses of light and shade, had an admirable effect^d. Several beautiful cascades are dispersed about this part of the island, which fall from vast heights, and present very picturesque scenes^e. The climate of Dusky Bay is supposed to be rather an unhealthy one, as during the stay which the Resolution made here in 1773, of six weeks and four days, (in the months of March and April) only one week of continued fair weather was experienced, all the rest of the time the rain predominated, insomuch that they never experienced above two fair days in immediate succession; notwithstanding which the crew recovered their health very fast; and perhaps the climate was less noxious to Englishmen than it would have been to any other nation from being so analogous to their own^f. Quitting Dusky Bay, and proceeding along the western coast, he entered Cook's straits by the south-west point of land, behind which he anchored in a fine bay, to which the captain gave the name of *Admiralty Bay*; the land here is of a hilly surface, chiefly covered with trees, shrubs, and fern. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander found several new plants here, and some of the stones that lay on the beach were full of veins, and had a mineral appearance; but nothing was discovered within them that could be determined to be ore. Mr. Banks was of opinion, that considering the corresponding latitude between this

^d Forster, I. 164.

^e Forster, I. 136.

^f Cook, I. 99. Forster, I. 137.

place and South America, it was not improbable, but that by a proper examination, something very valuable might be found ^a.

A very little more to the eastward is *Queen Charlotte's Sound*, in which is supposed to lie *Murderer's Bay*, so called by Tasman from his skirmish with the natives, and the loss of four of his men. The entrance of this sound lies in latitude 41 deg. south; longitude 175 deg. 25 min. east. It is three leagues broad at its mouth, and is a collection of some of the finest harbours in the world. There are a great number of small islands lying at the entrance, and the land about it is so high as to be seen at the distance of twenty leagues. Here they found a fine stream of excellent water, and wood in the greatest plenty: the land here being one forest of vast extent; and they caught near three hundred weight of fish of different sorts. The number of inhabitants here scarcely exceeded four hundred; they live dispersed along the shore; there is no cultivated ground to be seen; their chief food is fish and fern-roots, and they appear to live in a continual state of warfare. They are poorer than the inhabitants of other parts of this country, and their canoes are without ornament ^b. The climate here is extremely mild when compared to that of *Dusky Bay*; and notwithstanding the vicinity of the snow mountains, no frost was seen here whilst the *Resolution* and *Adventure* remained, which was till the 6th of June, almost the depth of winter in these parts; it is therefore very probable that it seldom freezes here ^c. The hills about *Queen Charlotte's Sound* are chiefly composed of a clayey stone which runs in oblique strata, and sometimes contains veins of white quartz; a green talcous, or nephritic stone, is also found in this kind of rock,

^a Hawkesw. III. 432.

^b Hawkesw. II. 406.

^c Forster, I. 202.

and

and when very hard is capable of a polish, and semitransparent: it is used by the natives for chissels, hatchets, and sometimes for patoo-patoos, and is of the same species as jewellers call the jadde. On the beaches were likewise found several sorts of flinty stones and pebbles, and some loose pieces of black compact, and ponderous basaltes, of which the natives form some of their short clubs; and by many different appearances the former existence of a volcano in New-Zeeland was strongly confirmed^k. The green talc was so much valued by the sailors, that there was scarcely any thing they were possessed of that they would not give for a piece of it, although really a thing of no great value^l. The quartz is sometimes found of a rusty colour, which seems evidently to rise from particles of iron, and from these circumstances, and the variety of minerals found here, there is great reason to suppose that this part of New-Zeeland contains iron ore, and perhaps several other metallic bodies^m. When the Resolution visited this found a second time, in November 1773, which answers to our May; the annual trees and shrubs were but beginning to look green, and the vivid colour of their fresh leaves, very well contrasted with the dark wintry hue of the evergreens; the flag with which the natives prepare their hemp was in flower, together with some early speciesⁿ. The forest plants here are very similar to those in Dusky Bay, but this port is particularly desirable as a place of refreshment, on account of the number of antiscorbutic plants which grow on every beach; the spruce-tree and the tea-plant grow here in great plenty.

^k Forster, I. 204.

^l Cook, I. 238.

^m Forster, I. 204.

ⁿ Forster, I. 494.

S E C T. II.

*Of the Trees, Plants, Insects, Reptiles, Birds, Beasts, and Fishes
of New-Zeeland.*

THE most beneficial vegetables which this country affords are wild celery, and a kind of cresses, which grow in great abundance on all parts of the sea-coasts; only one cabbage-tree was seen; gourds are cultivated by the natives: here is the paper mulberry-tree, but extremely rare; and a berry which serves the natives instead of flax and hemp, and exceeds all that are made use of for such purposes in other countries. Of this plant there are two sorts; the leaves of both resemble those of flax, but the flowers are smaller, and their clusters more numerous; in one kind they are yellow, and in the other a deep red. Of the leaves of these plants, with very little preparation, they make all their common apparel; and of these they make also their strings, lines, and cordage, for every purpose. These are much stronger than any thing we can make with hemp. From the same plant, by another preparation, they draw long slender fibres which shine like silk, and are as white as snow. Of these, which are also surprizingly strong, the finer cloths are made; and of the leaves, without any other preparation than splitting them into proper breadths, and tying the strips together, they make their fishing-nets°. No plant promises to become so useful to Europe by transplantation as this flax; the hemp or flax which the New-Zeelanders make of it, with their untow and implements, is excessively strong, glossy, and white; and that which has been prepared in England has almost equalled silk in lustre. It grows in both

° Hawkes. III. 443.

islands in all kinds of soil, and being perennial may be cut down to the root every year, and requires scarce any attendance and care in the cultivation^p. Here were found trees of above twenty different sorts that were wholly unknown. No country indeed abounded so much with trees and plants that were entirely unknown to the naturalists of Europe as New-Zeeland. The size, growth, and durability of the timber here renders it fit for any kind of building^q.

On the banks of the *River Thames* was found a tree, which was nineteen feet eight inches in girth, at the height of six feet above the ground; and on measuring it with a quadrant it was found to be eighty-nine feet high. It was as straight as an arrow. Captain Cook guessed it to contain three hundred and fifty-six feet of solid timber, exclusive of its branches; and others were afterwards met with still larger. They cut down a young one, the wood of which proved solid and heavy, and admirably fitted for planks; the timber resembles that of the pitch-pine, which is lightened by tapping; and captain Cook thinks that if some such method could be found to lighten these, they would then be such masts as no country in Europe can produce. This part of the country abounds with several other kinds of trees unknown to the naturalists of Europe, and contains immense woods of the finest timber in the world^r.

In *Dusky Bay* was found a beautiful tree in flower, somewhat related to the myrtle genus, of which an infusion was drank instead of tea on the voyage in the *Endeavour*; its leaves are finely aromatic, astringent, and have a particular pleasant flavour at the first infusion, which is changed to a strong bitter on pouring water on the leaves a second time.

^p Forster, I. 506.

^q Hawkesw. II. 822.

^r Hawkesw. II. 356.

This plant was generally used by all the ship's company when the Resolution lay here, and is supposed to have contributed greatly to their restoration to health. In a fine soil in thick forests, it grows to be a considerable tree, sometimes thirty or forty feet high, and more than a foot in diameter, but on a hilly, arid exposure, it has been found as a small shrub, about six inches high, which bears flowers and seed; but its usual size is about eight or ten feet, and about three inches in diameter; its stem only bears leaves and flowers at top; the flowers are white, and very ornamental to the whole plant³. Another tree, which grows here in great plenty, is of the species of fir, greatly resembling the American fir, which received the name of New-Zeeland spruce-fir. A very wholesome liquor was brewed from the leaves of this tree, which served instead of vegetables. It is very beautiful, and conspicuous on account of its pendent branches, which are loaded with numerous long thread-like leaves of a vivid green; it frequently grows to the height of fifty, sixty, or even one hundred feet, and has about ten feet in girth: its similarity to the American spruce is in its foliage, for the wood is more ponderous, and bears a nearer resemblance to the pitch-pine⁴. Here were found various alpine-plants, which had been met with no where else; and a new species of dragon-trees with broad leaves, of which the central shoot, when quite tender, tasted something like an almond-kernel with a little of the flavour of cabbage⁵. The botanical gentlemen were greatly tantalized here by the appearance of numerous trees and shrubs, which had already lost their flowers and fruits, and only served to give them an idea of the great profusion of vegetables in this country. Here, as well as in all parts of New-Zeeland, are a great

³ Forster, I. 229. Cook, I. 100.

⁴ Forster, I. 130. Cook, I. 70, 95.

⁵ Forster, I. 276.

number of aromatic trees and shrubs, mostly of the myrtle kind, but none were seen that bore fruit fit to be eaten. In many parts the woods were so overrun with supple-jacks, that it was scarcely possible to force a way through them: several of these were fifty or sixty feet long^v.

In *Queen Charlotte's Sound* grows a species of fern-tree, the root of which is eaten by the natives, either boiled or baked by the means of hot stones; and when so dressed it tasted rather better than a turnip: this tree is full of a tender pulp, or pith, which when cut exudes a reddish juice resembling sago; it is called by the natives *mamagho*, but is rather sparingly scattered about this country; there was likewise another kind of fern-root, which the natives named *ponga*, which is a wretched article of diet, consisting of insipid sticks, which are first boiled and then bruised on a stone, with a piece of wood somewhat like the *O-Tahitian* cloth-beater^w. Here a number of very tall trees were cut down for the sake of gathering the flowers; but when the tree was cut it hung in a thousand bind-weeds and climbers from top to bottom, from which no efforts could disengage it^x.

Here is a sort of little crane-fly, which was particularly troublesome in the southern parts of *Towni-Poenamoo* during bad weather: they were very numerous in the skirts of the woods, and are not half so large as gnats or musquettos; the sailors called them sand-flies; their bite caused a swelling, and such an intolerable itching that it is not possible to refrain from scratching, which at last brings on ulcers like the small-pox^y. Here are a few butterflies and beetles, and some flesh-flies very like those in Europe. The woods

^v Cook, I. 95, 96, 99. Cook, I. 135, 136. W. Forster, I. 309, 310.

^w Forster, I. 306. ^y Cook, I. 99. Forster, I. 135, 136.

abound with birds, exquisitely beautiful, and of species quite unknown. The only bird here which resembles any in Europe is the *gannet*; here are ducks and shags, but very different from any among us; their hawks, owls, and quails, differ but little, and the song of their small birds is enchanting^a. In Dusky Bay particularly, small birds were seen in great numbers, which inhabited the woods, and were so little acquainted with mankind, that they familiarly hopped on the nearest branches, and even on the ends of the fowling-pieces, looking at every person that came near them with great curiosity. The unsuspecting tameness of these birds made them the prey of a cat who was on board the ship, who every morning went into the woods, and made great havock among them^a. A white heron was shot in Dusky Bay, which agreed exactly with Mr. Penant's description in his *British Zoology*, of the white herons that either now are, or formerly were, in England^b. Here are great numbers of petrels, which are common over the whole southern ocean. They have a broad bill, and a blackish stripe across their bluish wings and body, and are not so large as the common sheer-water, or manks petrel of Europe. The instinct is very wonderful which actuates these birds to burrow holes in the ground for their young, to roam all over the ocean in quest of food, and to find their way to the shore when they are several hundred leagues distant from it^c. Here are water-hens of a large species: rails are scarce in all parts of New-Zeeland except at *Dusky Bay*, where they were seen in great numbers; also wild ducks, shaggs, cormorants, oyster-catchers, or sea-pies, albatrosses, ducks, penguins, and other sorts of the aquatic kind. Five species of ducks were found in *Dusky Bay*, the largest as big as a Moscow

^a Hawkesw. III. 439.^a Forster, I. 127, 128. . . . ^b Cook, I. 87.^c Forster, I. 127, 153.

duck, with a beautiful variegated plumage, on which account it received the name of painted-duck. One had a brown plumage, with bright green feathers on the wings, about the size of an English tame duck. Another, called the blue-grey duck, or the whistling duck, from the noise they made: the end of their bills is soft, of a skinny, or rather cartilaginous substance. Another species is somewhat bigger than a teal, all black, except the drake, which has some white feathers in its wing, of these but few were met with: besides which, there is another species something less than a teal; its colour a shining greenish black above, and a dark sooty grey below, a purple cast on the head, a lead-coloured bill and feet, a golden eye, and a white bar in the lefs or quill-feathers^d. Among the small birds are the wattle-bird, the poy-bird, and the fan-tail. The wattle-bird is larger, particularly in length, than the English black-bird; its bill short and thick, and its feathers a dark lead colour. The poy-bird is less than the wattle, the feathers of a fine mazarine blue, except those of its neck, which are of a most beautiful silver grey, and two or three short white ones which are on the pinion-joint of the wing; under its throat hang two little tufts of curled, snow-white feathers, called its poies, which being the O-Tahitian name for ear-rings, occasioned this name to be given to the bird, which is not more remarkable for the beauty of its plumage than for the sweetness of its note; its flesh is also most delicious, and was the greatest luxury the woods of *Dusky Bay* afforded. Of the fan-tail there are different sorts, but the body of the most remarkable one is scarcely larger than a good filbert, yet it spreads a tail of most beautiful plumage full three quarters of a semicircle of at least four or five inches radius^e.

^d Forster, l. 168.

^e Cook, l. 96, 97, 98.

Dogs and rats are the only quadrupeds that are known to be in this country; the former are eaten by the natives, and their skins serve to ornament the garments worn here in the manner that fur or ermine is used among us. Whether any wild four-footed animal inhabits this country is uncertain; three or four of the ship's company in 1773, are said to have seen a brown animal resembling a jackall, about the size of a cat, with short legs and a bushy tail^f, but Mr. Forster doubts the existence of such an animal^g. They seem very fond of dogs, and keep them tied with a string round the middle: they are of a rough long-haired sort, with pricked ears, and much resembling the shepherd's cur: they are of different colours; some spotted, some quite black, and others perfectly white; their food is fish, of which they partake in common with their masters, who afterwards feed on their flesh, and apply their skins to various uses of dress and ornament. The natives sold their visitants several of these animals; such as were young soon accustomed themselves to their new masters, and ate of the provisions furnished for them; but the old ones grew sulky, refused all food, and died^h. What is very remarkable in these dogs is, that they eat the bones of other dogs, and the puppies become true canibals from their birth. A young New Zealand puppy was on board the Resolution, who had had no opportunity whatever of tasting any thing but the mother's milk when on shore; however, it eagerly devoured a part of the flesh and bones of a dog that had been killed and dressed on board the ship, while several other dogs of European breed, which had been taken on board at the Cape, turned away without touching eitherⁱ. The practice of eating dog's flesh is pretty general among the inhabitants of the South-Sea, and was at length adopted by the officers

^f Cook, I. 98.

^g Forster, I. 156.

^h Forster, I. 219.

ⁱ Forster, I. 236.

and gentlemen on board the ships, as a relief from the loathed diet of salt provisions. A dog on board was killed, and a leg of it roasted was served up at the captain's table, and tasted so exactly like mutton, as to be quite undistinguishable. A bitch of the tarrier kind taken on board at the Cape, and covered by a spaniel, brought ten young ones, one of which was dead; the New Zealand puppy ate up the dead dog with a ravenous appetite, which shews how far education may go in producing and propagating new instincts in animals: European dogs are never fed with the meat of their own species, but abhor it; the New Zealand dogs are used to eat fish, their own species, and probably human flesh, and what was owing to habit at first, may have become instinct by length of time. Further to instance the cannibal nature of this young dog, one of the seamen having cut his finger, held it out to the dog, who fell to greedily, licked it, and then began to bite into it: This young puppy certainly never had acquired the habit of eating either his own species, or human flesh, the disposition therefore must have been instinctive^k. The relish and antipathy of different breeds of dogs to certain kinds of food is remarkable among us; a pointer, an hound, or any dog of scent, will not touch the flesh or bones of wild duck, or any game, and this is an innate instinct in the breed, whilst the various kinds of mastiff, and others, will feed on them very readily.

Many sorts of fish were caught here, which were entirely unknown in Europe; and are equally delicious. Every creek swarms with them. Here were caught mackerel of various kinds, which came in immense shoals, but captain Cook describes the highest luxury which the sea afforded here, to be the lobster, or sea cray-fish, which differ from those in Europe in several particulars; they have a greater

^k Forster, I. 244.

number of prickles on their back, and are red when first taken out of the water ^l. Here are flat-fish resembling both soles and flounders, besides eels, and congers of various kinds; also clams, cockles, and oysters.

S E C T. III.

Of the Persons, Dress, Houses, Food, Utensils, Weapons and Canoes of the New Zealanders. Their Hippias or fortified Villages, and of their Women.

THE stature of the New Zealanders is equal to the tallest Europeans; they are stout, well-limbed, and fleshy, but not fat; they are vigorous and active, and have an uncommon share of adroitness and manual dexterity: their limbs are well proportioned, except their legs and feet, which are distorted, from their manner of sitting cross-legged in their canoes ^m. In general, their complexion is brown, but not deeper than that of a Spaniard, who has been exposed to the sun ⁿ. Their countenances are intelligent and expressive ^o. The women are plain, and make themselves more so, by painting their faces with red ochre and oil, which being generally fresh, and wet upon their cheeks and foreheads, was easily transferred to the noses of those who thought fit to salute them ^p. A great difference was observable in the inhabitants of the two islands; those to the north were tall and well-limbed, were much tattowed, and had plenty of good cloaths; but those on the southern island, according to Sidney Parkinson, are miserably looking wretches, few of them are tattowed, or have their hair oiled, and seem stunted in their growth, although they are stout-made men ^q. The New Zealanders in general, have

^l Hawkefw. III. 44c. ^m Forster I. 240. ⁿ Hawkefw. III. 448.
^o Idem. II. 291. ^p Idem 312. ^q Parkinson 119.

the aquiline nose, with dark-coloured eyes, black hair, which is tied up to the crown of the head, and moderate beards. Their tattowing is done very curiously in spiral and other figures; and in many places indented into their skins, so as to look like carving; but at a distance it appears as if it had been only smeared with a black paint. This tattowing is peculiar to the principal men among them: servants and women content themselves with besmearing their faces with red paint or ochre. Besides tattowing, they have marks impressed by an unknown method, of a very extraordinary kind. These are furrows of about a line deep, and a line broad; such as appear on the bark of a tree that has been cut through after a year's growth. The edges of these furrows are afterwards indented by the same method, and being perfectly black, they make a most frightful appearance. The faces of the old men are almost covered with these marks: those who are very young, black only their lips like the women; when they are somewhat older, they have generally a black patch upon one cheek, and over one eye, and so proceed gradually, that they may grow old and honourable together. The marks upon the face in general are spirals, which are drawn with great nicety, and even elegance; those on one side exactly corresponding with those on the other. The quantity and form of those marks were different in different parts of the coast, and as the principal seat of them at *O-Tahitee* was the breech, in New Zealand it was sometimes the only part which was free, and in general was less distinguished than any other^r. Their cloth is white, and as glossy as silk, worked by hands, and wrought as even as if it had been done in a loom, and is chiefly worn by the men, though it is made by the women, who also carry burdens, and do all the drudgery. Their

^r Hawkesworth III. 452.

cloathing consists of a girdle of platted-grass, which they wear round their loins, having some leaves hung upon it, and a kind of grass-rug cloak thrown over their shoulders, each corner being ornamented with a piece of dog-skin. Most of them had their hair tied upon the crown of their heads in a knot, and hard by the knot stuck a comb of wood or bone. In and about their ears some of them had white feathers, with pieces of birds skins, whose feathers were soft as down; but others had the teeth of their parents, or a bit of green stone worked very smooth. These stone ornaments were of various shapes. They likewise wore a kind of shoulder-knot, made of the skin of the neck of a large sea-fowl with the feathers on, split in two, lengthways. Their faces were tattowed, or marked, either all over, or on one side, in a very curious manner; some of them in fine spiral directions like a volute^s. Many of the women have very good features, their lips are stained with a blue colour, and several had their faces scratched all over, as if with needles or pins. But these marks, as well as such as appeared upon the bodies of the men, were imprinted by themselves, as tokens of their grief for the death of their relations. The hair of the women hangs down, which they adorn with leaves^t. Their winter dress is shaggy cloaks, which are called *boghce boghee*; these hang round their necks like a thatch of straw^u. Mr. Forster takes notice, that the dress of these islanders was very different, and seemed to indicate a great disproportion in the degrees of ease and affluence between one district and tribe and another; but in all the natives that were seen in every part of the island, swarms of vermine infested their persons and garments^v: and the same gentleman saw one man marked with deep excavated

^s Parkinson 90.

^t Parkinson 97, 98.

^u Forster I. 210.

^v Forster I. 225, 226.

spiral lines very regularly on his chin, cheeks, forehead and nose, so that his beard, which would otherwise have been very thick, consisted only of a few straggling hairs. This man, who was seen in Queen Charlotte's Sound, appeared to have some authority among the people, and was the only instance of distinction that had been observed^w. Several rows of human teeth drawn on a thread hung on their breasts.

The women are of a clear brown, between the olive and mahogany hues; their hair jetty black, their faces round, their nose and lips thick, but not flat; their black eyes sometimes lively, and not without expression; the whole upper part of their figure not disproportionate, and their assemblage of features not absolutely forbidding. They are not remarkable for their delicacy, but they have a soft voice, which is indeed the most distinguishing difference, as both sexes dress a good deal alike^x. The little respect that was paid to the women here, was observed with great displeasure by Tupia. The *O-Tabeitian* custom of the men and women eating separately, does not prevail here.

Their chief food is fish, which they catch at all seasons of the year, in sufficient quantities, and dry them for their winter subsistence, when the catching them is less agreeable. Some of the natives on the eastern coast of the northern island, presented those on board the Endeavour with a large parcel of smoked eels, which tasted very sweet and luscious^y. They shewed themselves much more expert fishers than any of their European visitants; nor were any of the methods practised by our people equal to theirs^z. Their only

^w Forster I. 220.

^x Hawkesw. III. 450.

^y Parkinson 101.

^z Cook I. 123.

liquor is water, and they constantly refused to touch either wine or brandy when on board the ship, and drank pure water, or sweetened with sugar, though they partook very freely of the provisions that were set on table ^a.

The houses of these people are seldom more than eighteen or twenty feet long, eight or ten broad, and five or six high; the framing is of wood, and both walls and roof consist of dried grass very neatly entwined. Some are lined with the bark of trees, which renders them very warm: the roof is sloping, and the door which is made at one end will only admit a man into it upon his hands and knees: Near the door is a square hole which serves both as a window and chimney ^b. These people, however, frequently sleep in the open air; Mr. Banks and doctor Solander had an opportunity of observing how they disposed of themselves at night, at which time they entrust themselves to the canopy of heaven in the following order; the women and children were ranged innermost, or farthest from the sea; the men lay in a kind of half circle round them, with their arms set up against the trees close by them. But this was only seen about Mercury Bay. The fortified villages that were seen here are very remarkable. They are strong holds erected on rocks. Two of these fortified villages were seen near the river Thames; they were situated on a most romantic spot, on a small rock, the whole summit of which was fenced round; it was large enough to contain five or six houses, and was accessible only by one very narrow and steep path; the other, in its neighbourhood, was larger and well fortified towards the land, from whence only it is accessible ^c. Another of these *hippas* was situated on a very high rock which

^a Forster I. 209.

^b Hawkesw. III. 456.

^c Hawkesw. II. 243.

was hollow underneath, forming a most grand natural arch, one side of which was connected with the land, the other rose out of the sea; underneath this arch a small vessel might have sailed; it was near a pleasant bay, and almost inaccessible^d. Several of these fortifications were seen in Queen Charlotte's Sound; one of them which lay nearest the ship was situated on a steep insulated rock, accessible only in one place by a narrow difficult path, where two persons could not go abreast; at the top it was surrounded with pallisades; the huts stood promiscuously within the inclosure, and had no walls, but consisted only of a roof which rose into a steep ridge: the inner skeletons of these huts were branches of trees plaited so as to resemble hurdles; on these they had laid the bark of trees, and covered the whole with the rough fibres of the flag or flax-plant. These places seem only to be the occasional abode of the natives in case of danger from their enemies, and as soon as their state of tranquillity returns they quit these heights for the level country^e. On one of the *hippas*, or fortified villages, here was seen a cross, exactly like that of a crucifix, adorned with feathers. This they said was a monument of a man who was dead, but no information could be obtained how the body was disposed of, or whither it had been thrown into the sea, as appears to be their common practice^f.

Their tools are adzes, axes, and chissels, which serve them also as augers for the boring of holes. As they have no metal, their adzes and axes are made of a hard black stone, or of a green talc, which is not only hard but tough; and their chissels are of human bone, or small fragments of jasper, which they chip off from a block in sharp angular pieces like a gun-flint. Their axes they value above all

^d Parkinson 117.

^e Forster I. 201.

^f Hawkesw. II. 393.

that

that they possess, and never would part with one of them on any consideration. Captain Cook offered one of the best axes he had in the ship, besides a number of other things, for one, but could not procure it. Their small tools of jasper, which are used in finishing their nicest work, they use till they are blunt, and then, as they have no means of sharpening them, throw them away^g. They have baskets of various kinds and sizes, made of wicker-work. Notwithstanding they are expert fishers, their fish-hooks are of a remarkably clumsy form, made of wood, and barbed with a piece of bone which is jagged, and which they said was human bone. The making of nets seems to be the staple manufacture of those parts of the country which were visited. Almost every house was more or less busied in this way, and the several parts being afterwards collected were joined together. These nets are of a circular form, extended by two hoops, and about seven or eight feet in diameter; the top is open, and they fasten sea-ears to the bottom as a bait. This net they let down so as to lie upon the ground; and when they imagine fish enough are collected over it, they draw it up by a very gentle and easy motion; so that the fish rise with it scarcely sensible that they are lifted, till they come very near the surface of the water, and then a sudden jerk brings them with the net into the boat^h.

Their weapons are spears, darts, battle-axes, and the patoo-patoo. The spear is fourteen or fifteen feet long, pointed at both ends, and sometimes headed with bone. These are grasped by the middle, so that the part behind balancing that before, makes a push more difficult to be parried than that of a weapon which is held by the endⁱ. Their

^g Hawkesw. III. 464.

^h Hawkesw. III. 446.

ⁱ Hawkesw. III. 466.

pátoo-pátóos are made of green talc shaped like a pointed battledore, with a short handle and sharp edges; they will infallibly split the thickest skull at a blow ^k.

The canoes of this country are long and narrow, some are so large as to carry near one hundred men. Captain Cook measured one of these, which he found to be sixty-eight feet and an half long, five feet broad, and three feet and an half deep. She had a sharp bottom, consisting of three trunks of trees hollowed, of which that in the middle was the longest. The side-planks were sixty-two feet long in one piece, and were not despicably carved in bas relief: the head was still more richly adorned with carving^l. At *Mercury Bay*, which is called by the natives *Opaorage*, the canoes were no other than trunks of trees hollowed by fire, without either convenience or ornament; the Indians who rowed them were almost naked, and appeared of a browner complexion than the rest of their countrymen. These latter seem to be intended wholly for fishing, consists of the figure of a man, with a face as ugly as can be conceived, and a monstrous tongue thrust out of the mouth, with the white shells of sea-ears stuck in for the eyes. But the canoes of the superior kind, which seem to be their men of war, are magnificently adorned with open work, and covered with loose fringes of black feathers, which have a most elegant appearance. The gunwale boards were likewise frequently adorned with tufts of white feathers placed upon a black ground^m. Their paddles are about six feet long; the blade of an oval shape: they make their strokes with these paddles with incredible quickness, and with such strict exactness of time, that all the rowers seem to be actuated by one common soul. They are but indifferent sailors, having no

^k Hawkesw. II. 279.

^l Idem II. 320f

^m Hawkesw. III. 462.

knowledge of going otherwise than before the wind. Their sails are made of the same materials as their cloathing.

S E C T. IV.

Of the Disposition and Manners of the New-Zeelanders. Their Skill in Husbandry, Cleanliness, Fierceness, Method of attacking their Enemies, and horrid Practice of eating human Flesh. The Diseases to which they are incident. Their Language, Music, Government, and Religion.

FROM the observations that were made concerning the employments of the men and women of this country, it should seem that the former till the ground, make nets, catch birds, and fish with nets and lines. The women dig up fern roots, collect lobsters, and other shell-fish, in the shallow waters near the beach, dress the victuals, and weave clothⁿ.

The same kind of circumcision is practised here as at *O-Tabeitee*°.

Respect is always paid to old men among them, who may be supposed to owe their consequence to the long experience they have gained; but their chiefs are strong, active young men, in the prime and flower of their life^r.

At Queen Charlotte's Sound, Mr. Banks and doctor Solander going on shore in search of natural productions of the country, by accident fell in with a very agreeable Indian family, which afforded them a better opportunity of remarking the personal subordination among these people, than had

° Hawkesw. III. 470.

° See page 112.

° Forster I. 230.

before offered. The principal persons were a widow, and a pretty boy about ten years old. The widow was mourning for her husband with tears of blood, according to their custom; and the child, by the death of its father, was become proprietor of a district of land. The mother and the son were sitting upon mats, and the rest of the family, to the number of sixteen or seventeen, of both sexes, sat round them in the open air, for they did not appear to have any house, or other shelter from the weather, the inclemencies of which custom had probably enabled them to endure without any lasting inconvenience. Their whole behaviour was affable, obliging, and unsuspecting. They presented each person with fish, and a brand of fire to dress it; and pressed them many times to stay till the morning, which they would have done had they not expected the ship to sail. The first inhabitants that were seen in Dusky Bay were a man and two women. The man stood with a battle-ax, or club, in his hand, on the rocky point of an island, and called to captain Cook, and some more who were passing near him in a boat. The women were behind him, each with a long spear in their hand. His salutation was answered in the language of *O-Tahitee*, *tayo barre mai*, "friend, come hither;" he did not, however, stir from his post, but held a long speech, frequently swinging round his club, on which he leaned at other times. The captain landed on the rock alone; great signs of fear were conspicuous in the poor native; however, he stood firm on the same spot. The captain went up to him, and embraced him according to the custom of the country, by joining noses, by which token of amity all apprehensions on the part of the natives were dispelled. The man received the presents that were made him, and the two women joined company: one of them had

^a Hawkesw. III. 403.

a prodigious excreffence on the upper lip, and was in every respect remarkably ugly. An hour was spent in conversation, which was very little understood by either party, and in which the youngest woman bore by far the greatest share. The next day the gentlemen renewed their visit. The natives received all the articles that were offered them with great indifference, except hatchets and spike-nails, in return for which they parted with several of their ornaments and weapons, but did not choose to part with their spears. A perfect good understanding being now established, the next time the captain visited them he found them dressed out in the highest taste of the country; their hair was combed, tied to the crown of their head, and anointed with some oil or grease: white feathers were stuck in at the top; some had fillets of white feathers all round the head, and others wore pieces of an albatros skin, with its fine white down in their ears. A cloak of red baize was presented to the chief, in return for which he gave the captain a patoo-patoo, which he drew from his side; it was a short club made of a fish bone. A few days after, they were prevailed upon to venture on board the ship, which they promised to do the next morning. Whilst the gentlemen were on shore a sudden quarrel arose between the man and the two women, who were supposed to be his wives, the cause of which could not be at all guessed at; however, the women received a beating from their supposed husband, at which a young girl struck the man, and then began to weep. The next morning the man and young woman came down to the ship, but before he went on board he broke off a small green branch from a bush, and walked on with it in his hand, and struck the ship's sides with it several times: he then began to repeat a kind of speech, or prayer, which seemed to have regular cadences, and to be metrically arranged as a poem,

poem, which lasted two or three minutes, and when over he threw the branch into the main-chains, and went on board. This manner of delivering solemn orations, and making peace, is practised by all nations in the South-Sea, as appears from the testimony of various voyagers. Both the man and the girl had a spear in their hand. Every thing they saw excited their curiosity: they were particularly pleased to learn the use of chairs, and that they might be removed from place to place, but it was not possible to fix their attention to any one thing for a single moment. Of all the various presents that were made the man, hatchets and spike-nails still continued to be most valuable in his eyes: these he never would suffer to go out of his hands after he had once laid hold on them, whereas many other articles he would lay carelessly down, and at last leave them behind him. They could not be prevailed on to eat any thing; at length the man pulled out a little bag, and having, with a great deal of ceremony, put in his fingers, pulled them out dropping with oil, with which he was about to anoint captain Cook's hair; but this honour was declined, on account of its ungrateful odour to an European nose: however, the kindness of the girl was more effectually exercised on Mr. Hodges the painter, for with a tuft of feathers which she dipt in the oil, she plentifully bedewed his locks. In a short time an acquaintance was cultivated with a few more of the natives, who seemed to be the only inhabitants on this part of the country. These coveted the possession of every thing they saw, or could lay their hands on, except muskets, which they would not touch, having learnt to dread them as instruments of death, from the destruction which they had seen them make among the wild-fowl. The courage of these people is very remarkable; if they had

^r Forster, 137, 141.

Not discovered themselves, and thereby made the first advances; they might, with great ease, have kept themselves concealed; but a certain openness and honesty appear strongly to mark their character, for had they been inclined to treachery they would have endeavoured to have cut off small parties that were frequently dispersed in different parts of the woods, in which they might have been but too successful. At first it was supposed that their strong predilection for hatchets was founded on the convenience of such an implement for the purposes of civil life, but it was found at length that the friendly chief intended to employ them as weapons of war, for he signified by signs that he was going on an expedition to kill men, and meant to employ the hatchet as an offensive weapon. This man gave a very strong proof of his courage, for after having seen several muskets fired in his presence, he became desirous of discharging one himself, which being complied with, the young woman, who was supposed to be his daughter, fell prostrate on the ground before him, and entreated him, with the strongest marks of fear, to desist from his purpose, but in vain; he discharged the piece with the greatest firmness, and repeated it three or four times^s.

A New-Zeelander came on board the Resolution when she lay in Queen Charlotte's Sound, with his son and daughter; they were introduced into the cabin, where captain Cook gave him many little presents, and dressed the boy in one of his own white shirts: the boy was so overjoyed at his finery that nothing could confine him to the cabin, he must display it to his countrymen on the deck; this puerile vanity however served, for the first time perhaps, to make him acquainted with misfortune. An old he-goat that

^s Forster, I. 162, 163, 169, 174. Cook, I. 74, 75, 81, 82, 101.

walked

walked the decks, to the great terror of all the New-Zeelanders, conceived a capricious kind of dislike to the ludicrous figure of poor *Khoaa*, which was the boy's name, who was lost in the ample folds of his shirt, and awkwardly trotted about with perfect self-complacency. The sturdy mountaineer assailed the youth, and raising himself on his hind legs, with one but of his head made the beau measure his length on the deck; the boy bellowed out his tribulations so loudly, that his exulting conqueror was proceeding to further chastisement, when the people who were spectators interposed, and put an end to the unequal conflict. The unhappy *Khoaa*'s pride was now humbled in the dust; his shirt was besmeared with dirt, and in this woeful plight he slunk into the cabin, feelingly telling his misfortune by his tears; the stern father, "unused to the melting mood," was enraged to see the inestimable present begrimed with filth, and in the ungovernable fally of his anger, bestowed many hearty blows on the poor sufferer. Happily this tragical event produced no lasting ill-consequences, for the shirt was washed, and brought to its former purity, and what is more, the boy was washed all over, most probably for the first time in his life; but the provident father dreading another mischance to the precious vestment, carefully rolled it up, and taking off his own dress, made a bundle of it, in which he placed all the presents which he and his son had received. The disposition to steal and secrete every thing they could lay their hands on, was prevalent in all that came on board the ship in Queen Charlotte's Sound; several of them were discovered in conveying away a variety of things that lay conveniently for their purpose, upon which they were ignominiously turned out of the sloop. They felt the whole weight of shame which this treatment brought on them, and

† Forster, I. 501.

their irascible temper, impatient of receiving indignities, however merited, took fire at such treatment; so that one of them uttered threats, and made violent gestures in his canoe. One time a woman stole a jacket from one of the sailors, and conveyed it to a young New-Zeelander. The owner finding the stolen goods upon him, took away his property without ceremony, for which he received several blows with the fist, which the sailor with great good-nature passed by, imputing them to jocularly; but as he was advancing to his boat, he was saluted with several large stones thrown at him by the New-Zeelander; this was more than the spirit of a seaman could brook, he therefore returned, and began to attack the aggressor in the English manner of boxing, and presently obliged him to sheer off with a black eye and bloody nose. A boy, about fourteen years of age, was prevailed on to drink about a glass of Madeira wine, at which he made a great many wry faces at first; a bottle of very sweet Cape wine being brought upon the table, a glass was filled out to him, which he relished so well that he was continually licking his lips, and desired to have another, which he likewise drank off: these potations began to elevate his spirits, and his tongue ran with great volubility; he capered about the cabin, insisted on having the captain's boat-cloak which lay on a chair, and was much piqued at a refusal: he next desired one of the empty bottles, and this request likewise proving fruitless, he went out of the cabin highly offended. On deck he saw some of the servants folding up linen which had been hung out to dry, and immediately seized on a table-cloth; but this being taken from him, his passion rose very high; he stamped, threatened, then grumbled, or rather grunted awhile, and at last became so sullen that he would not speak a word; this

boy was a very just sample of the impatient temper of these people^w. Among the natives who visited the ship, several had very expressive countenances, particularly some old men with grey and white beards, and some young men with great quantities of bushy hair, which hung wildly over their faces, and increased their natural savage looks. What is very extraordinary, the enquiries after Tupia, and the concern shewn for his death, when captain Cook visited them in the Resolution, were more earnest and emphatical here than at O-Tahitee: so much had this man's superior knowledge, and his abilities to converse in their language, rendered him valuable and beloved even by a people in a state of barbarism: perhaps with the capacity with which he was endowed, and which had been cultivated no further than the simplicity of his native manners extended, he was better qualified for leading the New-Zeelanders into a state of civilization similar to that of his own country, than their more enlightened European friends. They appear to live in a perpetual state of hospitality with each other, from the following circumstance which happened in Queen Charlotte's Sound: a family of the natives was on board the Resolution, when a large double canoe, well manned, appeared making to the ship from the northward. The natives on board, with great earnestness signified, that those that were approaching were enemies, and were very importunate with the officers to fire upon them, and the head of the family jumped on the arm-chest which stood on the quarter deck, and with a stick made a number of warlike motions, and then addressed those in the canoe very vehemently but solemnly, at the same time brandishing a large hatchet of green nephritic stone, which till then he had concealed: the canoe, however, approached,

^w Forster, I. 210.

without seeming to notice this harangue; and the declaimer was at length prevailed on to be silent. It was then the other party's turn to speak, and one in the canoe pronounced a long and well-articulated speech, with great variety of cadences. He appeared by turns to question, to boast, to threaten, to challenge, and to persuade: sometimes he would run on in a moderate tone, then all at once break out into violent exclamations; after which he made short pauses in order to recover his breath: having finished his oration, he was invited to come on board by the captain: he seemed at first to hesitate, as though distrustful, but his natural intrepidity soon dispersed his fears; he ascended the side of the ship, and was soon followed by all his party, who traded with the greatest eagerness for iron-wares. Notwithstanding the expressions of enmity that had been exchanged between these two tribes of Indians, they saluted each other very cordially with the usual application of noses; or, as the sailors expressed it, they nosed each other: the same compliment was also paid to every person on the quarter-deck by these well-bred strangers. Those in the canoe came from the opposite shore of the northern island, called *Terra Whittee* *.

At another time the natives, at the request of the gentlemen, performed their various methods of attack and defence; one of their young men mounted a fighting stage, which they call *porava*, and another went into the ditch. Both he that was to defend the place, and he that was to assault it, sung the war-song, and danced with frightful gesticulations; these were practised as means of working themselves up into that mechanical fury, which, among all uncivi-

* Forster, I. 225.

lized nations, is the necessary prelude to a battle; for, says doctor Hawkefworth, "dispassionate courage, a strength of mind that can surmount a sense of danger, without a flow of animal spirits by which it is extinguished, seems to be the prerogative of those who have projects of more lasting importance, and a keener sense of honour and disgrace than can be formed or felt by men who have few pains or pleasures besides those of mere animal life, and scarcely any purpose but to provide for the day that is passing over them; to obtain plunder, or revenge an insult. They will march against each other indeed in cool blood, though they find it necessary to work themselves into passion before they engage: as among us, there have been many instances of people who have deliberately made themselves drunk, that they might execute a project which they formed when they were sober, but which while they continued so they did not dare to undertake."^y

Their battles, whether in boats or on shore, are generally hand to hand, and the slaughter must consequently be great, as a second blow with any of their weapons is unnecessary, if the first takes place. Their trust, however, seems to be principally placed in the patoo-patoo, which is fastened to their wrists by a strong strap, lest it should be wrenched from them; and this the principal people generally wear sticking in their girdles, considering it as a military ornament, and part of their dress, like the poniard of the Asiatic, and the sword of the European. They have no defensive armour; but besides their weapons, the chiefs carry a staff of distinction, in the same manner as our officers do the spon-oon. This is generally the rib of a whale, as white as snow, with many ornaments of carved work, dog's hair,

^y Hawkefw. II. 344.

and feathers; but sometimes it is a stick, about six feet long, adorned in the same manner, and inlaid with a shell like mother-of-pearl. Those who bore this mark of distinction were generally old, at least past the middle age, and were also more marked with the *amoa* than the rest. One or more persons thus distinguished always appeared in each canoe, when they came to attack the Endeavour. As soon as they were within a cable's length of the ship, they used to stop, and the chiefs rising from their seat, put on a dress which seemed appropriated for the occasion, generally of dog's skin, and holding out their decorated staff, or a weapon, directed the rest of the people what they should do. When they were at too great a distance to reach the ship with a lance, or a stone, they presumed that they were likewise inaccessible to any weapon. Here then the defiance was given, and the words were almost universally the same. *Harsmai, harsmai hurre uta a patoo-patoo oge*, "come to us, come on shore, and we will kill you all with our patoo-patooos." While they were uttering these menaces they came gradually nearer and nearer, till they were close alongside, talking at intervals in a peaceable strain, and answering any questions that were asked them; and at intervals renewing their defiance and threats, till being encouraged by the apparent timidity of those on board, they began their war-song and dance, as a prelude to an attack, which always followed, and was sometimes continued till it became absolutely necessary to repress them by firing some small shot; and sometimes ended after throwing a few stones on board, as if content with having offered an insult which the others did not dare to revenge. Their war-dance consists of a great variety of violent motions, and hideous contortions of the limbs, during which the countenance also performs its part. The tongue is frequently thrust out to an incredible length, and

and
pearl
iris,
that
At th
and
danc
not d
sigh,
danc
agilit
time
again
found
a pri
ner in
knock
them
tice o
with
to ma
were
rema
griftl
them
direc
with
they
repli
not e
wate
was

and the eye-lids so forcibly drawn up, that the white appears both above and below, as well as on each side of the iris, so as to form a circle round it: nor is any thing neglected that can render the human shape frightful and deformed. At the same time they brandish their spears, shake their darts, and cleave the air with their *patoo-patoos*. This horrid dance is always accompanied by a song, which is wild, but not disagreeable, and every strain ends in a loud and deep sigh, which they utter in concert. In the motions of the dance, however horrid, there is a strength, firmness, and agility, that is truly admirable; and in their song they keep time with such exactness, that a hundred paddles struck against the sides of their canoes at once, produce but a single sound at the divisions of their music^a. They seemed to take a pride in their cruelties, and shewed their visitors the manner in which they dispatched their prisoners, which was to knock them down with their *patoo-patoos*, and then to rip them up^a. They made no scruple of declaring their practice of eating their enemies. The bones of a man were seen with the flesh off, and though every circumstance concurred to make it evident that these people were canibals, for they were found in one of their provision-baskets, the flesh that remained appeared to have been dressed by fire, and in the gristles at the end were the marks of teeth which had gnawed them; but to fix the fact on the fullest certainty, Tupia was directed to ask what bones they were; to which the Indians, without the least hesitation replied, the bones of a man: they were then asked what was become of the flesh, and they replied that they had eaten it; but, said Tupia, why did you not eat the body of a woman which we saw floating upon the water? The woman, said they, died of disease: besides, she was our relation, and we eat only the bodies of our enemies,

^a Hawkesw. III, 468.

^a Parkinson, 116.

who are killed in battle. Upon enquiry who the man was whose bones were found, they said, that about five days before, a boat belonging to their enemies came into the bay, with many persons on board, and that this man was one of seven whom they had killed. On asking if they had any human bones with the flesh remaining on them; they answered all had been eaten. Upon the gentlemen affecting to disbelieve that the bones were human, and saying that they were the bones of a dog, one of the Indians, with some eagerness, took hold of his own fore-arm, and thrusting it towards the company said, that the bone which Mr. Banks then held in his hand had belonged to that part of a human body: at the same time, to convince them that the flesh had been eaten, he took hold of his own arm with his teeth, and made shew of eating. He also bit and gnawed the bone which Mr. Banks had taken, drawing it through his mouth, and shewing, by signs, that it had afforded a delicious repast^a. Of the human head they eat only the brains. Some heads were produced by the natives in proof of what they had asserted; the hair and flesh of which were entire, but the brains had been extracted; the flesh was soft, but had by some method been preserved from putrefaction, for it had no disagreeable smell. Mr. Banks purchased one of four; but they sold it with great reluctance, and could by no means be prevailed on to part with a second. Probably they may be preserved as trophies, like the scalps of America, and the jaw-bones of the tropical islands. Among these heads some seemed to have false eyes, and ornaments in their ears, as if alive. That which Mr. Banks bought was evidently the head of a young person, about fourteen or fifteen years of age, and from the contusions on one side appeared to have received many violent blows, and a part of the bone near one

^a Hawkesw. II. 382.

of the
coun
on a
layin
surpr
shew
word
with
main
of ab
was f
stroke
restin
reserv
being
at the
of the
seated
stone
sorrow
a nail
who
delic
in po
existe
the o
cheek
desire
after
whol
of th
ipeca
has b

of the eyes was wanting. When the Resolution visited this country three years afterwards, some of the lieutenants going on a trading excursion, saw the entrails of a human corpse laying on the ground; they were hardly recovered from the surprize occasioned by such a sight, before the natives shewed them several limbs of the body, and expressed by words and gestures, that they had eaten the rest: the head, without the lower jaw-bone, was one of the parts which remained; this likewise appeared to have belonged to a youth of about fifteen or sixteen years old, and the skull of this too was fractured near one of the temples, apparently with the stroke of a *patoo-patoo*. On enquiring further into this interesting fact, the natives informed the officers, without any reserve, that they had killed several of their enemies without being able to bring any of the dead away besides this youth; at the same time they acknowledged that they had lost several of their friends; and pointed to a group of women who were seated apart weeping, and cutting their foreheads with sharp stones, in conformity to the established custom of expressing sorrow. The head was bought by lieutenant Pickersgill for a nail, and brought on board the ship; some of the natives who saw it there, signified by their gestures that it was delicious food, and expressed a strong desire of being in possession of it. In order to be fully convinced of the existence of a race of *anthropophagi* beyond all possible doubt, the owner of the head cut off a small piece of flesh from the cheek, which they would not eat raw, but signified a great desire to have it dressed; it was therefore broiled on the fire, after which they devoured it with great relish before the whole ship's company. This had such an effect on some of those who were spectators, that it operated like a dose of *ipecaquanha*; but the sensations of Mahine or Oedidee, who has been before mentioned^b, bespoke a heart truly philan-

^b Page 151.

thropic;

thropic; he became motionless at the sight, and seemed as if transformed into the statue of horror; no pencil could paint half the emotion that appeared in his countenance. When roused from this state of silent distraction, he burst into tears, and continued to weep and rave by turns. The first use he made of speech was, to express his concern for the unhappy parents of the victim: he then vented his indignation on those savages, told them they were vile men; and that he neither was, nor would be hereafter their friend; he would not suffer them even to come near him, and refused to touch the knife with which the flesh had been cut; he continued several hours in this state of agitation, and so long as he remained on board the ship, spoke of the transaction with great emotion^c; but a more fatal instance of the ferocity of this nation remains to be related. He did not fail to speak of this event, when he arrived at *O-Tahitee*; great was the curiosity which his tale excited, to see the head of this boy, which Mr. Pickersgill had preserved in spirits: they agreed in giving it a peculiar name in their language, calling it *te-tae-ai*, which appears to be equivalent to men-eaters. This led Mr. Forster to make enquiries among the chiefs, and most intelligent of the people, concerning this extraordinary circumstance, from whence he gathered, that a traditional report is current among them, that in an indefinite but remote period of time, there were men-eaters upon their island, who made great havock among the inhabitants, and were a very strong and robust people, but that this race had been long since extinct; which account was afterwards confirmed by *O-Mai* when in England^d.

The licentious intercourse between the sexes, which was practised in other of the South Sea Islands, was by no means

^c Forster, I. 511. Cook, I. 244.

^d Forster, II. 77.

tolerated

tolerated here. "The women," says doctor Hawkesworth, "were not invincible, but the terms and manner of their compliance was as decent as those in marriage among us, and according to their notions, the agreement was as innocent. When any of our people made an overture to one of their young women, he was given to understand, that the consent of her friends was necessary, and by the influence of a proper present, it was generally obtained. But when these preliminaries were settled, it was also necessary to treat the wife for a night, with the same delicacy that is required by the wife for life; and the lover that presumed to take any liberties, by which this was violated, was sure to be disappointed. One of the gentlemen on board having made his addresses to a family of the better sort, received an answer, which translated into our language, according to the mode and spirit of it, as well as the letter, would have been exactly in these terms. "Any of these young ladies will think themselves honoured by your addresses, but you must first make her a suitable present, and you must then come and spend the night with us on shore, for day-light must by no means be a witness of what passes between you."

The lower garment worn by the women is always bound fast round them, except when they go into the water to catch lobsters, and then they take great care not to be seen by the men. Some of the ship's company, when the Endeavour lay here, happened one day to land on a small island in *Tolaga Bay*, and surprised several women at this employment; and the chaste Diana, with her nymphs, could not have discovered more confusion and distress at the sight of Actæon, than these females expressed at their approach.

* Hawkesw. III. 451.

Some of them hid themselves among the rocks, and the rest crouched down in the sea, till they had made themselves a girdle and apron of such weeds as they could find, and when they came out even with this veil, their modesty suffered much pain by the presence of male spectators^f. But when captain Cook visited Queen Charlotte's Sound in 1773, in the Resolution, accompanied by the Adventure, he found that the morals of the natives, both male and female, had not been at all mended by their intercourse with Europeans. The crews of both ships, who had not seen any women from their leaving the Cape, since which six months had elapsed, found these New-Zealand ladies very agreeable; and they had not to do with coquets: instead of behaving with the same delicacy and reserve which had marked their conduct, as well as that of the men, on the former visit, both sexes had abandoned their native principles, and the men promoted a shameful traffic, going through the ships offering their daughters and sisters promiscuously to every person's embrace; and for a spike nail, or some such valuable, would compel the women to prostitute themselves. Some of the women, it is said, submitted with reluctance to this mercenary intercourse, and but for the authority and menaces of the men would not have gratified the desires of a set of people, who could with unconcern behold their tears, and hear their lamentations. It does not appear that their married women were ever suffered to have this kind of intercourse with the sailors. The ideas of female chastity which prevail here, are quite different from ours; for here a girl may grant her favours to a plurality of lovers, without any stain on her character; but if she marries, conjugal fidelity is rigorously expected from her. The custom of painting their cheeks with ochre and oil was alone sufficient to deter

^f Parkinson, 100.

the men of any delicacy from such intimate connections; superadded to this a certain stench announced them even at a distance, and abundance of vermin not only fastened on their hair, but also crawled on their cloaths, and these they occasionally cracked between their teeth: indeed it is astonishing that even the most sordid members of a civilized society should have any other emotions raised by such objects, than those of loathing and abhorrence. However, one of these women had a tolerable set of features, and something soft and feminine in her countenance, which, but for her fashionable grease and paint, would have rendered her agreeable enough. This girl was regularly given in marriage by her parents to one on board, who had found the means of recommending himself particularly to the good opinion of these islanders, by treating them with marks of attention and regard, which even in the rudest state cement the bonds of affection. The girl maintained her plighted faith inviolate, and constantly rejected the addresses of other seamen, professing herself a married woman (*tirra tane.*) Whatever attachment the Englishman had to his Zealand wife, he never attempted to take her on board, foreseeing that it would be highly inconvenient to lodge the numerous retinue which crawled on her garments, and weighed down the hair of her head; he therefore visited her on shore, and only by day, treating her with abundance of the rotten part of his biscuit, which, though rejected by the sailors, was eagerly devoured by all the natives^r.

The instances of the brutal manner in which the New-Zeeland women are treated by the men, which have been already given, are not the only ones. A boy, about six or seven years of age, demanded a piece of broiled penguin which

^r Forster, I. 303, 510.

his mother held in her hand: as she did not immediately comply with his demand, he took up a large stone and threw it at her. The woman, incensed at this action, ran to punish him; but she had scarcely given him a single blow when her husband came forward, beat her unmercifully, and dashed her against the ground for attempting to correct her unnatural child; and similar instances of cruelty were frequently seen among them; the boys particularly have been seen to strike their mothers, whilst the father has stood by looking on, lest she should attempt to retaliate. Among all savage nations the weaker sex is ill treated, and the law of the strongest is put in force; their women are mere drudges, who prepare raiment and provide dwellings; who procure and dress the food for the whole family; for all which services they are requited with austerity and blows by their supercilious tyrants^b.

In some parts of the northern island they cultivate the earth with a good share of skill, and Mr. Banks saw some plantations in *Poverty Bay*, where the ground was as well broken down and tilled as even in the gardens of the most curious people among us. Here were sweet potatoes, cocos, or cddas, and some gourds. The sweet potatoes were planted in small hills, some ranged in rows, and others in quincunx, all laid by a line with the utmost regularity. These plantations were of different extent, from one or two acres to ten, and in the whole of *Poverty Bay* there appeared to be from one hundred and fifty to two hundred acres in cultivation, though an hundred people were never seen all the time the ship continued there. Each district was fenced in generally with reeds, which were placed so close together, that there was scarce room for a mouse to creep between^c.

^b Cook, I. 130. Forster, I. 210, 215.

^c Hawkesw. II. 313.

Though

Though they are not so cleanly as the inhabitants of *O-Tahitee*, bathing themselves but seldom, yet one cleanliness they have adopted which no other Indian nation is supposed to have done; every house, or cluster of three or four houses has a privy, so that the ground is every where very clean ^k.

When Tupia accosted the people of this country in his own language he was perfectly understood, and the similarity of the dialects spoken in all the islands, which were visited by the Endeavour, furnishes a strong argument for the inhabitants being all descended from one common stock; and, according to doctor Hawkesworth, they have one common tradition, that their ancestors, at a very remote period of time, came from another country; and what is very remarkable in that tradition is, that *Heawija* is the name by which that country is generally described^l. The discoveries since made in the Resolution do not indeed confirm that opinion, as exceptions are now found to the universality of the language, among the inhabitants of *Nova Caledonia* and the *New Hebrides*. The New-Zeelanders had no tradition among them of Abel Tasman having visited their coast near a century and a half before^m,

In *Poverty Bay* the Indians entertained the gentlemen of the ship with their war-song, in which the women joined with the most horrid distortions of countenance, rolling their eyes, thrusting out their tongues, and often heaving loud and deep sighs, all which they performed in extreme good timeⁿ. Their musical instruments consist of a trumpet, or tube of wood, about four feet long, and pretty straight: its

^k Hawkesw. II. 316.
son, 118.

^l Idem, III. 473, 474.

^m Parkin-

ⁿ Hawkesw. II. 320.

small mouth was not above two inches, and its large one not above five in diameter; it made a very uncooth kind of braying, for they always sounded the same note, though a performer on a French horn, Mr. Forster observes, might be able to bring some better music out of it. Another trumpet was made of a large whelk, mounted with wood curiously carved, and pierced at the point where the mouth was applied. An hideous bellowing was all the sound that could be produced from this instrument. A third went by the name of a flute among the ship's company; it was a hollow tube widest about the middle, where it had a large opening, as well as another at each end. This and the first trumpet were each made of two hollow semicylinders of wood exactly fitted, and moulded together, so as to form a perfect tube. The natives were frequently heard singing on shore, and sometimes they sang a song on board the ship. Their music is described as far superior in variety to that of the Society and Friendly-Islands, and if any nation in the South-Sea comes in competition with them, it is supposed to be that of Tanna. "The taste for music in the New-Zeelanders," says Mr. Forster, "and their superiority in this respect to other nations in the South-Sea, are to me stronger proofs in favour of their heart, than all the idle eloquence of philosophers in their cabinets can invalidate; they have violent passions, but it would be absurd to assert that these only lead them to inhuman excesses." And captain Cook observes of these people, that notwithstanding they are canibals they are naturally of a good disposition, and have not a little humanity^p. Some of the New-Zeelanders, inhabitants of *Queen Charlotte's Sound*, exhibited a *heiva*, or dance, on the quarter deck; they placed themselves in a row, and part-

^p Forster, I. 227, 228. Forster, II. 476, 477, 478. p Cook, II. 160.

ing with their shaggy upper garments, one of them sung some words in a rude manner, and all the rest accompanied the gestures he made, alternately extending their arms, and stamping with their feet, in a violent and almost frantic manner. The last words, which might be supposed to be the chorus, they all repeated together, and some sort of metre was easily distinguishable, but whether they were rhymes or not could not be discovered.

A strong proof of the health which these people enjoy is, the facility with which their wounds heal : one of them had a shot with a musket ball through the fleshy part of his arm, which without any application to it, soon appeared well digested, and in a fair way of being perfectly healed ; and many old men were seen who had lost their hair and teeth, yet were neither feeble, nor rendered inactive or gloomy. But the venereal disease appears to have got a footing here ; two of captain Furneaux's men were infected with it in *Queen Charlotte's Sound* in 1773. The reasons given to prove that no such taint was imparted by the crew of the *Endeavour* are, that the surgeon of that ship reported to captain Cook in 1770, when he made the coast, that no man had any symptoms of the distemper about him ; and further, the commander's caution was such as not to suffer any man to go on shore who had been under cure, and might be suspected to have still some latent remains of that infectious poison ; and never suffered any woman to come on board. Three years after, the *Resolution* and *Adventure*, in company, touched at New-Zeeland ; there was not the least reason to suppose that they carried any venereal complaint thither : they had been five months at sea, a time in which a radical cure might be presumed, unless the disease be of too

⁹ Forster, I. 221.

inveterate a nature, and none such were on board; and it is not likely that the poison should lay dormant during that long interval of time, in a set of men who had no other than salt provisions to live upon, and spirituous liquors to drink, and who were exposed to wet and cold, and all the rigours of southern climates. But however specious such reasoning may be, it is of little force against facts; had the disease been inherent in the country before the Endeavour arrived there, the crew of that ship would have, more or less, been attacked by it; and during the long continuance of the two ships here in 1773, its ravages among the seamen would have been more general. The conclusion that no infection could have been communicated by an English ship seems to be chiefly founded on the report of a surgeon; those who are best acquainted with the manner in which such reports are frequently made, and who are sensible of the private reasons which may weigh with the party to suppress and disguise facts, will not be inclined to place implicit faith in such an *ipse dixit*; and the utmost vigilance of the best-served commander will prove insufficient to restrain a rampant crew from all commerce with women whilst a ship lies in port.

It should seem that for eighty leagues along the eastern coast of *Eaeinomauwe*, that is, from Cape Turnagain to Mercury Bay, the country is under the government of a king named *Teratu*; there are in this district many subordinate chiefs, but of the nature of the constitution nothing is certainly known. About Mercury Bay the people acknowledge no king, but live in a kind of savage commonwealth, *Tavai-Peenammoo* is much less populous than the northern island; in Queen Charlotte's Sound the people seem to be

under no regular form of government, and are not so united as to form one body politic; the head of each tribe, or family, is respected, and that respect may command obedience, but no one seems to have a right or power to enforce it².

The ideas which these people entertain of the origin of the world and mankind, seem much the same as at *O-Ta-hitee*. According to Mr. Forster they acknowledge a Supreme Being, to which they add a belief of some inferior divinities, so correspondent to the opinions of the *Tabaitians*, that their system of polytheism must be of very ancient date, and seems to derive its origin from their common ancestors; but there was not a single ceremony observed by that gentleman in any part of New-Zeeland that could be supposed to have a religious tendency, neither did they appear to have any priests. Tupia is said to have had a much more deep and extensive knowledge of these subjects than any of the people here; and whenever he was disposed to instruct them, which he sometimes did in a long discourse, he was sure of a numerous audience, who listened in profound silence with great reverence and attention³. Here were no places of public worship like the *morais* in the tropical islands; but when the Endeavour was here, near a plantation of sweet potatoes was seen a small area of a square figure, surrounded with stones; in the middle of which a sharpened stake, which they use as a spade, was set up; and upon it was hung a basket of fern-roots: the natives being questioned about it said, it was an offering to the Gods, by which the owner hoped to render them propitious, and to obtain a plentiful crop⁴.

Their manner of burying their dead could not be certainly known. In the northern parts the gentlemen who enquired

² Forster, I. 230.

³ Hawkesw. III. 472.

⁴ *Ib.*

concerning

concerning this matter were informed, that they buried them in the ground; and in the southern, that they threw them into the sea; the only process which they use being to tie a stone to the body to cause it to sink^v. But they affected to conceal every thing relating to their dead with a kind of mysterious secrecy. "But whatever may be the sepulchre," says captain Cook, "the living are themselves the monuments, for we saw scarcely a single person of either sex whose body was not marked by the scars of wounds which they had inflicted on themselves as a testimony of their regard for the loss of a relation or friend. Some of these wounds we saw in a state so recent that the blood was scarcely stanch'd, which shews that death had been among them while we were upon the coast, and makes it more extraordinary that no funeral ceremony should have fallen under our notice. Some of the scars were very large and deep, and in many instances had greatly disfigured the face^w." In Mercury Bay was seen a woman, who after their manner was mourning for the death of a relation. She sat upon the ground, among a number of people who were assembled, who, one only excepted, seem'd not at all to regard her. The tears constantly trickled down her cheeks, and she repeated in a low, but very mournful voice, words which even Tupia did not understand. At the end of every sentence she cut her arms, her face, or her breast, with a shell that she held in her hand, so that she was almost covered with blood, and was indeed one of the most affecting spectacles that can be conceived. The cuts, however, says captain Cook, did not appear to be so deep as are sometimes made upon similar occasions, if we may judge by the scars which were visible upon the arms, thighs, breasts, and cheeks of many of them, and which were said to be the remains of wounds which they had inflicted on themselves as testimo-

^v Hawkesw. II. 386.^w Hawkesw. III. 473.

nies of their affliction and sorrow^x. And as soon as they were on shore from the Endeavour at Queen Charlotte's Sound, five or six of the women sat down upon the ground together, and began to cut their legs, arms, and faces, with shells, and sharp pieces of talc, or jasper, in a terrible manner. These acts of cruelty inflicted on themselves were expressions of grief for their husbands who had been lately killed by the enemy. But while they were performing this horrid ceremony, the men sat about repairing the huts with the utmost negligence and unconcern^y. And in one family particularly there was a woman who had her arms, legs and thighs, frightfully cut in several places, which wounds were said to have been inflicted by herself, in token of her grief for the loss of her husband, who had been lately killed and eaten by their enemies.

S E C T. V.

Of the Reception given to the English at New-Zeeland, when they visited these Islands in the ENDEAVOUR Bark, RESOLUTION and ADVENTURE Sloops, in 1770, 1773, and 1774. Of PEATERREE, a friendly Chief on the southern Island; of the Trade carried on with the Natives; Attempts made to plant the Country with Roots, and other edible Vegetables, and to stock it with a breed of Animals. The shocking Catastrophe which befel the Boat's Crew belonging to the ADVENTURE. Of a Visit made this Country by two French Ships, in January 1772, and the Massacre of the Commander, and twenty-eight of his Men, by the Natives.

THESSE people being inured to war, and by habit considering every stranger as an enemy, were always disposed to attack their visitors when they were not intimi-

^x Hawkesw. II. 338.

^y Hawkesw. II. 339.

dated by their manifest superiority. At first they had no notion of any superiority but numbers; and when this was on their side, they considered all the expressions of kindness addressed to them as the artifices of fear and cunning, to circumvent the stronger, and preserve the weaker part. But when they were once convinced of their power, after having provoked them to the use of their fire-arms, though loaded only with small shot; and of their clemency, by their forbearing to make use of weapons so dreadful except in their defence, they became at once friendly and even affectionate, placing in their new friends the most unbounded confidence, and doing every thing which could incite in them the like*. Captain Cook having one day landed in a very distant part of the Bay of Islands, the people immediately fled, except one old man, who accompanied him and his party wherever they went, and seemed much pleased with the little presents they made him. They came at last to a little fort, built upon a small rock, which at high water was surrounded by the sea, and accessible only by a ladder. They perceived that he eyed them with a kind of restless solicitude as they approached it, and upon their expressing a desire to enter it, he told them that his wife was there. He saw that their curiosity was not diminished by this intelligence, and after some hesitation he said, if they would promise to offer no indecency, he would accompany them. Their promise was readily given, and he immediately led the way. The ladder consisted of steps fastened to a pole, but they found the ascent both difficult and dangerous. When they entered they found three women, who, the moment they saw them, burst into tears of terror and surprize. Some kind words, and a few presents, soon removed their apprehensions, and put them into good-humour. The

* Hawksfw. III. 450.

captain then examined the house of their old friend, and by his interest two others, which were all that the fortification contained, and having distributed a few presents, they parted with mutual satisfaction^a. But it is certain that no commander was ever more attentive to conciliate the esteem and friendship of Indians than captain Cook, and the almost universal success that crowned his endeavours, proves that these untutored savages, particularly the fierce New-Zeelanders, may be won by a well-exercised mildness and moderation. In this Bay of Islands some of the seamen thought fit to break into a plantation, and dig up some potatoes. For this offence captain Cook ordered each of them to be punished with twelve lashes, after which two of them were discharged; but the third insisting that it was no crime in an Englishman to plunder an Indian plantation, though it was a crime in an Indian to defraud an Englishman of a nail, he ordered him back into his confinement, from which he would not release him till he had received six lashes more^b.

Among the natives who shewed a particular attachment to captain Cook and his party in Queen Charlotte's Sound, when the Resolution lay there, was one whose name was *Peaterree*. When the ship was about to leave this part of the world, the captain dressed this New-Zeelander in a shirt, stockings, breeches, and coat, as a mark of friendship for his assiduity in supplying them with fish. *Peaterree* seemed highly delighted with his new dress, and valued himself greatly on being so much in favour. "It is not to be doubted," says Mr. Forster, "that he felt the superiority of our arts, manufactures, and mode of living, in some degree, especially as he was always remarkably in good spirits when among us, but, nevertheless, he did not once express a desire

^a Hawkesw. II. 367.

^b Idem 363.

of going with us ; and when we proposed it to him, he declined it, preferring the wretched precarious life of his countrymen to all the advantages of which he saw us possessed. The force of habit no where appears more strongly than in such instances where it seems of itself alone sufficient to counterbalance the comforts of a civilized life ^c. In Poverty Bay the natives were so eager to traffic that they sold every thing they had, even to the cloaths from their back, and the paddles from their canoes. They set no value upon nails, but were much pleased at being presented with linen. The articles which they most prized being *O-Tahitian* cloth and glass bottles ^d. Doctor Solander purchased here a boy's top, shaped exactly like those which children play with in England ; and the natives made signs, that to make it spin it was to be whipped ^e.

The trade carried on at *Mercury Bay*, was chiefly from the sides of the ship in their canoes, and the Indians frequently received the commodity which they had agreed to take in exchange for that which they were in possession of, and then with insulting jeers, rowed off without fulfilling their part of the barter. Whilst captain Cook was on board, these provocations were no otherwise punished, than by firing a shot over their heads to intimidate them ; and once or twice when that proved ineffectual, a musket with small shot was discharged at the offender : the shot perforated the skin, without doing him any lasting injury ; but one poor fellow, more daring than the rest, on whom these instances of power had no effect, continued practising the like frauds in the most daring manner ; captain Cook was then on shore, and the second lieutenant of the *Endeavour* then commanded, who did not possess the same spirit of moderation ; he

^c Forster, II. 476.

^d Hawkesw. II. 299, 317.

^e Idem 319.
discharged

discharged his musket, loaded with ball, at the unhappy delinquent, and shot him dead on the spot.

During the first visit to Queen Charlotte's Sound, the people there were most gratified by receiving paper, but after they found that it was spoiled by being wet, their affection for it ceased. Glass bottles, which they called *tow-haw*, were particularly valued; and whenever they saw any of them, they always pointed to them, and then moved the hand to their breast, pronouncing the word *mokh*, by which they used to express their desire of possessing any thing. Perhaps this value was caused, by their having nothing in which to keep liquors, a small kind of cabibash or gourd excepted, which grows only in the northern island, and is extremely scarce in Queen Charlotte's Sound. Nails were much more coveted on the visit in 1773, than they had been on the former one in 1770, as they had then found out their durability, and the uses to which they might be applied.

Upon the top of a hill in Queen Charlotte's Sound, captain Cook erected a kind of pyramid with some loose stones which he found there, and left in it some musket balls, small shot, beads, and other things, which the company happened to have about them, and which were likely to stand the test of time, and not being of Indian workmanship, would convince any European that should come there, and remove the stones, that other natives of Europe had been there before him. Two posts were likewise erected in this sound by captain Cook in 1770, on which were inscribed the ship's name, the date of the year, and the month. The natives readily consented to this, and promised *Tupia* that they never would pull them down; the captain then took
 formal

formal possession of this and the adjacent country, in the name and for the use of his majesty king George the Third ^f. Among the presents which captain Cook distributed in 1773, were a number of brass medals gilt, about an inch and three quarters in diameter, which had been struck on purpose to be left as a memorial of this voyage at the places which might be visited: on one side was the head of his present majesty, with the inscription, GEORGE III. KING OF GREAT BRITAIN, FRANCE, AND IRELAND, &c. On the reverse, the representation of two men of war, with the names RESOLUTION and ADVENTURE over them; and the exergue, SAILED FROM ENGLAND MARCH MDCCLXXII. Some of these medals were distributed in Dusky Bay, Queen Charlotte's Sound, and the districts in its neighbourhood ^g.

Much pains were taken not only to leave useful European roots in this country, but likewise to stock its wilds with animals, which in time might become beneficial to the natives, and to future generations of navigators. In Dusky Bay, captain Cook and Mr. Forster left five tame geese, in hopes that they would breed and run wild; a spot was chosen unfrequented by any inhabitants, and which afforded plenty of proper food for these birds, in consequence of which transaction it received the name of *Goose Cove*, and it is most probable that this act of beneficence will be effectual to stock the country in a course of time with a breed of these fowls ^h. When the various occupations which were pursued whilst they were on shore were at an end, a small part of the ship's company, in the course of a few days, cleared away the wood from a space of more than half an

^f Hawkesw. II. 402.

^g Forster, I. 229.

^h Idem 176, 177.

acre, which fifty New Zealanders, with their tools of stone, could not have performed in two months: this spot they sowed with a quantity of European garden seeds of the best kinds; though but little permanent advantage can be expected to be derived to the natives by this act of kindness, as the shoots of the surrounding weeds must soon choak and destroy the plants so raised; and in a few years this cultivated spot will be no longer discernable, but will return to its original chaotic state^l. Captain Furneaux, in the Adventure, who lay in Queen Charlotte's Sound two months, caused several spots of ground on the top of a rock to be dug, and a variety of garden seeds to be sown, which succeeded so well, that before he sailed, they frequently had fallads and many dishes of European greens at table, notwithstanding the season of winter was then far advanced, being the latter end of May. These gardens, if attended to by the natives, may prove extremely beneficial; for six months after, when the Resolution again visited this sound in November 1773, every thing in the gardens, except the potatoés, had remained unmolested by the natives, and was in a very thriving state; a proof that the winter must have been very mild. The potatoes had most of them been dug up, some however then remained, and were growing. Here were raddishes and turnips shot into seed, cabbages and carrots very fine, and abundance of onions and parsley in good order: the peas and beans were almost entirely lost, and seemed to have been destroyed by the rats^k. One of the natives was shewn this plantation, and the man seemed so well pleased, that he began to hoe the earth up about the plants^l. Whilst he remained here, captain Cook transplanted the young plants in four or five different parts of this sound; he chiefly endeavoured to raise such vegetables

^l Forster I. 179.^k Forster I. 493. Cook I. 236.^l Cook I. 123.

as have useful and nutritive roots, and among them particularly potatoes; he likewise sowed corn of several sorts, beans, kidney-beans and peas, and devoted the latter part of his stay in a great measure to these occupations^m. He put on shore here the only ewe and ram remaining of these which he brought from the Cape, with an intent to leave them in this country, but the next day they were both found dead, occasioned most probably by eating some poisonous plant: thus the endeavour to stock this country with a breed of sheep, which had been pursued with so much care and trouble, was overturned in a moment. Two sows and a boar, with three cocks and two hens, were turned out into the deepest recess of the woods, in a marshy spot, not likely to be visited by the inhabitants; so that there is a probability, that the Southern Isle will, in time, be stocked with hogs and fowlsⁿ. Two goats had been left here, but whether they had escaped the improvident greediness of the natives, is quite uncertain, for they gave very different accounts of them, and they were never seen by any of the people of the ship afterwards. It is indeed quite impossible to possess these savages with any notion of foregoing a present gratification, for the sake of a great and permanent advantage in future. Their lives are spent in wandering depredations, and it is not to be supposed that a quadruped will be tolerated among them, when their own species is almost extirpated by their butcheries: but notwithstanding this spirit inherent in the natives, which tended so fatally to counteract every attempt to serve them, yet various were the methods taken to do the most essential service to this country. A chief who came on board the ship from the northern island, was presented with some garden seeds, two young pigs of each sex, and three pair of fowls, and great

^m Forster I. 217.

ⁿ Forster I. 307.

pains were taken to convince him of the value of the presents, and that it was his interest to keep the hogs and fowls for breeding, and to plant the seeds, the meaning of which he seemed to comprehend.

The ferocity of these people is very evident from the instances which have been already given, but more melancholy ones remain to fix that character upon them. The two ships commanded by the captains Cook and Furneaux, having parted company off the eastern coast of *Eabeindwob*, and not happening to join again, captain Furneaux, some time after the departure of captain Cook, arrived in Queen Charlotte's Sound, in December 1773. While he lay here, the cutter, in which were two midshipmen and eight seamen, was sent up a creek to procure wood and water, which not returning, occasioned some anxiety about their safety. The next day an officer was sent in another boat in search of them. The first intimations which they received of the fate of their comrades, was the sight of the rullock-parts of the cutter, and some shoes, one of which was known to have belonged to a midshipman who was of the party; presently a piece of meat was found, which was at first supposed to be some of the salted meat belonging to the cutter's crew, but on a closer examination it was found to be fresh. Several baskets lay in the beach tied up, which they eagerly cut open, and found them to contain roasted flesh and fern roots, which served them for bread: on further search many shoes were found, and a hand, which was immediately known to belong to a fore-castle-man, it being marked with the initial letters of his name by an *O-Tahitian* taww instrument. Proceeding onward to the next bay, a great many people appeared on the beach, and three or four canoes; on the

approach of the boat, they retreated to a small island; on the beach were two bundles of celery which had been gathered for loading the cutter; a broken oar was stuck upright in the ground, to which the natives had tied their canoes. They searched in vain in every part of the beach for the cutter, but a shocking spectacle suddenly opened upon them. Here were scattered, the heads, hearts, and lungs, of several of the unhappy men who had been murdered by the natives, and dogs were seen devouring their entrails. Horror chilled the sailors blood at the sight, which urged them to a fierce desire of revenge. They fired and killed several of the savages, and destroyed all the canoes that lay on the beach. The New Zealanders have been totally inimical to all the Europeans that have visited them; Abel Janfen Tafman lost four of his men in an anchoring place, which he named *Murderer's Bay*. The natives took one of the dead bodies into the canoe with them, and therefore had certainly tasted the flesh of an European so early as 1642°. And in 1772, M. Dufresne Marion, having two French sloops under his command, put into the *Bay of Islands* in great distress, where himself, together with twenty-eight of his crew, were surprized and murdered. M. Crozat, who commanded the other sloop named the *Macassar*, under M. Marion, very narrowly escaped the same fate, and when with great intrepidity he had made good his retreat to the ships, the natives attacked them in more than an hundred large canoes full of men, in which rencounter they severely felt the effects of European artillery. At last M. Crozat, seeing it impossible to supply the ships with masts, unless he could drive the natives from this neighbourhood, went to attack their *hippah*, which was one of the greatest and strongest. He put the carpenters in the front to cut down

° Dalrymple II. 72.

the
nur
scri
ing
pen
fort
spea
men
the
rage
fend
feir
fued
dolla
aliv
seize
tain,
of th
rage
onet
arms
of dr
prov
com
tion,
voya
beha
whol
of tre
to be
perha
passio

the pallifadoes, behind which the natives stood in great numbers on the fighting stages which have been already described. His people drove them from these stages, by keeping up a regular fire which did some execution; the carpenters then advanced, and presently cut a breach in the fortification. A chief instantly stepped into it with a long spear in his hand. He was shot dead by M. Crozat's marksmen, and presently another occupied his place, stepping on the dead body. He likewise fell a victim to his intrepid courage, and in the same manner eight chiefs successively defended, and bravely fell on this post of honour. The rest seeing their leaders dead, took to flight, and the French pursued and killed numbers of them. M. Crozat offered fifty dollars to any person who should take a New Zeelander alive, but this was absolutely impracticable. A soldier seized an old man, and began to drag him towards his captain, but the savage being unarmed, bit into the fleshy part of the Frenchman's hand, the intense pain of which so enraged him, that he ran his prisoner through with a bayonet. In this hippah were found great quantities of dresses, arms, tools, and raw flax, together with a prodigious store of dried fish and roots, which seemed to be intended for winter provisions. After accomplishing this enterprize, M. Crozat completed the repairs of his ships without further interruption, and after a stay of sixty-four days, proceeded on his voyage ^p. How far these bloody deeds were excited by the behaviour of the Europeans cannot be determined; the whole tenor of these Indian's conduct seems to acquit them of treachery and cruel malevolence; it is therefore greatly to be suspected, that they took umbrage at some affront, perhaps, unwittingly committed, and revenged it with that passionate fury which hurries on the savage into excesses.

^p Forster II. 464.

C H A P. X.

Of NEW HOLLAND.

S E C T. I.

Description of the Country; its Productions. Of the Inhabitants, and their Manner of Living.

THE general name of *New-Holland* has been given to what is at length found to be a prodigious island, reaching from 10 deg. to 44 deg. south, between 110 deg. and 154 deg. east from London. It received its name from having been chiefly explored by Dutch navigators. The land first discovered in these parts was called *Eeendragt* (*Concord*) *Land*, from the name of the ship on board which the discovery was made in 1616; 24 deg. and 25 deg. south. In 1618 another part of this coast, nearly in 15 deg. south, was discovered by Zeachen, who gave it the name of *Arnheim* and *Diemen*, though a different part from what afterwards received the name of *Diemen's Land* from Tasman, which is the southern extremity, in latitude 43 deg. In 1619 *Jan Van Edels* gave his name to a southern part of *New-Holland*. Another part, situated between 30 and 33 deg. received the name of *Leuwen*. *Peter Van Nultz* gave his name in 1627 to a coast which communicates to *Leuwen's Land* towards the westward; and a part of the western coast, near the tropic of Capricorn, bore the name of *De Witts*. In 1628 *Peter Carpenter*, a Dutchman, discovered the great gulph of *Carpentaria*,

Carpentaria, between 10 and 20 deg. south. In 1687 *Dampier*, an Englishman, sailed from Timor, and coasted the western parts of New-Holland. In 1699 he left England, with a design to explore this country, as the Dutch suppressed whatever discoveries had been made by them. He sailed along the western coast of it, from 28 to 15 deg. he saw the land of *Eendracht* and of *De Witt*; he then returned to Timor, from whence he went out again, examined the isles of *Papua*, coasted *New-Guinea*, discovered the passage that bears his name, called a great island which forms this passage, or strait, on the east-side, *New-Britain*, and sailed back to Timor along *New-Guinea*. This is the same *Dampier* who, between 1683 and 1691, sailed round the world by changing his ships. This immense island, which many late writers have styled a continent from its extent, which is more than equal to the habitable parts of the continent of Europe, has been explored on the eastern coast with great perseverance and peril by captain *Cook*, in the *Endeavour* bark 1770, to which he gave the name of *New South-Wales*. Captain *Furneaux*, in the *Adventure*, attempted to discover the connection which *Van Diemen's Land* bears to New-Holland, but the tempestuous weather which he had to conflict with baffled all his attempts, and he was forced (not possessing the same ardour as his leader) to leave that point in the same indeterminate state as *Tasman* had before transmitted it. As this coast was explored to a very great extent, without much time being spent on any part of the country, or any friendly intercourse being established with the inhabitants, we shall follow the ship in its progress along the eastern coast, after describing the country and its inhabitants as fully as the lights which are thrown upon them will enable us.

This country is not mountainous, but chiefly consists of valleys and plains, rather barren than fruitful. The face of the country is much the best to the southward, the trees being taller, and the herbage richer, but no underwood was seen any where. The whole eastern coast is well watered by brooks and springs, but there are no great rivers. There are but two sorts of timber-trees, the gum-tree, and a kind of pine. Here is the palm-tree of three sorts. Though this country affords very few esculent plants, yet it abounds with such as gratify the curiosity of the naturalist. Here is an animal resembling a pole-cat, which the natives call *quoll*; the back is brown, spotted with white, and the belly unmixed white. Here are many kinds of bats; also gulls, shaggs, soland geese, or gannets, of two sorts, boobies, noddies, curlious, ducks, pelicans of an enormous size, among the water-fowl; crows, parrots, paroquets, cockatoos, and other birds of the same kind of exquisite beauty, pigeons, doves, quails, bustards, herons, cranes, hawkes, and eagles, among the land-birds. Here are serpents, some of which are venomous, others harmless, scorpions, centipeds, and lizards. The most remarkable insect found in this country is the ant, of which there are several sorts. One is green, and builds its nest upon trees: these wonderful insects form their nests by bending down several leaves, each of which is as broad as a man's hand, and gluing the points of them together so as to form a purse. The viscus used for this purpose is an animal juice which nature has enabled them to elaborate. Thousands of these busy insects were seen uniting all their strength to hold the leaves in this position, while other busy multitudes were employed within, in applying the gluten that was to prevent their returning back. "To satisfy ourselves," says captain Cook, "that the leaves were bent and held down by the effort of these diminutive

nitive artificers, we disturbed them in their work, and as soon as they were driven from their station: the leaves on which they were employed sprung up with a force much greater than we could have thought them able to conquer by any combination of their strength. But though we gratified our curiosity at their expence, the injury did not go unrevenge'd, for thousands immediately threw themselves upon us, and gave us intolerable pain with their stings, especially those which took possession of our necks and our hair, from whence they were not easily driven. The sting was scarcely less painful than that of a bee; but except it was repeated, the pain did not last more than a minute⁹." Another kind burrows in the root of a plant which grows on the bark of trees in the manner of mistletoe. This root is commonly as big as a large turnip; when cut it appears intersected by innumerable winding passages, all filled with these animals, but notwithstanding, the vegetation of the plant suffers no injury. The insects are very small, not more than half as big as the common red ant in England. Their stings give no pain, but by running about on the hands, and such parts of the body where they light, produce a titulation more intolerable than pain, if not excruciating. There is still another sort, possessing no power of tormenting; they resemble the white ants of the East-Indies. These construct nests on the branches of trees three or four times as big as a man's head: the materials of these houses seem to be formed of small parts of vegetables kneaded together with a glutinous matter, with which nature has probably furnished them. Upon breaking the outside crust of this dwelling, innumerable cells, swarming with inhabitants, appear in a great variety of winding directions, all communicating with each other, and with several apertures that lead to other nests

⁹ Hawkesworth III. 627.

upon the same tree. They have also another house built upon the ground, generally at the root of a tree; it is formed like an irregularly sided cone, and sometimes is more than six feet high, and nearly as much in diameter. The outside of these is of well-tempered clay, about two inches thick, and within are the cells, which have no opening outward. Between these two dwellings, one of which is their summer, and the other their winter residence, there is a communication by a large avenue, or covered way, leading to the ground, and by a subterranean passage. The structures on the ground are proof against any wet that can fall, which those on the tree are not, from the nature and thinness of their crust or wall. The fish here are of kinds unknown to Europe, except the mullet, and some of the shell-fish. Upon the shoals and reef are great quantities of the finest green turtle in the world, and oysters of various kinds, particularly the rock oyster and the pearl oyster. In the rivers and salt creeks are alligators⁵.

This extensive country appears to be very thinly inhabited; the natives never appeared in larger companies than thirty together; the inland parts are, most probably, quite uninhabited, as no part of the coast which was visited had any appearance of cultivation, and the miserable natives drew their subsistence from the sea. The only tribe with which any intercourse was established, consisted of twenty-one persons, twelve men, seven women, a boy and a girl. The women were never seen but at a distance, for when the men crossed the river to the ship they left them behind. The men are of a middle size, and in general well-made, clean-limbed, and remarkably vigorous, active, and nimble; their countenances were not altogether without expression,

⁵ Hawkesworth III. 627.

and

and the
encru
black
and b
thick.
sex ha
whole
the no
bone,
and fi
effect
keep
they
even
neck
ther;
about
huma
the w
hang
They
of w
but v
so att
to an
more
that
that
Man
ward
the p
new
whic

and their voices are remarkably soft and effeminate. They encrust their bodies with dirt, which makes them appear as black as negroes; their hair, which naturally grows long and black, they crop short; their beards grow bushy and thick, but they keep them short by singeing them. Neither sex have any conscious sense of indecency in discovering the whole body. Here they perforate the cartilage that divides the nostrils from each other, through which they thrust a bone, which is as thick as a man's finger, and between five and six inches long; it reaches quite across the face, and so effectually stops up both the nostrils, that they are forced to keep their mouths wide open for breath, and snuffle so when they attempt to speak, that they are scarcely intelligible even to each other. Besides this nose-jewel, they have necklaces made of shells, very neatly cut and strung together; bracelets of small cord, wound two or three times about the upper part of their arm, and a string of plaited human hair about as thick as a thread of yarn, tied round the waist. Besides these, some of them had gorgets of shells hanging round the neck, so as to reach cross the breast. They paint their bodies both white and red, and draw a circle of white round each eye. They have holes in their ears, but were not seen to wear any thing in them. They were so attached to their own ornaments that they preferred them to any beads and ribbons that were offered them, though more showy, and regularly made. They received the things that were given them, but were insensible to all the signs that were made them that something was expected in return. Many of the trinkets that had been given them were afterwards found thrown negligently away in the woods, like the playthings of children that please only while they are new. The bodies of many were marked with large scars, which appeared to be the remains of wounds which they had inflicted

inflicted on themselves with some blunt instrument, and which they signified by signs to have been memorials of grief for the dead^s. There was no appearance of a town or village in the whole country; their houses are formed without art or industry; some of them were just high enough for a man to stand upright in, but not large enough for him to extend his whole length in any direction: they are built with pliable rods, about as thick as a man's finger, in the form of an oven, by sticking the two ends into the ground, and covering them with palm-leaves and broad pieces of bark; the door is nothing but a large hole at one end. Under these houses or sheds they sleep, coiled up with their heels to their head, in which position one of them will hold three or four persons: towards the northward, as the climate becomes hotter, these sheds were constructed much lighter: one side was entirely open, and none of them were more than four feet deep. These hovels were set up occasionally by a wandering hord, in any place that would furnish them for a time with subsistence, and left behind them when they removed to another spot. When they mean to continue only a night or two at one place, they sleep without any shelter except the bushes and grass, the latter of which is here near two feet high. They have a vessel to hold the water they fetch from springs, made of bark, only by tying up the two ends with a withy, which not being cut off serves for a handle. They have a small bag, about the size of a moderate cabbage-net, which the men carry upon their back by a string which passes over their heads. It generally contains a lump or two of paint and resin, some fish-hooks and lines, a shell or two, out of which their hooks are made, a few points of darts, and their usual ornaments, which is an inventory of the whole worldly treasure of the

^s Hawkesw. III. 632.

riche
made
turtl
and
a sta
abou
of a
end
the
body
and
assist
canc
burie
The
from
hair
ing,
hool
rock
thei
tant
grea
proc
fici
'Th
pre
two
shif
it,
tho
sma

richest man among them^t. Their fish-hooks are very neatly made, and some of them are extremely small. For striking turtle they have a peg of wood, which is about a foot long, and very well bearded: this fits into a socket at the end of a staff of light wood, about as thick as a man's wrist, and about seven or eight feet long. To the staff is tied one end of a loose line about three or four fathoms long, the other end of which is fastened to the peg. To strike the turtle the peg is fixed into the socket, and when it has entered his body, and is retained there by the barb, the staff flies off, and serves for a float to trace their victim in the water. It assists also to tire him, till they can overtake him with their canoes, and haul him ashore. One of these pegs was found buried in the body of a turtle, which had healed up over it. Their lines are made of the fibres of a vegetable, and are from the thickness of a half inch rope to the fineness of a hair^u. They are unacquainted with the use of nets in fishing, and can only catch fish by striking them, or with a hook and line, or groping for them in the hollows of the rocks and shoals, which are dry at half ebb. They bake their provisions by the help of hot stones, like the inhabitants of the South-Sea Islands. They produce fire with great facility, and spread it in a wonderful manner. To produce it they take two pieces of dry, soft wood; one is a stick about eight or nine inches long, the other piece is flat. The stick they shape into an obtuse point at one end, and pressing it upon the other, turn it nimbly by holding it between both their hands as we do a chocolate-mill; often shifting their hands up, and then moving them down upon it, to encrease the pressure as much as possible. By this method they get fire in less than two minutes, and from the smallest spark they encrease it with great speed and dexterity.

^t Hawkesw. III. 636.

^u Ibid.

“ We

"We have often seen," says captain Cook, "one of them run along the shore, to all appearance with nothing in his hand; who stooping down for a moment, at the distance of every fifty or one hundred yards, left fire behind him, as we could see, first by the smoke, and then by the flame among the drift wood; and other litter which was scattered along the place. We had the curiosity to examine one of these planters of fire when he set off, and we saw him wrap up a small spark in dry grass, which when he had run a little way, having been fanned by the air that his motion produced, began to blaze; he then laid it down in a place convenient for his purpose, inclosing a spark of it in another quantity of grass, and so continued his course." Their weapons are spears or lances; some have four prongs pointed with bone, and barbed. To the northward the lance is but one point; the shaft is made of cane, very straight and light, and from eight to fourteen feet long, consisting of several joints, where the pieces are let into each other, and bound together: the points of these darts are either of hard heavy wood, or bones of fish: those points that are of wood, are also sometimes armed with sharp pieces of broken shells which were stuck in, and at the junctures covered with resin. The lances which are thus barbed, are indeed dreadful weapons, as they cannot be drawn out of a wound without tearing away the flesh, or leaving the sharp ragged splinters of the bone or shell which forms the barb behind them in the wound. The canoes to the northward are not made of bark, but of the trunk of a tree hollowed probably by fire: none of these boats will carry more than four people. The only tools seen among them were, an adze wretchedly made of stone; some small pieces of the same substance in form of a wedge; a wooden mallet, and

some
for t
dispe
civil
othe
tion
The
forts
furn
amo

Acco
of
to
of
r
a

T
latic
nan
poi
coa
fou
lan
and
wh
of
bro

some shells and fragments of coral. It is difficult to account for the small number of the human species which are found dispersed over this country; whether they are thinned by civil broils, excited by the horrid appetite for devouring each other, that prevails in New Zealand, or that their population is prevented by any other causes, cannot be ascertained. Their total ignorance of every method to procure the comforts of life, both from the cultivation of the ground, and furnishing materials for cloathing, and fishing, place them among the lowest of the human species.

S E C T. II.

Account of Captain COOK's Navigation along the Eastern Coast of NEW HOLLAND, in the Endeavour Bark, in 1770, to which he gave the Name of NEW SOUTH WALES, and of their wonderful Deliverance from Shipwreck, with several Particulars respecting the Country, and the Manners and Disposition of the Indians who inhabit it.

THE most southern point of land discovered by captain Cook, he supposes to lie in 38 deg. 58 min. south latitude, and 150 deg. east longitude, to which he gave the name of Point Hicks, but he cannot determine whether this point joins to *Van Diemen's Land* or not. He made this coast on the 19th of April 1770. The canoes here were found very much to resemble the smaller sort in New Zealand. Some of the Indians made a very singular appearance; for their faces seemed to have been dusted with a white powder, and their bodies painted with white streaks of the same colour, which passing obliquely over their breasts and backs, looked not unlike the cross belts worn by

our soldiers. The same kind of streaks were also drawn round their legs and thighs like broad garters; each man held in his hand a weapon like a scymeter, about two feet and a half long. The place where the ship had anchored was abreast of a small village, consisting of about six or eight houses; and while the boat was hoisting out, they saw an old woman, followed by three children, come out of the wood; she was loaded with fire wood, and each of the children had also its little burden. When she came to the houses, three more children, younger than the others, came out to meet her. She often looked at the ship, but expressed neither fear nor surprize. In a short time she kindled a fire, and four canoes came in from fishing. The men landed, and having hauled up their boats, began to dress their dinner, to all appearance wholly unconcerned about their new acquaintance, though they were within half a mile of them. It was remarkable, that none of the people that had been seen, had the least appearance of cloathing, the old woman herself being destitute even of a fig-leaf^w. Their language is different from that of the South Sea islanders, being quite unintelligible to Tupia.

When captain Cook first landed at *Botany Bay*, so called from the great quantity of plants which the gentlemen collected there, (see the map) 34 deg. south, 152 deg. 37 min. east. Two of the natives came down, each armed with a lance about ten feet long, and a short stick which appeared to be used as a machine to assist him in throwing it. They seemed determined to defend their coast, though the party that landed were forty in number. "I could not," says captain Cook, "but admire their courage, and

Being very unwilling that hostilities should commence with such inequality of force between us, I ordered the boat to lie upon her oars. We then parlied by signs for about a quarter of an hour, and to bespeak their good-will, I threw them nails, beads, and other trifles, which they took up and seemed to be well pleased with. I then made signs that I wanted water, and by all the means that I could devise, endeavoured to convince them that we would do them no harm. They now waved to us, and I was willing to interpret it as an invitation; but upon our putting the boat in, they came again to oppose us. One appeared to be a youth about nineteen or twenty, and the other a man of middle age. As I had now no other resource, I fired a musket between them. Upon the report, the youngest dropped a bundle of lances upon the rock, but recollecting himself in an instant, he snatched them up again with great haste. A stone was then thrown at us, upon which I ordered a musket to be fired with small shot, which struck the eldest upon the legs, and he immediately ran to one of the houses, which was distant about an hundred yards. I now hoped that our contest was over, and we immediately landed: but we had scarcely left the boat, when he returned; and we then perceived that he had left the rock, only to fetch a shield or target for his defence. As soon as he came up, he threw a lance at us, and his comrade another. They fell where we stood thickest, but happily hurt nobody. A third musket with small shot was then fired at them; upon which one of them threw another lance, and both immediately ran away. If we had pursued, we might probably have taken one of them; but Mr. Banks suggesting that the lances might be poisoned, I thought it not prudent to venture into the woods. We repaired immediately to the huts, in one of which we found some children, who had hidden themselves

behind a shield and some bark : we peeped at them, but left them in their retreat, without their knowing that they had been discovered ; and we threw into the house when we went away, some beads, ribbons, pieces of cloth, and other presents, which we hoped would procure us the good-will of the inhabitants when they should return : but the lances we found lying about, we took away with us, to the number of about fifty. They were from six to fifteen feet long, and all of them had four prongs in the manner of a fish-gig, each of which was pointed with fish bone, and very sharp. We observed that they were smeared with a viscous substance of a green colour, which favoured the opinion of their being poisoned, though we afterwards discovered that it was a mistake. They appeared by the sea-weed that was found sticking to them, to have been used in striking fish. Upon examining the canoes that lay upon the beach, we found them to be the worst we had ever seen. They were between twelve and fourteen feet long, and made of the bark of a tree in one piece, which was drawn together, and tied up at one end, the middle being kept open by sticks, which were placed across them from gunwale to gunwale as thwarts*. But this boldness of the natives was soon succeeded by an universal terror, created by the experience which they had had of the effect of fire-arms, not only by the small shot which had been discharged at the two champions, but likewise by the number of birds which they had seen killed by means of guns. Here was seen a tree, the fruit of which, in colour and shape, resembled a cherry. There are but two kinds of timber-wood here, both of which are as large, or larger, than the English oak, and one of them has not a very different appearance. This is the

* Hawkesw. III. 493, 494.

same that yields the reddish gum like *sanguis draconis*, and the wood is heavy, hard, and dark-coloured, like *lignum vitæ*. The other grows tall and straight, something like the pine; and the wood of this, which has some resemblance to the live oak of America, is also hard and heavy. There are a few shrubs, and several kinds of the palm; mangroves also grow in great plenty near the head of the bay. The country in general, as far as it was observed, is level, low, and woody. The woods abound with birds of exquisite beauty, particularly of the parrot kind: here are also crows, exactly the same as those in England. About the head of the harbour, where there are large flats of sand and mud, there is great plenty of water-fowl, most of which are species entirely unknown. One of the most remarkable was black and white, much larger than a swan, and in shape somewhat resembling a pelican. On these banks of sand and mud there are great quantities of cyfers, mussels, cockles, and other shell-fish, which seem to be the principal subsistence of the inhabitants, who go into shoal water with their little canoes, and pick them out with their hands. They were not observed to eat any of them raw, nor do they always go on shore to dress them, for they have frequently fires in their canoes for that purpose. They do not, however, subsist wholly upon this food, for they catch a variety of other fish, some of which they strike with gigs, and some they take with hook and line. All the inhabitants were stark naked; they did not appear to be numerous, or to live in societies, but, like other animals, were scattered about along the coast, and in the woods. Of their manner of life little is known, as no connection was formed with them, for they never would come near enough for a parley; nor did they touch a single article of all that was left at their huts, and the places they frequented, on purpose for them to take

away. At the sight of these Indians, Tupia, with an air of superiority and compassion, shook his head, and said that they were *taata enos*, "poor wretches." A midshipman, who had straggled alone into the country, saw an old man and woman, and some little children; they were both grey-headed with age; the hair on the man's head was bushy, and his beard long and rough; the woman's hair was cropped short, and both were stark naked. More to the northward is HERVEY'S BAY, in which was found a true mangrove, such as grows in the West-Indies, and the first of the kind met with in these seas. In the branches of this mangrove were many nests of a remarkable kind of ant, as green as grass. When the branches were disturbed, they came out in great numbers, and punished the offender by a much sharper bite than the same kind of animal is elsewhere known to give. Upon these mangroves were also seen small green caterpillars in great numbers: their foreheads were thick set with hairs, and they were ranged upon the leaves side by side like a file of soldiers, to the number of twenty or thirty together. On touching them, the hair on their bodies was found to have the quality of a nettle, and gave a much more acute, though a less durable pain. More northwardly was found a species of the bustard, as large as a turkey, one of which weighed seventeen pounds and an half. It was generally agreed, by the gentlemen who ate of it, to be the best bird they had tasted since they left England, and in honour of it they called the inlet *Bustard Bay*. It lies in latitude 24 deg. 4 min. 151 deg. 42 min. east. Here are oysters in great numbers, and of various kinds; among others the hammer-oyster, and abundance of small pearl oysters. And captain Cook says, "that if in deeper water there is equal plenty of

such oysters at their full growth, a pearl-fishery might be established here to very great advantage^z."

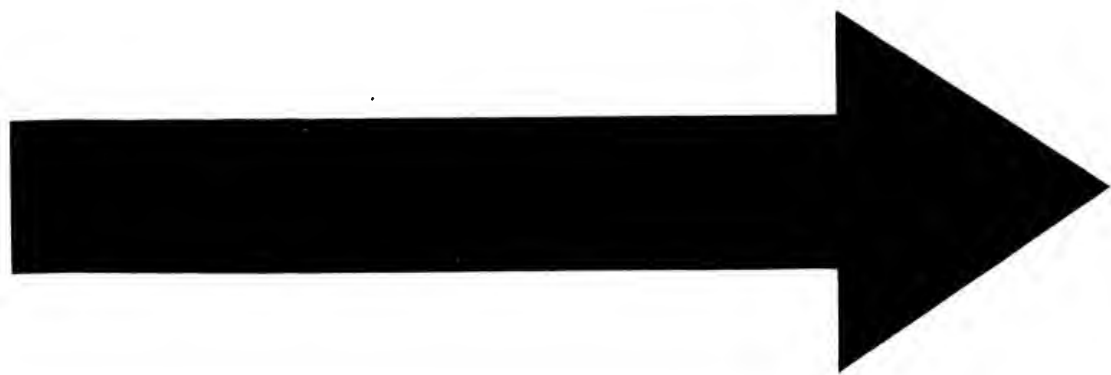
Thirfly Sound, 22 deg. 10 min. south; 150 deg. 18 min. east. Upon the branches of gum-trees here were found ants nests, made of clay, as big as a bushel, something like those described in Sir Hans Sloan's *Natural History of Jamaica*, Vol. II. page 221, tab. 258, but not so smooth. The ants which inhabited these nests were small, and their bodies white. On another species of the tree was found a small black ant, which perforated all the twigs, and having worked out the pith, occupied the pipe which had contained it; yet the parts in which this insect had thus formed a lodgment, and in which they swarmed in amazing numbers, bore leaves and flowers, and appeared to be in as flourishing a state as those that were found. Here were also such a swarm of butterflies, that for the space of three or four acres the air was so crowded with them, that millions were to be seen in every direction; at the same time that every branch and twig was covered with others that were not upon the wing. Here was also found a small fish of a singular kind; it was about the size of a minnow, and had two very strong breast-fins. It was found in places quite dry, but did not seem to become languid by the want of water, for when it was approached it leaped away, by the help of the breast-fins, as nimbly as a frog. And when it was found in the water, it frequently leaped out, and pursued its way upon dry ground^a. From the great difference in the needle when brought on shore, and from other observations which were made, captain Cook thinks that there is iron ore in the hills. Along the coast of *New South-Wales*, the sea in all parts conceals shoals, that suddenly project from the

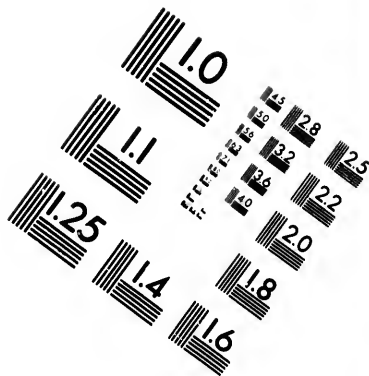
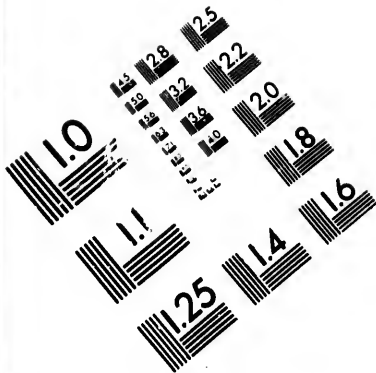
^z Hawkesw. III. 520.

^a Idem, 529, 530.

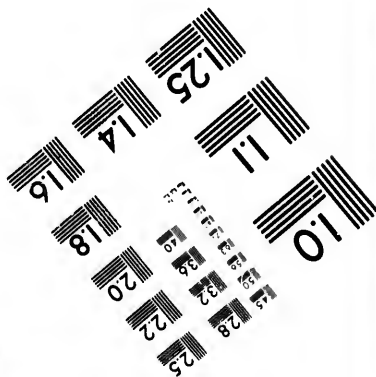
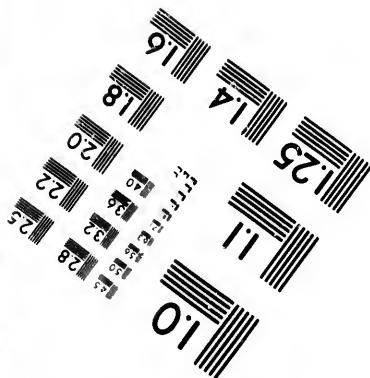
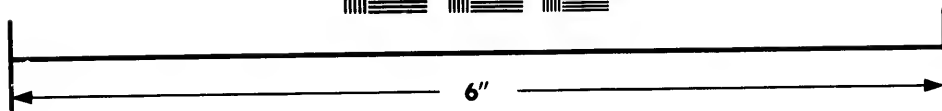
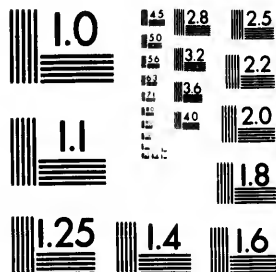
shore, and rocks that rise abruptly like a pyramid from the bottom, for an extent of twenty-two degrees of latitude, more than thirteen hundred miles. Off *Cape Tribulation*, which lies 16 deg. 6 min. south latitude; 146 deg. 39 min. east longitude, our intrepid, and hitherto prosperous adventurers, very nearly escaped the miseries of shipwreck. On the 10th of June, 1770, at eleven o'clock at night, the ship suddenly struck against a coral rock, and became immovable, except by the heaving of the surge, which beat her against the crags of the rock upon which she lay, and caused so violent a concussion that it was with the utmost difficulty any one on board could stand on his legs. At the dawn of day land appeared at eight leagues distance, without any island in the intermediate space, upon which they might be set on shore by the boats, and afterwards proceed to the main, if the ship should go to pieces; the wind, however, died away, till it became a dead calm, by which the ship escaped instant and inevitable destruction. At eleven in the forenoon it was high water, but so much short was the day-tide of that in the night, that notwithstanding she had been lightened near fifty ton, she did not float by a foot and a half. Thus disappointed in their expectations, they proceeded to lighten her still more, by throwing overboard every thing that could any ways be spared. The water now began to rush in so fast, that two pumps could scarcely keep her free. At five in the afternoon the tide began again to rise, and with it the leak increased so much, that two more pumps were manned, but only one would work; three of the pumps, however, were kept going, and at nine o'clock the ship righted; but by this time the leak had gained so considerably, that it was imagined she must go to the bottom as soon as she ceased to be supported by the rock. So that the floating of the ship was anticipated, not as an earnest
of

of deliverance, but as an event that would probably precipitate the destruction of all on board. The boats were not capable of carrying all on shore, and when the dreadful crisis of the ship's foundering should arrive, all command and subordination would be at an end; a contest for preference was then likely to ensue, that would encrease the horrors even of shipwreck, and terminate, most probably, in the destruction of every soul by the hands of each other; but if any should survive the fate of the ship, a fate yet more melancholy awaited them: without any lasting or effectual defence against the natives, in a country where even nets and fire-arms would scarcely furnish the means of subsistence, there they would be condemned to languish out the remainder of life in a desolate wilderness, without the possession, or even hope, of any domestic comfort, and cut off from all commerce with mankind, except the native savages who prowled the desert, and who are, perhaps, some of the most rude and uncivilized upon the earth. To those only who have waited in a state of such suspense, death has approached in all his wildest terrors. Every one saw his own sensations pictured in the countenances of his companions. About twenty minutes after ten o'clock the ship floated, and was heaved into deep water. It was some comfort to find that she did not now admit more water than she had done upon the rock; and though, by the gaining of the leak upon the pumps, there was no less than three feet nine inches water in the hold, yet the men did not relinquish their labour, but held the water as it were at bay: but having now endured excessive fatigue of body, and agitation of mind, for more than twenty-four hours, and having but little hope of succeeding at last, they began to flag. None of them could work at the pumps more than five or six minutes together, and then being totally exhausted, they threw themselves





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

15
16
18
20
22
25
28
32
36
40

10
11
12
13
14
15

down upon the deck, though a stream of water was running over it from the pumps; between three or four inches deep. When those who succeeded them had worked their spell, and were exhausted in their turn, they threw themselves down in the same manner, and the others starting up again renewed their labour. At eleven o'clock a breeze from the sea springing up, the ship was got under sail, and stood for the land. The exact situation of the leak could not be discovered, and therefore it was impossible to stop it within, and it was as impossible to continue that degree of labour by which the pumps had been made to gain upon the leak. In this situation a happy expedient was adopted; it is called fothering the ship; it was done by taking a large studding sail, on which a quantity of oakham and wool, chopped small, and mixed together, was stitched down in handfuls as lightly as possible; and over this the dung of sheep, and other filth was spread; when the sail was thus prepared, it was hauled under the ship's bottom by ropes, which kept it extended; and when it came under the leak, the suction which carried in the water, carried in with it the oakham and wool from the surface of the sail, which in other parts the water was not sufficiently agitated to wash off. This application succeeded so happily, that one pump was able to reduce the water from the leak: and so susceptible are mankind of sudden joy when ever so partially relieved from imminent danger, that scarcely greater transport could have been felt, if they had been arrived in port, than this relief occasioned. At six in the evening the ship was brought to an anchor for the night, in seventeen fathom water, at the distance of seven leagues from the shore, and one from the ledge of rocks upon which she had struck. The next evening she came to an anchor within two miles of the shore, no harbour having been discovered. The day following was more propitious,

propitious, a harbour was discovered about two leagues to leeward, most excellently adapted to the purpose for which it was wanted; and what was no less fortunate than remarkable, in the whole course of the voyage no place had been seen which would have afforded the same relief to the ship in the situation she then was. Three whole days intervened before a favourable wind arose to carry them into their desired haven, in which time they found leisure and inclination to reflect, that there was nothing but a lock of wool between them and destruction. It is remarkable, that the sea-breezes blew fresh all this time, and it was calm only while the ship lay upon the rock, except once; and even the gale that at length wafted her to the shore, would certainly have beaten her to pieces, if it had blown whilst she had been so entangled. At length these buffeted heroes sat their impatient feet on land, after having given the greatest possible proof of a manly, inflexible firmness; for, says captain Cook, "upon this occasion I must observe, both in justice and gratitude to the ship's company, and the gentlemen on board, that although, in the midst of our distress, every one seemed to have a just sense of his danger, yet no passionate exclamations, or frantic gestures, were to be heard or seen; every one appeared to have the most perfect possession of his mind, and every one exerted himself to the utmost, with a quiet and patient perseverance, equally distant from the tumultuous voice of terror, and the gloomy inactivity of despair." Their change of situation was now visible in every countenance, for it was most sensibly felt in every breast. They had sailed no less than three hundred and sixty leagues, without once having a man out of the chains heaving the lead, even for a minute, which perhaps never happened to any other vessel. They had been little

^b Hawkesw. III. 552.

less than three months entangled among shoals and rocks, that every moment threatened them with destruction, frequently passing the night at anchor within hearing of the surge that broke over them; sometimes driving towards it even while their anchors were out, and knowing, that if by any accident, to which an almost continual tempest exposed them, they should not hold, every soul on board must, in a few minutes, inevitably perish. On examining the leak it was found that the rocks had made their way through four planks, and even into the timbers: three more planks were much damaged, and the appearance of these breaches was very extraordinary, for there was not a splinter to be seen, but all was as smooth as if the whole had been cut away by an instrument. If the timbers had not happily been very close, it would have been impossible to have saved the ship; and yet further, their preservation depended on a circumstance still more remarkable. One of the holes, which was big enough to have sunk the vessel if eight pumps had been incessantly worked instead of three, was, in a great measure, plugged up, by a fragment of the rock, which, after having made the chasm, was broken off, and left sticking in it: so that the water, which at first had gained upon the pumps, was what came in at the interstices, between the stone and the edges of the hole that received it. Several pieces of the fothering likewise, which had made their way between the timbers, were found, in a great measure, to stop those parts of the leak which the stone had left open. But the full degree of danger, which they had escaped, was not known till the ship arrived at Batavia, and was hove down; for on examining her bottom it was found to be in a worse condition than was apprehended. The false keel was all gone to within twenty feet of the stern-post; the main keel was considerably injured in many places; a great quantity of the sheathing

sheathing was torn off, and several planks were much damaged; two of them, and the half of a third, under the main channel, near the keel, were, for the length of six feet, so worn, that they were not above the eighth part of an inch thick, and here the worms had made their way quite into the timbers: yet in this condition she had sailed many hundred leagues, where navigation is as dangerous as in any part of the world. How much misery did those on board escape, by being ignorant that so considerable a part of the bottom of the ship was thinner than the sole of a shoe, and that every life on board depended upon so slight and fragile a barrier, between them and the unfathomable ocean!

The river, which afforded them relief in this extreme emergency, was named *Endeavour River*. The bats here have a frightful appearance, being nearly black, and full as large as a partridge. Here is an animal of a new species; it is of a light mouse-colour, which in size and shape very much resembles a greyhound; it has a long tail; instead of running it leaps upon its hind legs like the *gerbua*, or *mus jaculus*. The head, neck, and shoulders, are very small, in proportion to the other parts of the body; the tail is nearly as long as the body, thick near the rump, and tapering towards the end; the fore-legs of this individual, which was a young one, were only eight inches long, and the hind-legs two-and-twenty: its progress is by successive leaps, or hops, of a great length, in an erect posture; the fore-legs are kept bent close to the breast, and seemed to be of use only for digging; the skin is covered with a short fur; the head and ears bear a slight resemblance to those of a hare. This animal is called by the natives *Kanguroo*. (See an exact representation of this animal in the plate.) Here was found

a plant, called in the West-Indies *Indian kale*, which served the ship's company for greens. Also many nests of white ants were seen, which resembled those of the East-Indies, and are the most pernicious insect in the world. A wolf was said by one of the midshipmen to have been seen, and this account was strengthened by what *Tupia* saw and described. On the shore were found cockles of so enormous a size, that one of them was more than two men could eat. Very few Indians were seen here, and those that were discovered fled immediately at the approach of their strange guests; after some time, however, an intercourse was brought about. Here were ovens dug in the ground in the same manner as at *O-Tabeisse*. The natives here are of the common stature, but their limbs are remarkably small; their skin of a dark chocolate colour, which is occasioned by their sleeping in dirt and smoak, to avoid the musquettos, which on this spot are almost insupportably tormenting. Their hair is black but not woolly; short cropped; in some lank, and in others curled. They paint some part of their bodies red; and one of those that were seen had his upper lip and his breast painted white. Their features were good, their eyes lively, their teeth even and white, their voice soft and tunable. They repeated many words after the gentlemen with great facility. The disposition to make the human form, in some respect or other, different from its natural appearance, is prevalent over the whole habitable world; thus one of the natives seen here was distinguished by an ornament of a very striking appearance; it was the bone of a bird, nearly as thick as a man's finger, and five or six inches long, which he had thrust into a hole, made in the gristle that divides the nostrils; of this many instances were seen in the New-Hebrides^d, and only one in New-Zeeland; but upon exami-

^d Hawkesw. III. 575. See page 218.

nation it was found, that among all this people, this part of the nose was perforated, to receive an ornament of the same kind*. The practice of piercing the middle cartilage of the nose, and thrusting a stone through it, is perhaps peculiar to the western islands in the South Sea, which have been visited by Europeans, and prevails there among both sexes. That the ideas of beauty, and of personal ornaments, should be very dissimilar in different parts of the world, may be easily supposed, and that some Indians should pride themselves in the extent of the lobe of their ears, and therefore stretch them till they hang upon their shoulders, is no more strange than that the tribes of American Indians should be fond of stretching out the cartilagenous part of their ears in an horizontal direction, by perforating them, and forcing them out by means of stones or wires, until they extend in some instances, so far as for their extremities to be brought to meet at the top of the head; but that any human beings should voluntarily forego the enjoyment of a free unobstructed respiration, for the sake of an imaginary ornament, would be quite incredible, if it were not a known fact, proved beyond contradiction; for the bone which is thus thrust through the cartilage of the nose, so entirely stops up both nostrils, that no air can be drawn in by their means; the lungs are therefore supplied from the mouth, which for that purpose must be kept constantly open. These people therefore, whilst they wear these breath-stoppers, must be incapable of any swift motion, as well as any violent and continued exertion of strength. But may not this suppression of the breath, when unemployed, tend to give them a better wind when the impediment is removed, and they set about some active exercise? probably they do not sleep or eat with them on. The custom for women to wear an ornament at the nose, is of great antiquity

* See page 337.

in the East, and is at this time practiced in Arabia and Persia. Sir John Chardin, in a posthumous work which has been given to the world by Mr. Harmer, says, "It is the custom in almost all the East, for the women to wear rings in their noses *in the left* nostril, and I never saw a girl or young woman in Arabia, or in all Persia, who did not wear a ring after this manner in her nostril. These rings are of gold, and have commonly two pearls and one ruby between, placed in the ring." Dr. Russel describes the women of some of the villages about Aleppo, and all the Arabs and Chinganas, (a sort of Gypsies) as wearing a large ring of silver or gold through the external cartilage *of the right nostril*.^e Egmont and Heyman, in like manner, describe this ring, which was composed of a piece of coral, as worn by the Egyptian women in their *right* nostril.^f These people had also holes in their ears, though nothing was then hanging to them; and had bracelets upon the upper arm made of plaited hair; so that they seem to be fond of ornament, though they are absolutely without apparel. One of them, to whom captain Cook had given part of an old shirt, instead of throwing it over any part of his body, tied it as a fillet round his head. They seemed to be much pleased, and in no haste to depart, but seeing some of the gentlemen examining their canoe with great attention and curiosity, they were alarmed, and jumping immediately into it, paddled away without speaking a word. The turtle caught here is said to eat better than any dressed in England. All the natives were stark naked. After some time an intimacy took place, and the Indians came on board the ship with great cordiality. Some of them were very desirous of having a turtle which they saw there,

^e Harmer's Observations, II. 390. ^f History of Aleppo, 104.

^g Travels, II. 85.

and

and being refused, both by looks and gestures, expressed great disappointment and anger. "At this time," says captain Cook, "we happened to have no victuals dressed, but I offered one of them some biscuit, which he snatched, and threw overboard with great disdain." One of them renewed his request to Mr. Banks, and upon a refusal stamped with his foot, and pushed him from him in a transport of resentment and indignation. Having applied by turns to almost every person who appeared to have any authority in the ship, without success, they suddenly seized two of the turtles, and dragged them towards the side of the ship where their canoe lay. Our people soon forced them out of their hands, and replaced them with the rest. They would not, however, relinquish their enterprize, but made several other attempts of the same kind, in all which being equally disappointed, they suddenly leaped into their canoe in a rage, and began to paddle towards the shore. At the same time I went into the boat with Mr. Banks, and five or six of the ship's crew, and we got on shore before them, where many more of our people were engaged in different employments. As soon as the Indians landed they seized their arms, and before we were aware of their design, they snatched a brand from under a pitch-kettle which was boiling, and making a circuit to the windward of the few things we had on shore, they set fire to the grass in their way with surprizing quickness and dexterity. The grass, which was five or six feet high, and as dry as stubble, burnt with amazing fury; and the fire made a rapid progress towards a tent of Mr. Banks, which had been set up for Tupia when he was sick, taking in its course a sow and pigs, one of which it scorched to death. Mr. Banks leaped into a boat, and fetched some people from on board just time enough to save his tent, by hauling it down upon the beach; but such part of the smith's

forge as would burn was consumed. While this was doing, the Indians went to a place at some distance, where several of our people were washing, and where our nets, among which was the seine, and a great quantity of linen, were laid out to dry: here they again set fire to the grass, entirely disregarding both threats and entreaties. We were, therefore, obliged to discharge a musket loaded with small shot at one of them, which drew blood at about the distance of forty yards, and this putting them to flight, we extinguished the fire at this place before it had made much progress; but where the grass had been first kindled, it spread into the woods to two miles distance. If this accident had happened a very little while sooner, the consequence must have been dreadful, for the powder had been on board but a few days; and the store-tent, with many valuable things which it contained, had not been removed many hours. The fury with which the grass burnt in this hot climate is astonishing^b." This instance of desperate resentment did not, however, produce a final rupture, matters were accommodated, and peace restored: soon after which some of the ship's crew were sent up the country to gather Indian kale; one of these people happening to stray from the rest, suddenly fell in with four Indians, three men and a boy, whom he did not see till by turning short in the wood, he found himself among them. They had kindled a fire, and were broiling something on it; the man being unarmed, was at first greatly terrified, but he had the presence of mind not to run away, judging very rightly, that he was most likely to incur danger by appearing to apprehend it. On the contrary, he went and sat down by them, and with an air of cheerfulness and good-humour, offered them his knife, the only thing he had about him, which he thought would be acceptable to them. They

^b Hawkesw. III. 581.

received it, and having handed it from one to the other, returned it to him again. He then made an offer to leave them, but this they seemed not disposed to permit. Still, however, he dissembled his fears, and sat down again. They considered him with great attention and curiosity, particularly his cloaths; and then felt his hands and face, and satisfied themselves, that his body was of the same texture with their own. They treated him with the greatest civility, and having kept him about half an hour, they made signs that he might depart. He did not wait for a second dismissal, but when he left them, not taking the direct way to the ship, they came from their fire and directed him; so that they well knew whence he came^l. At another time one of the natives, by desire, threw his lance, which was about eight feet long. It flew with a surprizing swiftness and readiness, and though it was never more than four feet from the ground, it entered deeply into a tree at fifty paces distance^k. Mr. Banks took a female animal of the *Opossum* tribe, and two young ones, which much resembled the remarkable animal of that kind described by M. de Buffon by the name of *Philanger*. Several species of serpents were seen here, some of which are venomous and some harmless. The land-fowls here are crows, kites, hawks, cockatoes white and black; a very beautiful kind of paroquet; some parrots, pigeons of different sorts, and several small birds not known in Europe. The water fowl are, herons, whistling duck, wild geese, and curlews. The face of the country is agreeably diversified by hill and valley, lawn and wood: the soil of the hills is hard, dry, and stoney; that of the plains is sand and clay. The whole country, both hill and valley, wood and plain, abounds with ant-hills, some of which are six or eight feet high, and twice as much

^l Hawkesw. III. 584.^k Hawkesw. III. 580.

in circumference. The trees here are the gum-tree mangrove. The country is well watered by fine rivulets and springs. On an island off this coast was found the nest of an eagle, and of some other bird of an enormous size; it was built with sticks upon the ground, and was no less than twenty-six feet in circumference, and two feet eight inches high. Rocks and shoals in this part of the globe are more dangerous than in any other; for here there are reefs of coral rock rising like a wall almost perpendicularly out of the unfathomable deep; always overflowed at high water, and at low water dry in many places. And here the enormous waves of the vast southern ocean, meeting with so abrupt a resistance, break with inconceivable violence, in a surf which no rocks or storms in the northern hemisphere can produce. The danger of navigating the unknown parts of this ocean, was greatly increased to our adventurers, by their having a crazy ship, and being short of provisions, and every other necessary; "yet," says captain Cook, "the distinction of a first discoverer, made us cheerfully encounter every danger, and submit to every inconvenience; and we chose rather to incur the censure of imprudence and temerity, which the idle and voluptuous so liberally bestow upon unsuccessful fortitude and perseverance, than leave a country which we had discovered, unexplored, and give colour to a charge of timidity and irresolution¹." Whether this country did or did not join to *New Guinea*, was a point which captain Cook resolved to settle, and to do this he braved such dangers as would have appalled the resolution of any man whose spirit for discovery had not absorbed all regard to personal safety. He found the two countries to be divided by a narrow sea, which he called *Endeavour Straits*.

¹ Hawkesworth III. 607.

York-Cape is the most northern promontory of the country, 142 deg. east longitude; 10 deg. 37 min. south latitude. On a small island captain Cook took possession of the whole eastern coast, from the latitude of 38 deg. to 10 deg. and a half south, in right of his majesty king George the Third, by the name of *New South Wales*, on which account the island received the name of *Possession Island*; here the few inhabitants that were seen, both men and women, were stark naked. *Endeavour Straits*, beforementioned, are ten leagues long from north-east to south-west, and about five leagues broad. The north-eastern entrance of this passage is formed by New Holland, and the south-east by a congeries of islands, which have been called *The Prince of Wales's Islands*, and which probably extend quite to *New Guinea*. M. de Bougainville, who came just at the entrance of these straits, to the most south-eastern parts of *New Guinea*, called that sea *The Gulph of the Louisiade*, the straits since navigated by captain Cook being not then known to exist.

 C H A P. XII.

Of NEW GUINEA, NEW BRITAIN, NEW IRELAND,
and NEW HANOVER, with several other Islands discovered by Captain Carteret in 1767.

NEW-GUINEA is a long and narrow island, very imperfectly known; it was supposed to be connected with *New-Holland*, until captain Cook discovered the strait

which separates them. *New-Guinea*, including *Papua*, its north-western part, (which, according to Bougainville, is separated from it by a strait; but that seems nothing more than a conjectural notion) reaches from the equator to the twelfth degree of south latitude, and from 131 to 150 deg. east longitude; in one part it does not appear to be above fifty miles broad. It was first visited by an European ship in 1529. Saavedra, a Portuguese, who made the discovery of the north-west part of this country, called it *Terra de Papuas*, or *Papos*. Van Schouten, a Dutch discoverer, afterwards gave the name of *New-Guinea* to its south-western part. Admiral Roggewein also touched here, and before him Dampier, 1st January, 1700. Captain Cook made the coast of *New-Guinea*, in latitude 6 deg. 15 min. longitude 138 deg. east, on the 3d of September, and landed in the pinnace, accompanied by Mr. Banks, doctor Solander, nine of the ship's crew, and servants well armed, and leaving two seamen to take care of the boat advanced some little way up the country; but coming to the skirts of a thick wood, they judged it prudent to proceed no further, lest they should fall into an ambuscade of the natives, and their retreat to the boat be cut off. Having advanced about a quarter of a mile from the boat, three Indians rushed out of the wood with a hideous shout; they threw their darts, and showed such a hostile disposition, that the party, to prevent the destruction of these people, returned to the boat, as they had no intention forcibly to invade their country, either to gratify their appetites or curiosity, and it was evident nothing could be done upon friendly terms. When they got on board the boat, they rowed along the shore, and the number of Indians assembled seemed to be between sixty and a hundred. They made much the same appearance as the *New-Hollanders*, being stark naked, and their hair cropped short. All the while they were

were shouting defiance, and throwing something out of their hand which burnt exactly like gun-powder, but made no report; what these fires were, or for what purpose intended, could not be guessed at; those who discharged them had in their hands a short piece of stick, possibly a hollow cane, which they swung sideways from them, and immediately fire and smoke issued, exactly resembling the discharge of a musket, and of no longer duration. This wonderful phenomenon was observed from the ship, and the deception was so great, that the people on board thought they had fire-arms; and even in the boat, if they had not been so near as that they must have heard the report, if there had been any, they should have thought they had been firing volleys. After looking at them attentively some time, without taking any notice of their flashing and vociferation, the sailors fired some muskets over their heads. Upon hearing the balls rattle among the trees, they walked leisurely away, and the boat returned to the ship. Upon examining some weapons which the natives had thrown, they were found to be light darts, about four feet long, very ill made, of a reed or bamboo cane, and pointed with hard wood, in which there were many barbs. They were discharged with great force, for at sixty yards distance they went beyond the party, but in what manner they were thrown could not be exactly seen. But the general opinion was, that they were thrown with a stick in the manner practised by the New-Hollanders^m.

The land here is very low, as is every other part of the coast, but it is covered with a luxuriance of wood and herbage that can scarcely be conceived. Here the cocoa-nut,

^m Hawkesworth III. 657.

plantain, and bread-fruit, flourish in the highest perfection.

NEW-BRITAIN was thought to connect with *New-Guinea*, until Dampier found it to be divided by a strait. It lies to the northward of the eastern-end of *New-Guinea*, before a large bay, which is formed by the coast of the latter island receding to the southward. Its most northern point is in 4 deg. south latitude, and it extends to 6 deg. 30 min. south. Its most eastern point, called by Dampier *Cape Orford*, lies in 151 deg. 34 min. east longitude; its western limits have not been accurately surveyed. In passing between *New-Guinea* and *New-Britain*, Dampier saw several islands to which he gave names; and from 144 to 148 deg. east longitude, he saw four with volcanos, emitting smoke and fire. This country appeared to be high land mixed with valleys, every where abounding with large and stately trees, and well inhabited by a strong race of people of a very dark complexionⁿ. When M. Bougainville navigated the north-east shore of this island, several canoes came off, each containing five or six black men, with frizzled woolly hair, which some of them powdered white: they had pretty long beards, and white ornaments round their arms, in form of bracelets: their nudities were but indifferently covered with leaves of trees; they were tall, active, and robust; they kept at some distance from the ships, and discovered a disposition alternately inclined to war and traffic, very natural on the sight of such guests, whose appearance was perfectly new to them, and whose inclinations and designs they could not possibly be satisfied of^o.

ⁿ Dampier's Voyage.

^o Bougainville, 337.

NEW-IRELAND, the southern coast of which was discovered and named by captain Carteret, in the Swallow, 28th August, 1767. It was before supposed to make a part of *Nova Britannia* by Dampier, who sailed round its northern coast. The most southern point of New-Ireland was named by Dampier, *Cape St. George*, which, together with *Cape Orford*, in New-Britain, were supposed the two points which formed a deep bay, which he called *St. George's Bay*; but captain Carteret sailed through it, and found it to terminate in a narrow channel, to which he gave the name of *St. George's Channel*. He anchored in two harbours, on the southern coast of *New-Ireland*, the most eastern of which he called *English Cove*; 5 deg. south; 15 deg. 19 min. east; the other, which is about four leagues west-north-west of it, he named *Carteret Harbour*. *New-Ireland* is a long narrow slip of land, lying north-west and south-east. From the north-western point, called *Cape Byron*, to its south-eastern point, called *Cape St. George*, is about eighty leagues^p.

When captain Carteret first made the harbour, himself, officers, and crew, were perishing with sickness. The first relief which they found here was from obtaining about one hundred and fifty cocoa-nuts, but all their endeavours to obtain fish miscarried. Whilst the boats could examine the coast, the ship came to an anchor, and several very good harbours being discovered not far distant, they endeavoured to weigh the anchor; but this the united strength of the whole company could not effect. The next day, being somewhat recruited, they were more successful, and at length got the anchor up. From the rocks at low water they procured some rock-oysters, and cockles of a very large size, and some cocoa-nuts from the shore; and the upper

part of the tree which bears them, is called the cabbage. This is a white, crisp, juicy substance, which eaten raw tastes somewhat like a chesnut, but when boiled is superior to the best parsnip, and is perhaps the most powerful antiscorbutic in the world. For every one of these cabbages which were obtained, they were forced to cut down a tree, which was done with great regret, but this depredation on the parent stock was unavoidable. These almost-expiring navigators likewise received great refreshment from the fruit of a tall tree that resembles a plum, and particularly that which in the West-Indies is called the *Jamaica plum*. The shore about this place is rocky, and the country high and mountainous, but covered with trees of various kinds, some of which are of an enormous growth. Among others, the nutmeg-tree was found in great plenty. Captain Carteret gathered a few of the nuts, but they were not ripe. They did not appear to be the best sort, but he imputes that to their growing wild, and being too much in the shade of taller trees. Captain Carteret believes all the species of palm to be growing here, with the beetle-nut tree, various species of the aloe, canes, bamboos, and rattans, with many trees, shrubs, and plants, altogether unknown to him; but no esculent vegetables. The woods abound with pigeons, doves, rooks, parrots, and a large bird with a black plumage, which makes a noise somewhat like the barking of a dog. The only quadrupeds seen by the people of the Swallow were two of a small size, which were supposed to be dogs; they were very wild, and ran with great swiftness: here were seen centipeds, scorpions, and a few serpents of different kinds, but no people. They fell in, however, with several deserted habitations, and by the shells that were scattered about them, and seemed not to have been long taken out of the water, and some sticks half burnt, the embers of a fire,

he

he concludes the natives had but just left the place when he arrived. "If the people may be judged of from that which had been their dwelling," says captain Carteret, "they must stand low even in the scale of savage life, for it was the most miserable hovel we had ever seen." The captain was so much enfeebled and dispirited by sickness, as almost to sink under the duty that, for want of officers, devolved on him, which prevented him from attending, circumstantially, to a description of the country, its productions and people. In *English Cove* the captain took possession of the country, with all its islands, bays, ports, and harbours, for his majesty, and nailed upon a high tree a piece of board, faced with lead, on which was engraved an English Union, with the name of the ship and her commander, the name of the cove, and the time of her coming in and sailing out of it. About a twelvemonth after which, M. de Bougainville happened to touch at this harbour in almost as desperate a condition, and gave it the name of *Port Praslin*; he found here part of captain Carteret's inscription, which had probably been taken down and maimed by the natives. To the animal productions of the country enumerated by captain Carteret, the French officer adds, that five or six wild boars were seen. They killed some large pigeons of great beauty; their plumage was green and gold; their necks and bellies of a greyish white, with a small crest on the head; here are also turtle-doves, widow-birds, larger than those of the Brasils, parrots, and crown-birds; and he, as well as the English traveller, describes a bird, whose cry exactly resembled the barking of a dog. Enormous ants, he relates, swarmed in such numbers about the thatch-palm and cabbage-trees, as to oblige the people to quit several trees after they had felled them. The French historian

4 Hawkeſw. I. 531.

5 Idem, 592.

describes

describes the face of the country as mountainous, the soil light, and hardly covering the rocks; the trees are, notwithstanding, tall, and the country produces several kinds of fine timber-trees; and besides the plants already mentioned, the pepper-tree is said to be common^s. Here was found a very extraordinary insect of the *mantis* genus, about three inches long; almost every part of its body is of such a texture as to appear like a leaf, even when closely viewed. Each of its wings forms one-half of a leaf, and when the two are closed together it appears like an entire leaf. The under side of its body resembles a leaf of a more dead colour than the upper one; it has two *antennæ*, and six legs, of which the upper joints are likewise similar to parts of leaves. M. de Bougainville presented it to the king's cabinet preserved in spirits. Whilst he remained on shore here, on the 22d July, 1768, several shocks of an earthquake were felt, which lasted about two minutes, and were very distinctly noticed on board the ships as well as on shore. Here is a prodigious cascade precipitated through vast rocks, which diversify the fall of water^t.

In the western part of St. George's Channel lies SANDWICH ISLAND, on which coast the Swallow anchored; soon after ten canoes put off from *New Island*, with about one hundred and fifty men on board; they exchanged some trifles, but none of them would venture up the side of the ship; they preferred iron to every thing else, although none of it was manufactured except nails, there being no cutlery ware on board; one of these canoes was not less than ninety feet long, being very little shorter than the ship, notwithstanding which it was formed of a single tree; it had some carved ornaments about it, and was rowed or paddled by

^s Bougainville, 330.^t Idem, 336.

thirty-three men; there was no appearance of sails. The Indians were black and woolly headed like negroes, without their flat noses and thick lips: they were all stark naked, except ornaments of shells about their legs and arms: their hair, as well as their beards, was profusely covered with a white powder: they were armed with spears and long sticks or poles like the quarter staff. As they kept a watchful eye upon the ship's guns, it is probable that they were not wholly unacquainted with the effect of fire arms. They had fishing nets with them, which, as well as their cordage, seemed to be very well made. After they had continued this intercourse for some time, a breeze sprung up and they returned to the shore ^u.

Having reached the western point of *New Ireland*, a fine large island presented itself, to which captain Carteret gave the name of *New Hanover*. The land is high, it is finely covered with trees, among which are many plantations, and the whole has a beautiful appearance. About eight leagues to the westward, appeared six or seven small islands, which received the name of the *DUKE OF PORTLAND'S ISLANDS*.

ADMIRALTY ISLANDS lie in about 2 deg. 18 min. south latitude, and 146 deg. 44 min. east longitude: there are between twenty and thirty islands said to be scattered about here, one of which alone would make a large kingdom. Captain Carteret, who first discovered them, was prevented touching at them, although their appearance was very inviting, on account of the condition of his ship; and as he was entirely unprovided with the articles of barter which

^u Hawkesw. I. 599, 600.

fruit an Indian trade. He describes them as cloathed with a beautiful verdure of woods, lofty and luxuriant, interspersed with spots that have been cleared for plantations, groves of cocoa-nut trees, and houses of the natives, who seem to be very numerous. The largest of these islands is eighteen leagues long in the direction of east and west. The discoverer thinks it highly probable, that these islands produce several valuable articles of trade, very probably spices, as they lie in the same climate and latitude as the *Moluccas*; especially as he found the nutmeg-tree on a soil comparatively rocky and barren upon the coast of *New Ireland* ^v.

CONCLUSION. Having now gone over the several countries that have been visited by modern navigators in the southern hemisphere, as it is not the plan of this work to treat of such as have long since been colonized by Europeans, and which would open a very different and comprehensive matter of investigation, nothing remains in this part of the work, but to give a short account of the *LADRONE* Islands, which lie in the northern division of the Pacific Ocean. These islands were first discovered by Magalhães, a Portuguese, then in the service of the king of Spain, whose undaunted mind led him to enter the great, and then unknown South-Sea, by the straits which he discovered, and which bear his name, in November 1520. He commanded five ships, but the arduous nature of the enterprize, and perhaps something of supercilious superiority in the leader, soon alienated the captains of the several ships from their admiral, and when he had arrived on the western extremity of these straits, the boundless expanse of the South Sea lying before them, he found himself left to pursue the vast idea of arriving at the East Indies by a western course, the

^v Hawkesw. I. 605.

possibility of doing which, was then merely theoretical, with only a single ship. But nothing could deter this fearless man, who had already anticipated deathless fame, and immense wealth, by doing more than Columbus, Americus Vesputius, or Vasco di Gama had accomplished. Little is known concerning this matchless undertaking, by which the circular figure of the world was experimentally proved, than that Magelhaens visited the *Ladrones* or *Marian Islands*, which he named *Ladrones* from the thievish disposition of the natives, and where he met his death in a skirmish with them. The asylum, which the island of *Tinian*, one of these, afforded to commodore Anson, in the *Centurion*, 1742, and the masterly manner in which the narrator of that voyage paints the natural beauties of the country, have given a consequence to them of which they were before destitute. The *Ladrones* are a range of small islands, reaching from 11 to 21 deg. north latitude, in the direction of north and south, and in 145 deg. east longitude. They are generally reckoned twelve in number, most of which were formerly inhabited, and about ninety years ago, the three principal islands *Guam*, *Tinian*, and *Rota*, are said to have contained fifty thousand people; but *Tinian* hath, since that time, been entirely depopulated, and only two or three hundred Indians left at *Rota*, to cultivate rice for the island of *Guam*, which alone is inhabited by Europeans, and here the Spaniards have a governor and a garrison: and here the annual *Mannilla* ship touches for refreshment in her passage from *Acapulco* to the *Philippinas* &c. Commodore Byron anchored off *Tinian* in the very spot where the *Centurion* lay. He arrived here the 30th of July 1765, and continued nine weeks. He gives a much less favourable account of this climate and country than the former navigator; he describes the water as

* Anson's Voyage, duodecimo Edition, 278. 301.

brackish,

brackish, and full of worms; many of his men were seized with fevers, occasioned by the intense heat; the thermometer, which was kept on board the ship, generally stood at eighty-six degrees, which is but nine degrees less than the heat of the blood at the heart, and if it had been on shore it would have risen much higher. It was with the greatest difficulty that they could penetrate through the woods; and when they had fortunately killed a bull, and with prodigious labour dragged it through the forests to the beach, it stunk, and was full of fly-blows, by the time it reached that place. The poultry that was killed was ill-tasted, and within an hour after it was killed the flesh became as green as grass, and swarmed with maggots*. The wild hogs are very fierce, and some were so large that a carcase frequently weighed two hundred pounds. Many of the ship's company were disordered by eating a very fine looking fish caught here. Cotton and indigo were found on this island. Captain Wallis arrived off this island, 19th September, 1767, and continued here almost a month. The western monsoon blows here from the middle of June to the middle of October*.

* Hawksw. I. 118.

† Idem. 499.

‡ Anson's Voyage, 281.

NEW DISCOVERIES
CONCERNING THE
WORLD, &c.

PART II.

Containing the Voyages made by **CAPTAIN COOK**, *and the*
HON. CONSTANTINE JOHN PHIPPS, (*now* **LORD**
MULGRAVE,) *to the FRIGID ZONES, and towards*
the POLES.

C H A P. I.

Captain Cook's Attempts to discover a Southern Continent, in 1773,
1774, and 1775.

THE objects of this expedition being of the highest importance to geography and science in general, every possible attention was paid to the equipment of the ships, and gentlemen of distinguished abilities, in different arts and sciences, were engaged to embark on the voyage. These were Mr. William Hodges, a landscape painter, whose department it was to make drawings and paintings of such places in the countries they should touch at, as might serve to give a more perfect idea thereof than could be formed from written descriptions only: Dr. John Reinhold Forster, and his son Mr. George Forster, were appointed to collect such subjects of natural history as should occur on the voyage: the Board of Longitude agreed with Mr. William Wales, and Mr. William Bayley, to make the astrono-

mical observations; the former on board the Resolution, and the latter on board the Adventure. Besides these, doctor Sparrman, a gentleman who had studied under the great Linnæus, embarked at the Cape, to co-operate with the Messrs. Forsters in their researches into nature. Two sloops were fitted out for this expedition. Captain Cook was on board the Resolution, and had under his command captain Furneaux, in the Adventure. The two sloops sailed from Plymouth Sound the 13th of July, 1772, and anchored in Table-bay, at the Cape of Good Hope, on the 30th of October following.

S E C T. I.

Account of the first attempt of Captain Cook, in the Resolution, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, in the Adventure, to discover a Southern Continent: from his leaving the Cape of Good Hope, to his arrival at New Zealand.

ON the 22d of November, they set sail on their cruise. Captain Cook directed his course due south, and on the 10th of December following, being in latitude 50 deg. 40 min. south, saw the first ice. The mass was about 50 feet high, and half a mile in circuit, flat at top, and its sides rose in a perpendicular direction, against which the sea broke exceedingly high^a. In the afternoon of the same day, another large cubical mass was passed, which was about 2000 feet long, 400 feet broad, and at least as high again as the main top gallant mast head, or 200 feet. According to the experiments of Boyle, and Mairan, the volume of ice is to that of sea-water nearly as 10 to 9, consequently by the known rules of hydrostatics, the volume of ice which rises above the surface of the water, is to that which sinks below it as 1 to 9; supposing therefore this piece to be entirely of a regular figure, its depth under water must have been 1800 feet, and

^a Cook I. 22.

FIRST SOUTHERN COURSE. 371

its whole height 2000 feet: allowing its length as above-mentioned 2000 feet, and its breadth 400 feet, the whole mass must have contained 1600 millions cubic feet of ice ^b. On the 12th, six more were seen, some of them near two miles in circuit, and 60 feet high, and yet such was the force and height of the waves, that the sea broke quite over them. This exhibited for a few moments a view very pleasing to the eye, but on reflecting on the danger the mind must be filled with horror, for were a ship to get against the weather side of one of these islands, when the sea runs high, she would be dashed to pieces in a moment. On the 14th their route to the southward was stopped by an immense field of low ice ^c, 54 deg. 50 min. south, 21 deg. 34 min. east. No end could be seen to this ice, either to the east, west, or south. In different parts of this field were islands, or hills of ice, like those that had been before found floating in the sea; several on board thought they saw land over the ice, but they were only fog-banks, that bore that appearance ^d. A boat was hoisted out, to try the direction of the current. Mr. Wales the astronomer, and the elder Mr. Forster, took the opportunity of going in her, to make experiments of the temperature of the sea, at a certain depth. It was very foggy when they left the ship, soon

^b Forster I. 93, 94.—Just as this sheet was going to the press, Mr. Wales, astronomer on board the *Resolution*, published his remarks on Mr. Forster's account of this voyage; in which he doubts the principles on which this calculation is made, "as the experiments above referred to, were made with real solid and compact ice; whereas that of which this mass was composed, was light and porous, being chiefly snow and salt water frozen together, and bears not perhaps a greater proportion to the weight of salt water than that of 5 to 6, or 6 to 7, at the utmost." Pa. 21.—If this pamphlet had been published earlier, we should have been happy to have noticed it in the first part of our work; being solicitous to avail ourselves of every light that can be thrown on the subject in general. With respect to the difference between these scientific circumnavigators, we can only say, with Virgil's *Palamon*, *Nem nostrum inter vos tantas componere lites.* ^c Cook I. 23. ^d *Ibidem*, 24.

after, the fog encreased so much that those in the boats had entirely lost sight of both ships, and no situation can be imagined more dreary and horrible than theirs; in a four oared boat, in an immense ocean, far from any inhabitable shore, surrounded with ice, and destitute of provisions: they rowed about for some time, making vain efforts to be heard, but all was silence about them, and they could not see the length of their boat. They were the more unfortunate, as they had neither mast nor sail, and only two oars. In this dreadful suspense they determined to lay still, hoping, that provided they preserved their place, the sloops would not drive away, as it was calm. At length they heard the jingling of a bell at a distance, which sound was heavenly music to their ears; they immediately rowed towards it, and by continually hailing, were at last answered by the Adventure. They hurried on board, overjoyed to have escaped the danger of perishing by slow degrees, through the inclemencies of weather and famine*. The ships then changed their course to the eastward; large islands of ice were hourly seen in all directions round the sloops, so that they were become as familiar to those on board as the clouds and the sea. Whenever a strong reflection of white was seen on the skirts of the sky near the horizon, then ice was sure to be met with: notwithstanding which the ice itself is not entirely white, but often tinged, especially near the surface of the sea, with a most beautiful sapphirine, or rather berylline blue, evidently reflected from the water. This blue colour sometimes appeared 20 or 30 feet above the surface, and was probably produced by some particles of seawater which had been dashed against the masts in tempestuous weather, and had penetrated into its interstices. In great islands of ice were frequently observed shades or casts of

* Forsk. I. 99, 100.

white,

white, lying above each other in strata, sometimes of six inches, and at other times of a foot high. This appearance seems to confirm the opinion concerning the increase and accumulation of such huge masses, by heavy falls of snow at different intervals: for snow being of various kinds, small grained, large grained, in light feathery locks, &c. the various degrees of its compactness account for the different colours of the strata^f. The 25th being Christmas day, was spent with the usual cheerfulness among the officers and passengers, but among the sailors, notwithstanding the surrounding rocks of ice, with noise and drunkenness, to which, according to Mr. Forster, they seem to have particularly devoted the day^g. The next morning the ships passed through a great quantity of packed or broken ice, some of which looked dirty or decaying. Islands of ice still surrounded them, and in the evening the sun setting just behind one of them, tinged its edges with gold, and brought upon the whole mass a beautiful suffusion of purple^h. "Although," says captain Cook, "this was the middle of summer with us, I much question "if the day was colder in any part of Englandⁱ." During their whole summer continuance in the frigid zone they had no thaw, for the mercury in Fahrenheit's thermometer kept generally below the freezing point. The chase of penguins proved very unsuccessful, though it afforded great sport; these birds dived so frequently, continued so long under water, and at times skipped continually into and out of it, making way with such amazing velocity in a straight line, that the fowlers were obliged to give over the pursuit; but not before they had come near enough to one of them to wound it; but though they followed it closely, and fired above ten times with small shot, which was observed to hit, yet they

^f Forster I. 101.^g Vol. I. 102.^h Ibid.ⁱ Cook's I. 31.

were at last obliged to kill it with ball. When they took it up, they perceived its hard glossy plumage had constantly turned the shot aside: this plumage is extremely thick, and consists of long narrow feathers which lie above each other as closely as scales, and secure these amphibious birds against the wet, in which they almost constantly live. Their very thick skin, and their fat, seem wisely appropriated to them by nature to resist the perpetual winter of these inhospitable climates. Their broad belly, the situation of their feet far behind, and their fins which supply the place of wings, are constructed with equal wisdom to facilitate the progress of their otherwise lumpish bodies through the water. That which was shot weighed eleven pounds and a half. The blue petrels which every where abound in this immense ocean, now settled in flocks of several hundreds on the smooth surface of the water; these were not worse fitted out against the cold than the penguins. Their plumage was amazingly abundant, and increased their bulk in a great proportion, and two feathers instead of one proceeded out of every root, lying within each other, and formed a very warm covering. As they are almost continually in the air, their wings are very strong, and of great length to support them.

January 2, 1773. Captain Cook searched for cape Circumcision which is laid down by Bouvette in 58 deg. 53 min. south long. 10 deg. 6 min. east, but as he saw no appearance of land, though the weather was very clear, he supposes it to have been nothing but mountains of ice surrounded by loose or field ice^k. January 9. Three boats were hoisted out, and in about five or six hours took up as much ice as yielded fifteen tons of good fresh water. The salt water which adhered to the ice was so trifling as not to be

^k Cook I. 35.

tasted,

tasted, and after it had lain on deck a short time, entirely drained off, and the water which the ice yielded was perfectly sweet and well tasted. Part of the ice was broken in pieces and put into casks; some was melted in the copper, and filled up the casks with the water, and some was kept on deck for present use; this water had a purer taste than any which was on board, the only fault it possessed, according to Mr. Forster, was that the fixed air was expelled from it, by which means almost every one who used it was afflicted with swellings in the glands of the throat^l. Mr. Wales the astronomer, in his remarks on Mr. Forster's work^m, doubts whether water procured from ice causes such soreness and swellings, and asserts that disorders of these kinds were by no means general on board the Resolution. Certain it is, that the fixed air might easily have been incorporated into this fluid, only by pouring it from one vessel into another, backwards and forwards, for a short time. Here was a discovery made important to science; that nature forms great masses of ice in the midst of the wide ocean, which are destitute of any saline particles, but have all the useful and salubrious qualities of the pure element. Crantz, in his history of Greenlandⁿ, relates, that the stupendous masses of ice found in the northern seas, called ice-islands or mountains, melted into fresh water; though he did not imagine that they originated from the sea, but that they were first formed in the great rivers of the north, and being carried down into the ocean, were afterwards increased to that amazing height by the snow that fell upon them; but that all frozen sea-water would thaw into fresh, had either never been asserted, or had met with little credit; neither did captain Cook expect such a transmutation^o. January 16. They crossed the antarctic circle in long. 39 deg. 35 min. east,

^l Cook I. 37. Forster I. 107. ^m Page 22. ⁿ Book I. ch. 11, § 11, 12.

^o Sir John Pringle's Discourse to the Royal Society.

which had till then remained impenetrable to all former navigators. The next day thirty-eight ice islands, great and small, were seen, besides loose ice in abundance. After having reached 67 deg. 15 min. south, captain Cook ordered the ships to put about, and stood north east by north, an immense field of solid ice extending to the southward as far as the eye could reach from the mast head, which rendered it impossible to advance farther that way. Here were seen many whales playing about the ice, and for two days before several flocks of brown and white pintadoes were seen, which they named antarctic peterels, because they seemed to be natives of that region. January 31. Passed near two islands of ice, 50 deg. 50 min. south, 56 deg. 48 min. east, one of which appeared to be breaking or falling to pieces by the crackling noise it made, which captain Cook says was equal to the report of a four pounder ^p. This was the last ice seen till they returned again to the southward. Land was discovered by M. de Kirguelen and M. de St. Allouarn, two French navigators, in 1772; its northern extremity is situated about 48 deg. south, and 64 deg. 20 min. east from Greenwich. In the same year several small islands were discovered by M. de Marion, another French navigator, who unhappily lost his life in the Bay of Islands, at New Zealand, as has been related ^q. They lie about the latitude of 46 or 47 deg. 30 min. and the long. of 37 deg. 46 deg. 30 min. and 48 deg. 30 east from Greenwich; all of which were of inconsiderable extent, high, rocky, destitute of trees, and almost entirely barren. It was supposed that the French had discovered the North Cape of a great southern continent; but though the land which they lit on was not found by captain Cook, yet his track proves beyond a doubt, that their discovery is only a small island, and not what they imagined it to be ^r.

February 8. The Resolution lost sight of the Adventure, and the two sloops continued separated for the rest of the cruise,

^o Forster I. 108.

^p Vol. I. 47.

^q Page 324.

^r Forster I. 110—112.

but

but
Zeel
islan
near
join
bab
seco
the
mine

T
pha
long
horiz
grad
colum
mity
aur
being
riou
The
be se
austr
The
sharp
the s
ing i
field
direc

M
tude
fight
any
seem

but afterwards met in Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand; then sailing together for O-Tahaites, and other islands within the tropics, in coming round the same coast near to Cook's Straits they again separated, and never more joined during the voyage. Captain Furneaux seeing no probability of forming a junction with his consort, having arrived a second time at Queen Charlotte's Sound, some little time after the Resolution had left it, after refreshing his crew, determined to return to England, and reached Spithead in July 1774.

To return to the Resolution, February 17. A beautiful phenomenon was observed in the heavens, it consisted of long columns of a clear white light, shooting up from the horizon to the eastward, almost to the Zenith, and spreading gradually over the whole southern part of the sky. These columns were sometimes bent sideways at their upper extremity, and though in most respects similar to the northern lights, *aurora borealis* of our hemisphere, yet differed from them in being always of a whitish colour, whereas ours assume various tints, especially those of a fiery and a purple hue. The stars were sometimes hid by, and sometimes faintly to be seen through, the substance of these southern lights, *aurora australis*, which till then had escaped the notice of voyagers. The sky was generally clear when they appeared, and the air sharp and cold, the thermometer standing at the freezing point, the ship being then in 58 degrees south*. February 24. Being in 62 degrees south, they fell in once more with a solid field of ice, which obstructed their further progress in that direction.

March 5. Being in latitude 59 deg. 58 min. south, longitude 118 deg. 39 min. east, three islands of ice were in sight, all of them large, especially one, which was larger than any that had been before seen. The side opposite to the ship seemed to be a mile in extent, and the whole mass was sup-

* Forster I. 115, 116. Cook I. 53.

posed to be three in circuit. In passing it in the night, a continual crackling was heard, occasioned, no doubt, by pieces breaking from it; for in the morning the sea, for some distance round it, was covered with large and small pieces, and the island itself did not appear so large as it had done the evening before. It was supposed to be one hundred feet high, yet such was the impetuous force and height of the waves which broke against it, by meeting with such a sudden resistance, that they rose considerably higher. March 26. They made the coast of New Zealand, and anchored in *Dusky-bay*, after having been one hundred and seventeen days at sea, in which time they had sailed three thousand six hundred and sixty leagues, without having had sight of any land, and being doomed to explore

Thrilling regions of thick ribbed ice.

In which attempt they had been

Blown with restless violence round about

The pendant world †.

The *Resolution* left *Dusky-bay* 11th May, 1773, and cast anchor in *Queen Charlotte's Sound* on the 17th of the same month, continued there till the 7th June; the Captain made such good use of the four winter months after their departure from New Zealand, that they had cruised the south-sea in the middle latitudes in the depth of winter, visited *O-Tahitee*, the *Society* and *Friendly* isles, and examined a space of more than 40 degrees of longitude between the tropics, and returned to *Queen Charlotte's Sound* 2d November. The savage rocks of New Zealand were then only to give them shelter whilst they changed their fair weather rigging for such as might resist the storms and rigours of more inhospitable climates.

† Shakespeare's Measure or Measure.

SECOND SOUTHERN COURSE. 379

SECTION II.

Second Attempt made by Captain Cook in the Resolution (having parted from the Adventure) to penetrate towards the South-Pole. From his sailing from New Zealand in November 1773, to his Arrival at Easter Island in March 1774.

CAPTAIN COOK having now lost his consort, the Adventure, entered on his second southern course alone, on the 27th November, of which he speaks in the following terms: "It being the unanimous opinion of every one, that the Adventure could neither be stranded on the coast, nor be in any of the harbours, I therefore gave up looking for her, and all thoughts of seeing her any more during the voyage, as no rendezvous was absolutely fixed upon after leaving New Zealand; nevertheless, that did not discourage me from fully exploring the southern parts of the Pacific Ocean, in the doing of which I intended to employ the whole of the ensuing season. On our quitting the coast, and consequently all hopes of being joined by our consort, I had the satisfaction to find that not a man was dejected, or thought the dangers we had yet to go through were in the least increased by being alone; but as cheerfully proceeded to the south, or wherever I might think proper to lead them, as if the Adventure, or even more ships, had been in our company." But whilst the seamen viewed their destination with a cheerful acquiescence, the philosophers seemed to consider it enveloped in all its gloom, as appears from Mr. Forster's relation. "The officers and passengers, says he, entered on this second cruise under several difficulties, which did not exist before: they

"Cook I, 250.

had not now any live stock to be compared to that which they took from the Cape of Good Hope; and the little stock of provisions which had supplied their table with variety, in preference to that of the common sailor, was now so far consumed, that they were become nearly upon a level; especially as the seamen were inured to that way of life by constant habit almost from their infancy, and the others (meaning doubtless the passengers) had never experienced it before. The hope of meeting with new lands was vanished; the topics of common conversation were exhausted; the cruise to the south could not present any thing new, but appeared in all its chilling horrors before us; and the absence of our consort doubled every danger. We had enjoyed a few agreeable days between the tropics; we had feasted as well as the produce of various islands would permit; and we had been entertained with the novelty of various objects among different nations, but according to the common vicissitudes of fortune, these agreeable moments were to be succeeded by a long period of fogs and frosty weather; of fasting, and of tedious uniformity.^w

December 6, 1773, were in the latitude of 51 deg. 33 min. south, and longitude 180 deg. consequently just at the point of the antipodes of London, being the first European, and most probably the first human beings who had reached that point, and perhaps they will be the last. A notion prevails, that Sir Francis Drake visited the antipodes of London, which the legend expresses, by having passed under the middle-arch of London-bridge, but nothing can be more gross than this mistake, as his track lay in the high northern latitudes. Indeed he did pass the *periæci*, or the point of 180 deg. long. on the same circle in north latitude, near the peninsula of *Kampfschatka*.^x December 12. The first ice was seen in

^w Forster I. 524.

^x Forster I. 528.

SECOND SOUTHERN COURSE. 381

62 deg. 10 min. south, 172 west, which is 11½ degrees more to the southward than the first ice seen the preceding year in the Atlantic Ocean. Captain Cook concludes there can be no land to the southward under the meridian of *New Zealand*, but what must lie very far to the south, from the great swell which came from the south-west when a strong gale blew from the north-west. December 15. In 66 deg. south, 159 west, the further course to the southward was interrupted on account of the ice, among which they were in a manner embayed, which obliged them to tack to the northward, and soon after they got clear of all the loose ice, but not without receiving several hard knocks from the larger pieces. The weather remained foggy, and several ice-islands still lay in their way, one of which they were near falling aboard of, and if that had happened, none would have survived to have related the circumstance. The ship passed within her own length to windward of this huge mass, so that every one on board was in the most dreadful suspense for a few minutes*. Several penguins were seen on some little ice-islands, and a few antarctic peterels on the wing². The next day the weather clearing up, they stretched to the south-east; it was soon succeeded by thick hazy weather, with snow showers, and all the rigging became coated with ice. Dec. 20. They crossed the antarctic circle a second time, in the longitude of 147 deg. 46 min. west. The next morning ice-islands were seen very high and rugged, forming at their tops many peaks, whereas those that had been seen before were flat at top, and not so high; many of these were between two and three hundred feet in height, and between two and three miles in circuit, with perpendicular cliffs or sides, astonishing to behold. Most of their winged companions had now left them, the grey abbatrosses only excepted, and instead of the other

* Vol. I. 252.

² Forster I. 521.

³ Cook I. 254.

birds

birds they were visited by a few antarctic petrels, two of which were shot. These birds are of the size of a large pigeon, the feathers of the head, back, and part of the upper side of the wings are of a light brown; the belly and side of the wings white, the tail-feathers are also white, but tipped with brown. Another petrel was shot afterwards, smaller, and entirely of a grey plumage; these birds were fuller of feathers than any hitherto seen. A few chocolate-coloured albatrosses were seen in these parts, all which birds kept among the ice, "from whence," says captain Cook, "we may with reason conjecture, that there is land to the south^b." December 22. They had penetrated to 67 deg. 31 min. being the highest southern latitude they had reached; long. 142 deg. 54 min. west; twenty-three small ice-islands were this day seen from the deck, and twice that number from the mast-head; and yet the weather was so foggy, that they could not see above two or three miles round them. On the 25th the weather was clear and fair; upwards of ninety large ice-islands were in sight. This being Christmas-day, the captain invited the officers and mates to dinner; and one of the lieutenants entertained the petty officers. The sailors feasted on a double portion of pudding; regaling themselves with the brandy of their allowance, which they had saved for this occasion some months before-hand, being solicitous to get very drunk. The sight of an immense number of ice-islands, among which the ship drifted, at the mercy of the current, every moment in danger of being dashed in pieces against them, could not deter the sailors from indulging in their favourite amusement; as long as they had brandy left, they would persist to keep Christmas, tho' the elements had conspired together for their destruction. Their long acquaintance with a seafaring life had inured them to all kinds of perils; and their heavy la-

^b Vol. I. 258.

bou
ship
had
an o
just
stay
with
suffic
rizon
light

Ja
min.
north
a spa
degre
by w
plore
likew
this
south
two
as la
two
unlik
wind
peftu
wave
a de
the
for a
whe

c F

SECOND SOUTHERN COURSE. 385

hour, with the inclemencies of weather, and other hardships, making their muscles rigid, and their nerves obtuse, had communicated insensibility to their minds ^e. At noon, by an observation of the sun's altitude, they found that they had just returned out of the antarctic polar circle. During their stay in the frigid zone they had scarcely any night; so that within a few minutes of midnight the light of the sun was sufficient to write or read by. The sun's stay below the horizon was so very short at this time, that a very strong twilight continued all the time of his disappearing ^d.

January 3, 1774. Being in 56 deg. south, 140 deg. 31 min. west, the wind being westwardly, obliged them to steer north eastwardly, the captain was therefore obliged to leave a space of sea unexplored to the west, containing near 40 degrees of long. and half that of latitude ^e. (See the map, by which it will appear that this space was afterwards explored on the return of the Resolution the next year, and likewise by captain Furneaux in the Adventure, much about this time.) January 20. Being in latitude 62 deg. 34 min. south, 116 deg. 24 min. west, they were becalmed; when two ice islands appeared in sight, one of which seemed to be as large as any that had been seen; it was supposed to be full two hundred feet in height, and terminated in a peak not unlike the cupola of St. Paul's church ^f. January 15. The wind increased very much, and in a short time blew a tempestuous gale; at nine o'clock at night a huge mountainous wave struck the ship on the beam, and filled the deck with a deluge of water, it poured into the cabin and extinguished the lights, leaving the gentlemen who were sitting there for a moment in doubt whether they were not entirely overwhelmed, and sinking into the abyss. Indeed, the situation

^e Forster I. 535. ^d Forster I. 536. ^e Cook I. 261. ^f Cook I. 264.

of those on board was at this time very dismal. The ocean about them wore a furious aspect, seeming, as it were, to be incensed at the presumption of a few intruding mortals. "A gloomy melancholy" says Mr. Forster, "lowered on the brows of our ship-mates, and a dreary silence reigned among us. Salt meat, our constant diet, was become loathsome to all, even to those that had been bred to a nautical life from their earliest years. The hour of dinner was hateful to us; for the well-known smell of the victuals had no sooner reached our noses, than we found it impossible to partake of them with a hearty appetite." Thus were these southern cruisers beset with hardships peculiarly severe. The ice, the fog, the storms, and ruffled surface of the sea, composed a soul-sinking scene, which was seldom cheered by the reviving beams of the sun. "In short," says Mr. Forster, "we rather vegetated than lived; we withered, and became indifferent to all that animates the soul at other times; we sacrificed our health, our feelings, our enjoyments, to the honour of pursuing a track unattempted before^h. January 26. Passed for the third time within the antarctic polar circle, long. 109 deg. 31 min. west, and on the 29th in the afternoon, were in 69 deg. 45 min. south, 108 deg. 5 min. west, passed a piece of weed covered with barnacles, which a brown albatross was picking offⁱ. The boats were hoisted out, and took up a large quantity of broken ice, which afforded a seasonable supply of fresh water. The mildest sunshine was enjoyed this day that had ever been experienced in the frigid zone^k. This led them to entertain hopes of penetrating as far towards the south pole as other navigators had done towards the north pole; but the next day about four in the morning, they discovered a solid ice-field of immense extent before them, which bore from east to west.

^g Forster I. 541. ^h Vol. I. 542. ⁱ Cook I. 267. ^k Forster I. 544.

SECOND SOUTHERN COURSE. 385

A bed of fragments floated all round this field, which seemed to be raised several feet high above the level of the water. Whilst in this situation, the southern part of the horizon was illuminated by the rays of light reflected from the ice to a considerable height. Ninety-seven ice islands were distinctly seen within the field, besides those on the outside: many of them very large, and looking like a ridge of mountains, rising one above another till they were lost in the clouds. The outer, or northern edge of this immense field, was composed of loose or broken ice close packed together; so that it was not possible for any thing to enter it. Such mountains of ice as these captain Cook believes never were seen in the Greenland seas, so that no comparison can be drawn between the ice here and there; and it was the opinion of most on board, that this ice extended quite to the pole, which they were then within less than nineteen degrees of; or perhaps joined to some land to which it had been fixed from the earliest time; and that it is to the south of this parallel that all the ice is formed, which is found scattered up and down to the northward, and afterwards broken off by gales of wind, or other causes, and brought forward by the currents which were always found to fit in that direction in high latitudes. Some penguins were heard here, but none seen, and but few other birds, or any thing that could lead to a supposition that there was any land near. But yet captain Cook is of opinion that there must be some land to the south behind this ice. "But if there is," says he, "it can afford no better retreat for birds, or any other animals, than the ice itself, with which it must be wholly covered; I who was ambitious, not only of going further than any one had been before, but as far as it was possible for man to go, was not sorry at meeting with this interruption; as it in some measure relieved us, at least shortened the dangers and hardships inseparable from the navigation of the southern polar regions.

regions. Since therefore we could not proceed further to the south, no other reason need be assigned for my tacking and standing back to the north, being at this time in the latitude of 71 deg. 10 min. south, longitude, 106 deg. 54 min. west ^l.

Captain Cook then failed northward, in which track he went in search of land said to have been discovered by Juan Fernandez about a century ago, in latitude 38 deg. south, and laid down by Mr. Dalrymple in 90 deg. west, but no such land was found; if any such does exist, it is the opinion of captain Cook that it can be only a small island ^m. Mr. Forster says the matter was not fully searched into, owing to a dangerous bilious cholic which seized the captain, and for some days greatly endangered his life, but the sedulous attention of Mr. Patton the surgeon, proved successful to restore him to health ⁿ. Without any occurrence worth relating, they fell in with Easter island the 11th of March 1774, having been out of sight of land one hundred and four days,

Beating for joyless months the gloomy wave ^o.

They then proceeded to the *Marquesas of Mendoca*, and from thence, a second time during this voyage, visited the queen of tropical islands *O-Tabeitee*, next proceeded to the Society Islands, afterwards to *Rotterdam*, or *Anamocka*, one of the Friendly Islands, then to *Tierra del Esperitu Santo* of Quiros, and explored a cluster of large islands lying to the south, now called the *New Hebrides*. The captain then fell in with *New Caledonia*, and in his way to *New Zealand* discovered a small uninhabited island, now called *Norfolk Island*. As no animal food had been procured at any of the places where the ship touched after leaving the

^l Cook I. 268.

^m Vol. I. 274.

ⁿ Forster I. 548.

^o Thomson.

Society Islands, the want of fresh meat was very severely felt; according to Mr. Forster, all the officers on board, who had made several voyages round the world, and experienced the hardships incidental to them, agreed in declaring, that all their former sufferings were not to be compared to those they then felt, and that they had never before so thoroughly loathed a salt diet. Captain Cook had made a provision of dried hams for the voyage, which by length of time were much corrupted, all the fat being converted into a rancid oil, and the salt having filled the flesh with a quantity of alkaline concretions like tartar: however, as often as this meat was carried to table, which happened once a week, the petty officers devoured it with wistful looks, and spoke of the good fortune of those who partook of it so feelingly, as to render their situation truly pitiable to a sympathetic heart. It was owing to the excellent preservatives against the scurvy which were on board, and the great attention bestowed in expelling the foul air from every part of the ship, that the depredations of disease were not added to the wretchedness occasioned by loathsome and putrid provisions. Thus circumstanced, the first lieutenant caught a fish exactly of the same species as that mentioned page 244, which had poisoned captain Cook and the two Mr. Forsters, and who were at that time enduring the effects of that deleterious supper: notwithstanding which, such was the strong desire which prevailed to taste fresh food, that the officer ordered it to be cleaned and boiled, and the united persuasions of all on board could scarcely divert him from his purpose: had he persisted in his resolution, and made a meal of the fish, it is most probable that it would have cost him his life, for a dog who eat of the entrails, lay several days in such exquisite torments that he was at last thrown overboard to put an end to his misery. A few days after, a porpoise was struck with a har-

poon, and a boat being hoisted out, it was killed with five musket shot. It was six feet long, a female, its duggs were full of milk, it being a viviparous animal, of the class that suckle their young, and of the kind which the naturalists call *Dolphin of the Ancients*, and which differs from the other kind of porpoise in the head and jaw, having them long and pointed. This fish had eighty-eight teeth in each jaw; it was cut up and distributed to the ship's company: its colour was not inviting, being almost black, but the haslet and lean flesh were considered as a feast; the latter was a little liverish, but had not the least fishy taste. It was eaten roasted, boiled, and fried, having been first soaked in warm water. In their situation little art was necessary to make any thing that was fresh palatable. The sloop came once more to an anchor in *Queen Charlotte's Sound* in *New Zealand* on the 19th of October 1774, and sailed on the 10th of Nov. following, and made a run without seeing any land, quite across the south-sea to *Tierra del Fuego* and on the 17th of December made *Cape Desseada*, on the south-western extremity of that dreary coast.

S E C T. III.

Captain Cook's cruise in the Southern Atlantic Ocean, with an account of the lands discovered in that sea, in 1775.

JANUARY 4, 1775, captain Cook sailed south east from *Staten-Island*, in order to pass a third summer-season to the southward. On leaving *Staten-land* he has the following remarks: "It is amazing to see how different animals which inhabit this little spot are mutually reconciled. They seem to have entered into a league not to disturb each other's tranquility. The sea-lions occupy most of the sea-coast; the sea-bears take up their abode in the

1 Cook II. 147. Forster II. 443.

island;

island; the shags have post in the highest cliffs; the penguins fix their quarters where there is the most easy communication to and from the sea; and the other birds choose more retired stations. We have seen all these animals mix together like domestic cattle and poultry in a farm-yard, without one attempting to molest the other: nay I have often observed the eagles and vultures sitting on the hills among the shags, without either the old or young of the latter being disturbed at their presence. It may be asked how these birds of prey live? I suppose on the carcasses of seals and birds, which die by various causes, and probably in no small numbers, as they are so numerous.*

The first object of this cruise was to discover an extensive coast laid down by Mr. Dalrymple, in his chart, in which is the gulph of St. Sebastian; afterwards it was designed further to explore the southern part of the Atlantic Ocean. This coast has been laid down between 40 and 53 deg. west, in the lat. of 54 and 58 south, but no such land was met with; and captain Furneaux, in the Adventure, the year before, passed across that part where the eastern and western shores are laid down, without seeing land: it appears therefore, that either this gulph does not exist, or that it is not rightly laid down, either in the English or French charts. January 14, being in latitude 53 deg. 56 min. south, long. 39. 24 west, land was discovered; its mountains appeared of a vast height, covered with snow and ice, in most places quite to the water's edge: towards the south end several low islands were seen, which appeared to have some verdure upon them, and were therefore called the *Green-Islands*. This land, which was at first supposed to be part of a great continent, was found at length to be an island of 70 leagues in circuit, between the latitudes of

* Cook II. 2. 6.

* Forster II. 523.

53 deg. 57 min. and 54 deg. 57 min. and long. 38 deg. 13 min. and 35 deg. 34 min. west, extending south-east by east, and north-west by west; and is 31 leagues long, in that direction; its greatest breadth is about 10 leagues. It seemed to abound with bays and harbours, which the vast quantities of ice rendered inaccessible the greatest part of the year. This large island received the name of *Southern Georgia*. Captain Cook landed in a bay on the northern side of this island, which he called *Possession-Bay*: here he displayed his colours in three different places, and took possession of the country in his Majesty's name, under a discharge of small-arms^t. Two rocky islands are situated on the north end, one of which was named *Willis's-Island*, from the person who discovered it. It is a craggy cliff, nearly perpendicular, which contained the nests of many thousand hags. The other received the name of *Bird-Island*, from the innumerable flocks of birds of all sorts that were seen upon it, from the largest albatrosses down to the least petrels. Several porpoises were likewise observed, and seals, which probably came to breed on these inhospitable shores. The head of the bay, as well as two places on each side, were terminated by perpendicular ice cliffs, of considerable height, such as is found in the harbour of *Spitzbergen*, in the northern hemisphere. (See the account of captain Phipps's voyage in the next chapter). Pieces were continually breaking off and floating out to sea; and a great fall happened whilst they were in the bay, which made a noise like cannon. The other parts of the country were not less savage and horrible. The wild rocks raised their lofty summits till they were lost in the clouds; and the valleys lay covered with snow. Not a tree was to be seen, nor a shrub, even big enough to make a tooth-pick. The only vegetation observed, was a strong bladed grass, growing in

^t Cook II. 218. 213.

THIRD SOUTHERN COURSE. 391

tufts; wild burnet, and a plant like moss, which sprung from the rocks. Seals, or sea-bears, were pretty numerous. Among them was a huge animal, of the same kind with the sea-lion described in Lord Anson's voyage; a midshipman shot it through the head, whilst it lay asleep. It was all over of a dark grey colour, with a slight olive cast, something like the seals in the northern hemisphere: it likewise resembled those animals in the most perfect shape of its fore-feet, and the want of external ears: its nose projected far beyond the mouth, and had a loose wrinkled skin; it was about 13 feet long. Here was found a flock of about 20 penguins, of a much greater size than any before seen, being 39 inches long, and weighing 40 pounds. The seals and penguins killed here were very acceptable food to the whole crew; for any kind of fresh meat was eagerly coveted. "For my own part," says captain Cook, "I was now, for the first time, heartily tired of salt meat of every kind; and though the flesh of the penguins could scarcely vie with bullock's liver, it being fresh was sufficient to make it go down^x." Even the climate of *Tierra del Fuego*, tho' lying more to the southward, is mild, with respect to that of *Georgia*; the difference in the thermometer being observed to be at least 10 degrees. Besides being uninhabitable, *South-Georgia* does not appear to contain a single article for which it might be visited occasionally by European ships^y. Not a river or stream of fresh water was seen on the whole coast^z.

Captain Cook left the southern part of this island on the 26th of January, and steered east south-east until he arrived in 60 deg. lat. further than which he did not intend to go, unless he observed some certain signs of meeting with land. These high southern latitudes, where

^u Forster II. 527, 528. ^x Cook II. 215. ^y Forster II, 533. ^z Cook II. 218.

nothing was to be found but ice and thick fogs, had at length tired even this persevering chieftain himself; he therefore put about to the eastward. January 13, passed one of the largest ice-islands that had been seen in the voyage. Many on board were at this time afflicted with severe rheumatic pains and colds, and some were suddenly taken with fainting fits, since their unwholesome juiceless food could not supply the waste of animal spirits. As the ship was now proceeding northward, the hope of soon reaching a milder climate diffused a general satisfaction; but another frozen country rose to their view, and threatened to retard the accomplishment of their wishes. The discovery of this land was made on the 31st of January, at seven in the morning. Captain Cook gave the name of *Sandwich-Land* to this discovery, which may possibly be the northern point of a continent; for he is of opinion that there is a track of land near the pole, which is the source of most of the ice that is spread over this vast Southern Ocean. He likewise thinks it extends farthest to the north, opposite the Southern Atlantic and Indian Oceans, because ice was always found more towards the north in those seas than any where else, which he imagines could not be if there was not land of considerable extent to the south; but the risque that is run in exploring a coast in these unknown and icy seas, is so very great, that he concludes on the best grounds, that no man will ever venture farther than he has done; and that the lands which may lie to the south will never be explored. Thick fogs, snow storms, intense cold, and every other thing that can render navigation dangerous, must be encountered, and these difficulties are greatly heightened by the inexpressibly horrid aspect of the country; a country doomed by nature never once to feel the warmth of the sun's rays, but to lie buried in everlasting snow and ice. The ports which may be on the coast are in a manner wholly
filled

filled up with frozen snow of vast thickness; but if any be so far open as to invite a ship into it, she would run a risque of being fixed there for ever, or of coming out in an ice-island. The islands and floes on the coast, the great falls from the ice-cliffs in the port, or a heavy snow-storm, attended with a sharp frost, would be equally fatal^a.

The most southern extremity that was seen was called *Southern Thule*, and lies in latitude 59 deg. 30 min. south longitude, 27 deg. 30 min. west; proceeding northward many projecting points of land were discovered; the mountains appeared to be of vast height, their summits being constantly wrapped in clouds, and the lower parts covered with snow down to the water-edge. These captain Cook named in the order that they were seen, *Freezeland-peak*, *Cape Bristol*, and *Cape Montagu*; with an island that received the name of *Saunders*, situated 58 deg. 27 min. south latitude, 26 deg. 44 min. west longitude, and two small ones, which were named *Candlemas Isles*; they are of no great extent, but are of considerable height, and are covered with snow. The whole country had the most desolate and horrid appearance imaginable; not a single blade of grass could be discerned upon it, and it seemed to be forsaken even by the amphibious and lumpish animals which dwelt on *South Georgia*. It remains very doubtful whether the different projecting points of *Thule*, *Cape Bristol*, and *Cape Montagu*, form one connected land, or several distinct islands, and this may probably continue undetermined for ages to come, since an expedition to those inhospitable parts of the world, besides being extremely perilous, does not seem likely to be productive of great advantages to mankind^b. Prudence would not permit the commander to venture near a coast subject to thick fogs, where there was no anchorage, and every part was blocked

^a Cook II. 237.

^b Forster II. 539.

and filled up with ice, and the whole country from the summits of the mountains down to the very brink of the cliffs, which terminate the coast, covered two fathom thick with everlasting snow. "It would have been rashness in me," says captain Cook, "to have risked all that had been done during the voyage in discovering and exploring a coast, which when discovered and explored, would have answered no end whatever, or have been of the least use to navigation or geography, or indeed to any other science."

Thron'd in his palace of cerulean ice,
 Here winter holds his unrejoicing court;
 And thro' his airy hall the loud misrule
 Of driving tempest is for ever heard:
 Here the grim tyrant meditates his wrath;
 Here arms his winds with all-subduing frost;
 Moulds his fierce hail, and treasures up his snows^c.

February 15. Bore away to the northward, having crossed the meridian of Greenwich, in latitude 57 deg. 50 min. On the 19th crossed the place where *Cape Circumcision* is laid down by Bouvet, without having the least signs of land, tho' the weather was favourable to discovery. Captain Furneaux likewise passing between *Georgia* and *Sandwich-land*, crossed the meridian of *Cape Circumcision* in the lat. of 57 deg. 50 min. south, without meeting with any land. The solicitude of all on board to arrive at an European port, was now risen to the most impatient height; their voyage had then lasted twenty-seven months, after leaving the Cape of Good Hope, since which time they had not touched at any European settlement, but had been severed from all intercourse with their country, their friends, relations, and domestic endearments. Whilst thus cut off from all the pleasures of social intercourse, and general society they had been exposed to

^c Thomson.

such a continued series of impending dangers in their southern cruises, as was sufficient to appall the most intrepid spirit, nor were their internal hardships less severe than their outward perils were imminent; they had lived chiefly on salt provisions, not having passed more than six months out of the whole twenty-seven on shore at different islands, and this small proportion made up at very different intervals of time; these periods afforded the only opportunities for procuring refreshments, and during a part of this, and especially the last year's cruise, no fresh provisions could be obtained at several islands. The account which captain Cook gives of their situation at this period, is as follows: "My people were yet healthy, and would cheerfully have gone wherever I had thought proper to lead them, but I dreaded the scurvy laying hold on them, at a time when we had nothing left to remove it. I must say further, that it would have been cruel in me to have continued the fatigues and hardships they were continually exposed to, longer than was absolutely necessary. Their behaviour throughout the whole voyage, merited every indulgence which it was in my power to give them. Animated by the conduct of the officers, they shewed themselves capable of surmounting any difficulty and danger which came in their way, and never once looked either upon the one or the other as being at all heightened by our separation from the Adventure^d." As they approached a place which had some intercourse with Europe, their hopes and fears began to be anxiously excited; all the tender and endearing ties at home, "relations dear and all the charities" now took entire possession of the breast, and agitated it with the strongest emotions.

^d Cook II. 244.

March 16. Being between latitude 35 and 36 deg. south, a ship was seen to windward, and in three hours afterwards they came in sight of another. The eagerness with which every person on board bent his eyes towards these welcome objects, was the strongest proof of that impatient longing for an intercourse with Europeans, which till then had been suppressed by the attentions which their situation, and regard to personal safety demanded. Two tedious days however passed in this state of tantalization, before they could come up with either of the ships; at length they got within five miles of one of them, which proved to be a Dutch East-Indiaman. A boat was hoisted out and sent on board her, and in a few hours returned with the welcome news that there was universal peace in Europe. The pleasure of this intelligence was however in a great measure allayed by an account of the massacre of the Adventure's boat's crew, as related in page 323. The Dutch captain having been long at sea from Bengal, lamented that he had no refreshments to offer. In the afternoon they got sight of two Swedish, one Danish, and an English ship, the latter of which bore down to them, and lieutenant Clarke, the elder Mr. Forster, and a midshipman, went on board her. This ship was the True Britain, captain Broadly, on her return from China. The gentlemen were received with a generous hospitality, and invited to dinner. These three famished circumnavigators, who had not seen fresh meat for six weeks, attacked with the highest relish, a dish of fattened Chinese quails, and a delicious goose, which their kind entertainer reckoned very homely fare. On relating how long they had been absent from any European settlement, how long they had lived upon salt beef, and how oft they had regaled themselves with seals, albatrosses and penguins, the captain and the mates dropped their knives and forks, and in pure pity to the stran-
gers

gers resigned all pretensions to their dinner. At parting, captain Broadly presented them with a large fat pig and several geese, on which the gentlemen of the ship dined the two following days. On the 22^d they came to an anchor in *Table Bay*, in the cape of Good Hope, which they found was only the 21st, according to the reckoning of the people on shore, they having advanced a whole day by sailing round the world to the eastward^e. On the 27th of April, captain Cook sailed from the cape, and in his way to England touched at *St. Helena*, the western islands of *Ascension* and *Fernando Noreña*, *Fayal*, and on the 29th of July made the land near *Plymouth*, having been absent from England three years and eighteen days, in which time it is computed that they ran over a greater space of sea than any ship ever did before; since, according to Mr. Forster, taking all their tacks together, they form more than thrice the circumference of the globe. Thus was completed a voyage which will immortalize the conductor of it, being not only the most extensive, but the most instructive one; in it he not only discovered, but surveyed vast tracks of new coasts; hereby dispelled the illusion of a *terra australis incognita*, and fixing the bounds of the habitable earth, as well as those of the navigable ocean, in the southern hemisphere. But being the ablest navigator which perhaps any age or country ever produced, is not captain Cook's ultimate praise; his humane and judicious attention to every means which might possibly conduce to the healthiness of his crew, give him an eminent place among the distinguished few who are true friends to mankind, and his endeavours were successful to a prodigy. With a company of one hundred and eighteen men, he performed a voyage of upwards of three years, throughout all climates from 52 degrees north, to 71 degrees south, with the loss of only one man by a distemper. Even in the most healthful climate,

^e Forster II. 546, 547.

and the best condition of life, an instance of so small a number of deaths, among so many men, within such a space of time, can hardly be produced. From whence it plainly appears, that marine diseases are not caused by any malignity in the sea air; and a voyage round the world may be undertaken with less danger to health than a common tour in Europe. From the bills of mortality in Europe, it is computed that three men out of an hundred annually die, according to which it might have been expected that at least ten men would have died on this voyage; it is not therefore to be supposed, that on another voyage, although the means of preserving health are provided as amply and used as skilfully, that the crew would be equally preserved. The means by which this important end was obtained, were no less simple than efficacious. The captain took on board a quantity of malt, of which was made sweet wort. To such of the crew as shewed the least symptoms of the scurvy, and also to such as were thought to be threatened with that disorder, this was given, from one to two or three pints a-day each man, or in such proportion as Mr. Patton the surgeon found necessary; which sometimes amounted to three quarts. Captain Cook pronounces this to be one of the best antiscorbutic medicines yet discovered. Sour krout was provided in a large quantity; it being both a wholesome vegetable food, and highly antiscorbutic, and does not spoil by keeping; a pound of this was served to each man while at sea twice a week, or oftener, as was thought necessary. An ounce of portable broth to each man was boiled in their peas three days in the week. Rob of lemon and orange was used; sugar in the room of oil, and wheat for a part of the store of oatmeal. Besides these salutary articles of diet, certain regulations were established on board the ship, which contributed very essentially to promote the healthiness of the crew. They were at three

† Sir John Pringle's Discourse delivered to the Royal Society.

watches,

watches, instead of watch and watch. The last is the general practice at sea; that is, he divided the whole crew into three companies, and by putting each company upon the watch by turns, four hours at a time, every man had eight hours free for four of duty, by which means they were not so much exposed to the weather, and had generally dry cloaths to shift themselves when they happened to get wet. Proper methods were used to keep their persons, hammocks, bedding, cloaths, &c. constantly clean and dry; equal care was taken to keep the ship in the same state between decks: once or twice a week she was aired with fires, and when this could not be done, she was smoaked with gun-powder mixed with vinegar and water. The captain also frequently caused a fire to be made in an iron pot at the bottom of the well, which was of great use in purifying the air in the lower parts of the ship. The ship's coppers were kept constantly clean. The fat which boiled out of the beef and pork was never suffered to be given to the people, being thought to promote the scurvy. Fresh water was taken in wherever it could be procured, even though it was not wanted, as that fresh from the shore was considered as more wholesome than what had been kept some time on board the ship; and of this necessary article there was always plenty during the voyage for every useful purpose.

Captain Cook presented to the Royal Society a paper, describing at large the means which he used to preserve the health of his seamen, for which invaluable information he was voted their annual honorary medal. On this occasion Sir John Pringle their president, delivered an oration, in which he pays captain Cook the most elegant and deserved eulogiums, concluding with "Permit me, gentlemen, to deliver this medal with his unperishing name engraved upon it, into the hands of one who will be happy to receive that trust, and to know that

§ Captain Cook was then sailed on his present voyage.

this respectable body never more cordially or meritoriously bestowed that faithful symbol of their esteem and affection; for if Rome decreed the civic crown to him who saved the life of a single citizen, what wreaths are due to that man, who having himself saved many, perpetuates in your transactions the means by which Britain may now, on the most distant voyages, preserve numbers of her intrepid sons, her mariners; who, braving every danger, have so laboriously contributed to the fame, to the opulence, and to the maritime empire of their country."

C H A P. II.

*An Account of Captain Phipps's (now Lord Mulgrave)
Voyage towards the North-Pole, in 1773.*

THE idea of a passage to the East Indies by the North-pole, was suggested as early as the year 1527, by Robert Thorne, a merchant of Bristol, who addressed a paper to Henry VIII. on that subject; but the proposal fell to the ground. In the reign of Queen Elizabeth, Sir Hugh Willoughby made the attempt with three ships, anno 1553. He proceeded to the latitude of 75 deg. north, but being obliged to winter in Lapland, he and all his company perished miserably. Three years afterwards, captain Burroughs, afterwards comptroller of the navy to Queen Elizabeth, failed on the same design, and advanced to 78 deg. To him succeeded captains Jackman and Pell in 1580, in two ships; the latter of whom, with his ship, was never heard of. The Dutch began to pursue the same object in 1595, and successive voyages were made, all which tended rather to prove the impracticability of the scheme than to bring forward any important discovery. In 1607 Henry Hudson was equipped by a company of London merchants to discover a passage by the North-pole to Japan and China.

China. He penetrated to 80 deg. 23 min. and was then stopped by the ice. Two years after another ship was sent out by the Muscovy company of merchants of London, in which Jonas Poole was master; he made the south-part of Spitzbergen on the 16th of May, 1609; but with his utmost endeavours he could not advance further than 79 deg. 50 min. In the year 1614, another voyage was undertaken, in which Baffin and Fotherby were employed, but without any success; and in next year Fotherby, in a pinnace of twenty tons, with ten men, but in this voyage the ice prevented his getting further than in the last. John Wood, with a frigate and a pink, sailed in 1676, but returned without effecting any thing. Most of these voyages having been fitted out by private adventurers, for the double purpose of discovery and present advantage, it was natural to suppose that the attention of the navigators had been diverted from pursuing the more remote and less profitable object of the two, with all the attention that could have been wished. "But," says captain Phipps, "I am happy in an opportunity of doing justice to the memory of these men, which, without having traced their steps, and experienced their difficulties, it would have been impossible to have done. They appear to have encountered dangers, which at that period must have been particularly alarming from their novelty, with the greatest fortitude and perseverance; as well as to have shewn a degree of diligence and skill, not only in the ordinary and practical, but in the more scientific parts of their profession, which might have done honour to modern seamen, with all their advantages of later improvements. This, when compared with the accounts given of the state of navigation, even within these forty years, by the most eminent foreign authors, affords the most flattering and satisfactory proof of the very early existence of that decided superiority in naval affairs, which has carried the power of this country to the height it has now attained."

This great point of geography was suffered to remain without further investigation from the year 1676, till 1773, when the Earl of Sandwich, in consequence of an application that had been made to him by the royal society, laid before his Majesty, about the beginning of February, a proposal for an expedition to try how far navigation was practicable towards the North-pole; which his Majesty was pleased to direct should be immediately undertaken, with every encouragement that could countenance such an enterprize, and every assistance that could contribute to its success. The Hon. Constantine John Phipps (now Lord Mulgrave) was appointed to conduct this undertaking, and the Racehorse and Carcas Bombs were fitted out for the expedition; the command of the latter was given to captain Lutwidge.

After passing the islands of Shetland, the first land they made, was

SPITSBERGEN, in lat. 77 deg. 59 min. 11 sec. long. 9 deg. 13 min. east. The coast appeared to be neither habitable nor accessible. It is formed of high barren black rocks, without the least marks of vegetation; in many places bare and pointed, in other parts covered with snow, appearing even above the clouds. The vallies between the high cliffs were filled with snow or ice. "This prospect," says captain Phipps, "would have suggested the idea of perpetual winter, had not the mildness of the weather, the smooth water, bright sun-shine, and constant day-light, given a cheerfulness and novelty to the whole of this striking and romantic scene." The current ran along this coast half a knot an hour, north. The height of one mountain seen here, was found to be fifteen hundred and three yards. The harbour of Smeerenberg has good anchorage in thirteen fathom; close to this harbour is an island, called Amsterdam Island, where the Dutch used formerly to boil their whale oil; and the re-
mains

mains of some conveniency erected by them for that purpose are still visible. Once they attempted to make an establishment here, and left some people to winter, who all perished. The Dutch ships still resort to this place for the latter season of the whale-fishery. It lies in 79 deg. 44 min. north, 9 deg. 50 min. 45 sec. east.

The most remarkable views which these dreary regions present, are what are called Icebergs. These are large bodies of ice, filling the vallies between the high mountains. Their face towards the sea is nearly perpendicular, and of a very lively light-green colour. One was about three hundred feet high, with a cascade of water issuing out of it. The black mountains on each side, the white snow, and green-coloured ice, composed a very beautiful and romantic picture. Large pieces frequently broke off from the Icebergs, and fell with great noise into the water; one piece was observed to have floated out into the bay, and grounded in twenty-four fathom; it was fifty feet high above the surface of the water, and of the same beautiful colour as the iceberg from which it had been separated.

The stone seen about Smeerenberg is chiefly a kind of marble, which dissolved easily in the marine acid. There were no appearances of minerals of any kind, nor any signs of ancient or modern volcanoes. No insects, or any species of reptiles were seen, not even the common earth-worm. There were no springs or rivers, but great plenty of water was produced from the snow which melted from the mountains. Captain Phipps has been very accurate in his description of the few animals which these inhospitable regions cherish. Here is the sea-horse or morse (the *trichectus rosmarus* of Linnæus;) it is found every where about the coast of Spitsbergen, as well as generally wherever there

is ice, though at a distance from the land. It is a gregarious animal, not inclined to attack, but dangerous if attacked, as the whole herd will join their forces to revenge any injury received by an individual. One of these animals being fired at and wounded by some people in a boat, dyed immediately, and brought up with it a number of others, who made a joint attack upon the boat, and wrested an oar from one of the men, and had well nigh flaved or overfet her, but another boat coming up, they dispersed.

The Arctick fox (*Canis Lagopus* of Linnæus) found on the main land of Spitsbergen, and the islands adjacent, differs from our fox not only in colour, but in having its ears much more rounded. It smells very little, and its flesh is good food. The polar-bear (*Urfus Maritimus* of Linnæus) is found in great numbers on the main-land of Spitsbergen, also on the islands and ice-fields adjacent. This animal is much larger than the black-bear. The seamen ate of their flesh, though very coarse. The rein-deer, (*Cervus Tarandus* of Linnæus) the flesh of this animal is excellent venison. The whale, fin-fish, eider-duck, puffin, fulmar, northern diver, the sea-snail, coral-fish, the prawn, found in the stomach of a seal caught near the coast of Spitsbergen.

Three singular species of crab, which have not been before described, two of them found in the stomach of a seal. A small worm found adhering by its snout to the inside of the intestines of an eider-duck. The sea May-fly and snail slime-fish, found in innumerable quantities about the Arctic-seas, peopling as it were this almost uninhabited ocean.

MOFFEN ISLAND, lat. 80 deg. long. 12 deg. 20 min. 45 sec. east. This island is nearly of a round form, about two miles in diameter, with a lake, or large pond of water in the middle; which was all frozen over, except thirty or forty

VOYAGE TOWARDS THE NORTH POLE. 403

forty yards round its edge, which was water, with loose pieces of broken ice, and so shallow that they walked through it, and went over upon firm solid ice,

The whole island is covered with gravel and small stones, without the least verdure or vegetation of any kind. Three bears were seen, and a number of wild ducks, geese, and other sea-fowl, with birds nests all over the island. Here was seen an inscription over the grave of a Dutchman, who was buried in 1771.

SEVEN ISLANDS, 81 deg. 21 min. These islands seemed to be surrounded with ice. On the 30th July, in lat. 80 deg. 31 min. north long. 18 deg. 48 min. east, captain Lutwidge of the *Carcass*, and the master of the *Race-horse* ascended an high mountain on one of the seven islands, from whence they commanded a prospect extending to the east and north-east 10 or 12 leagues, over a continued plain of smooth unbroken ice, bounded only by the horizon. They also saw land stretching to the south-east, laid down in the Dutch charts, as islands. In returning they found the ice had closed so much since their going, that they were forced frequently to haul the boat over it to other openings. The weather exceedingly fine, mild, and usually clear.

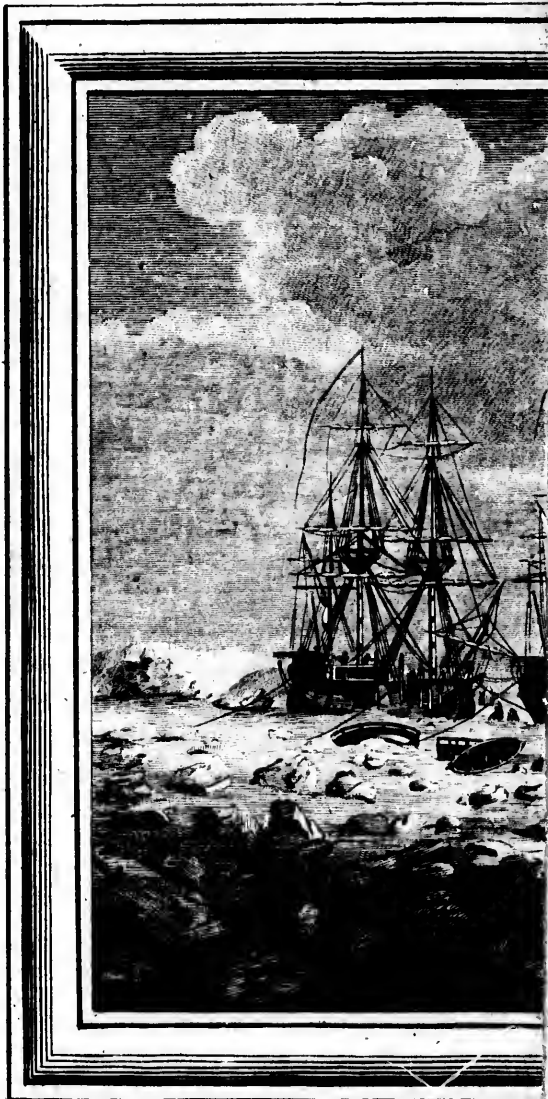
Dr. Irving, with some of the officers of the ship, visited an island which lay in 80 deg. 27 min. 3 sec. They found several large fir-trees laying on the shore, sixteen or eighteen feet above the level of the sea. Some of these trees were seventy feet long, and had been torn up by the roots; others cut down by the ax, and knotted for twelve feet lengths. This timber was no ways decayed, or the strokes of the hatchet in the least effaced. There were likewise some pipe-staves

staves and wood fashioned for use. The beach was formed of old timber, sand and whale-bones. The island is about seven miles long, flat, and formed chiefly of stones, from eighteen to thirty inches over, many of them hexagons, and commodiously placed for walking on. The middle of the island is covered with moss, scurvy-grass, sorrel, and a few ranunculus's then in flower. Two rein-deer were feeding on the moss, one they killed, and found it fat, and of high taste and flavour. They saw a light grey-coloured fox, and a creature somewhat larger than a weazel, with short ears, long tail, and a skin spotted white and black. The island abounds with small snipes, similar to the jack-snipe in England. The ducks were then hatching their eggs, and many wild geese feeding by the water side.

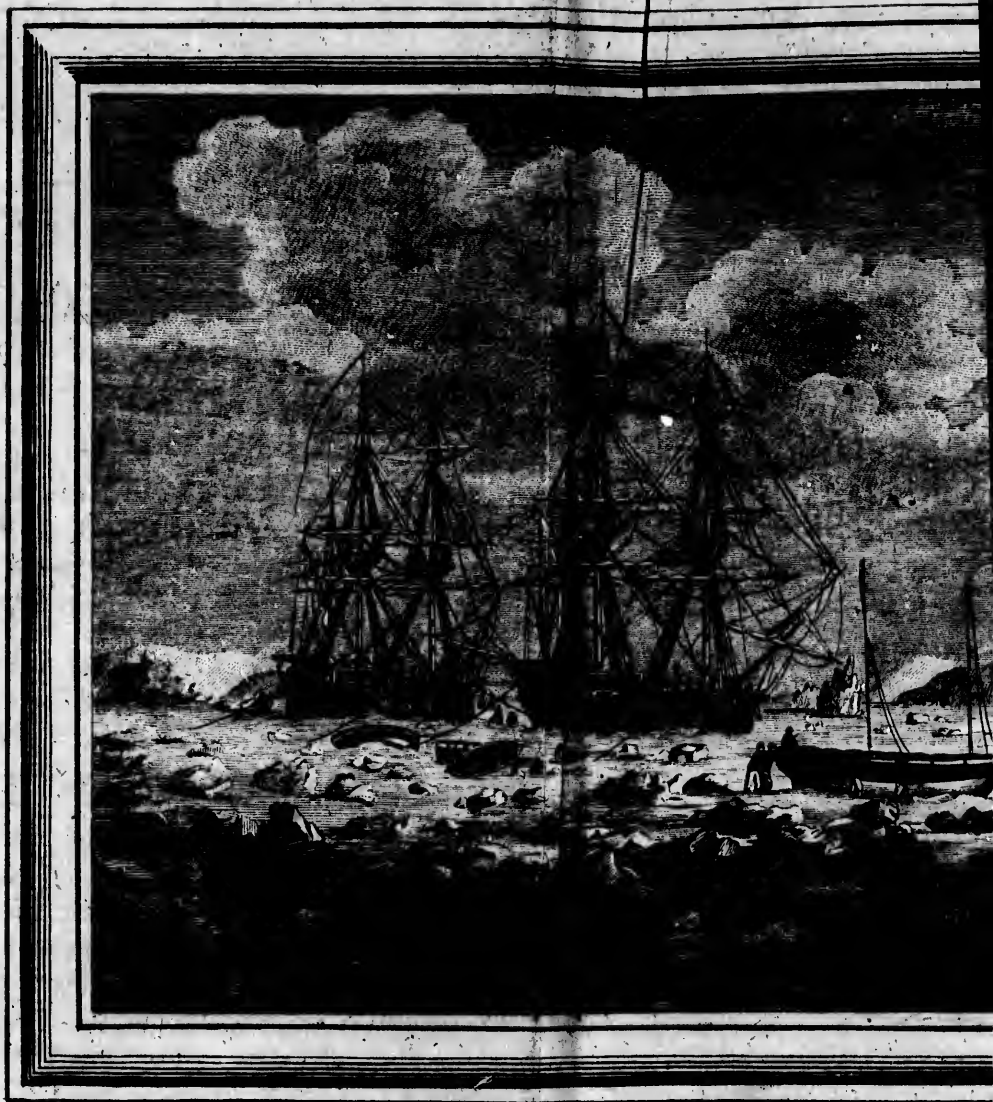
Among these islands the two ships became suddenly fast in the ice, on the 31st of July, being in latitude 80 deg. 37 min. The seven islands and north-east land, with the frozen sea, formed almost a basin, having but about four points open for the ice to drift out in case of a change of wind. The passage by which the ships had come in by the westward, became closed up, and a strong current set in to the eastward, by which they were carried still further from their course. The labour of the whole ship's company to cut away the ice proved ineffectual; their utmost efforts for a whole day could not move the ships above three hundred yards to the westward through the ice, whilst the current had at the same time driven them far to the north east, and eastward. Appearances remaining thus threatening for four or five days, the safety of the crews began to be all that seemed possible to be effected. As it had been foreseen, that one or both of the ships might be sacrificed in the prosecution of the voyage, the boats for each ship were calculated in number and size, to be fit in any emergency to transport the whole crew. Driven to this state
of

e
l
c
e
d
e
d
ll
e
ne

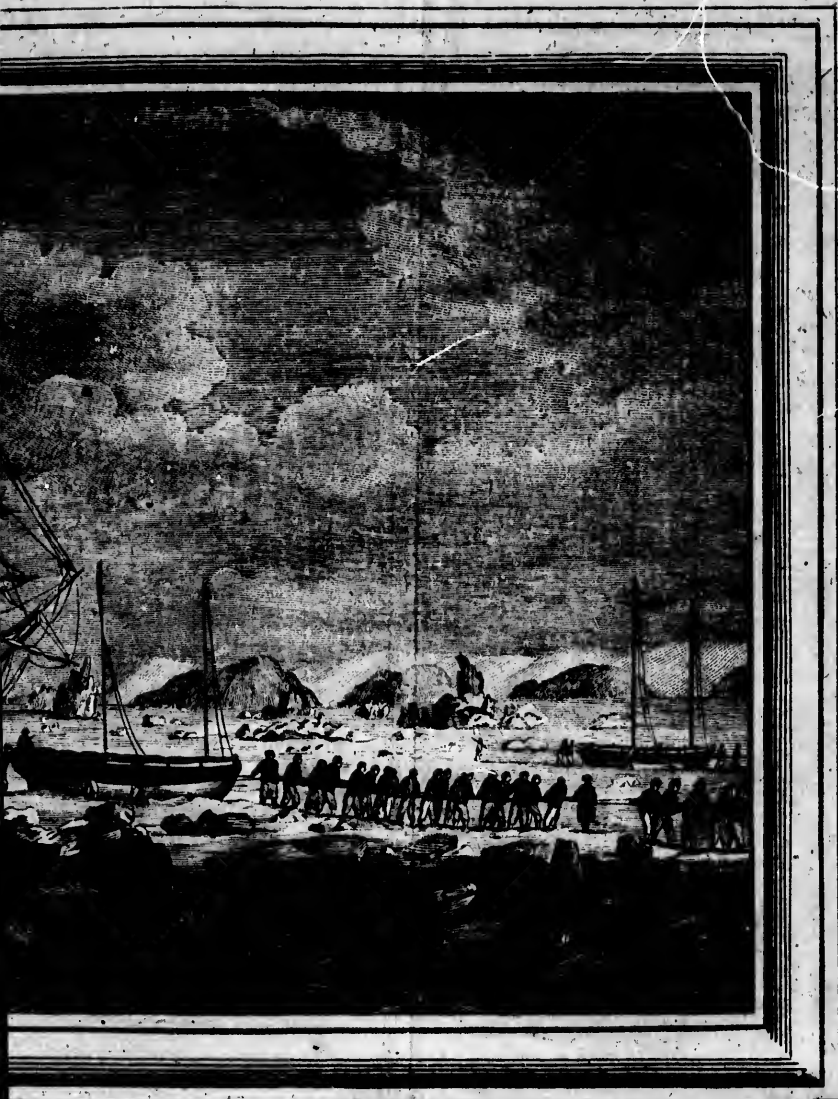
in
37
en
en
af-
me
by
he
ed
not
ard
me
ces
of
ed.
be
ach
ny
ate
of



View of the RACEHORSE and c



View of the RACEHORSE and CARCASS August 7th 1773. when



Page 504.

7th 1773. when inclosed in the ICE in Lat. 80° 37' N.

c
a
a
w
b
r
b
d
a
f
fo
no
w
cu
th
79
of

ma

ni
ho
58
fou
and
mo
fou
deg
bei
a fi
of

VOYAGE TOWARDS THE NORTH POLE 407

of desperation, on the 6th of August the boats were hoisted out, and every method taken to render them secure and comfortable: but the next day the wind blew eastwardly, and the ships were moved about a mile to the westward. But still they were not so far west by a great way as when they were first beset with the ice; however, on the 9th of August, the current had visibly changed and ran to the westward, by which both the ice and the ships had been carried considerably in that direction. On the 10th, a brisk wind at north north east accomplished their deliverance, and freed them from the dreadful prospect of perishing by the winter polar cold. Having found it impracticable to penetrate any further towards the north pole, they made for the harbour of Smeerenberg, which lays on the north-west side of Spitzbergen. In prosecuting this voyage, the most northern point of latitude which they reached was 81 deg. 36 min. and between the latitudes of 79 deg. 50 min. and 81 deg. they traversed 17 deg. and a half of longitude; being from 2 deg. east, to 19 deg. 30 min. east.

The following are some of the most curious observations made on the voyage.

On the 19th of June, by a meridian observation at midnight, the sun's lower limb 0 deg. 37 min. 30 sec. above the horizon, lat. 66 deg. 54 min. 39 sec. north, long. 0 deg. 58 min. 45 sec. west. In lat. 67 deg. 35 min. captain Phipps sounded with a very heavy lead the depth of seven hundred and eighty fathoms without getting ground; and by a thermometer invented by lord Charles Cavendish for the purpose, found the temperature of the water at that depth, to be 26 deg. of Fahrenheit's thermometer, the temperature of the air being 48 deg. and a half. June 24, in lat. 73 deg. 40 min. a fire was made in the cabin for the first time. On the first of July it was found so warm, that they sat without a fire

in

in lat. 78 deg. 13 min. 36 sec. In 78 deg. 0 min. 50 sec. at four in the morning, lord Charles Cavendish's thermometer was 31, that of the air 40 and a half. At two in the forenoon at 115 fathoms, the water was 33 deg. at the surface 40 deg. and in the air 44 deg. and three quarters. July 16th, the greatest height of the thermometer was 58 deg. and a half, at eleven in the forenoon, and at midnight 57 deg. in lat. 79 deg. 50 min. long. 10 deg. 2 min. 30 sec. east. On the 19th of August, at eleven in the evening, an appearance of dusk was observed at Smeerenberg. On the 24th of September, stars became visible. The sight of a star, says captain Phipps, was now become almost as great a phenomenon as the sun at midnight had been two months, before, when we first got within the Arctic circle. The sky was in general loaded with hard white clouds, insomuch that the sun and horizon were never entirely clear of them, even in the clearest weather. The first Venetians who explored the northern extremity of the European continent, were struck with the greatest astonishment at the continual appearance of the sun above the horizon, and relate that they could only distinguish day from night by the instinct of the sea-fowl which went to roost on shore for the space of four hours. Pietro Quirino sailed in April 1431, and in January 1432 he was shipwrecked under the polar circle^a. A bright appearance near the horizon was always the herald to signify the approach of ice; and this the pilots called the blink of the ice. And the same appearance was seen on captain Cook's voyage towards the south pole in 1773 and 1774. Dr. Irving tried the specific gravity of ice on board the Race-horse. A piece of the most dense cold ice he could find being immersed in snow water, thermometer 34 deg. 14 fifteenth parts sunk under the surface of the water.* In brandy, just proof, it barely floated: in rectified spirits of wine it fell to the bottom at once, and dissolved immediately.

^a Navigazioni et Viaggi raccolti da G. B. Ramusio, Venet 1574. * See p. 371.

four
was
noon
deg.
the
half,
lat.
the
dusk
nber,
hips,
un at
with-
with
were
ather.
of the
onish-
hori-
from
ost on
iled in
d un-
e hori-
of ice;
ne fame
rds the
specific
ne most
v water,
der the
floated:
ce, and

SP
G420
N48
1778

